

H.Q. 54-27-63-7 VOL.3

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE—(ARMY)

### CROSS REFERENCE

DISTURBADGES M.D. NO.6

CANADIAN ACTIVE SERVICE FORCES.

**DEAD**

# DEAD

[illegible]

**DO NOT WR**

# THIS LINE

ACCESS REVIEWED:

RECORD GROUP

VOLUME 24

FILE 54-27-63.7 Vol 3

000317



H.Q. 54-27-63-7 6/3

**DEAD**

VOLUME 4. FOLLOWS

25<sup>3</sup>/<sub>76</sub>

NO FURTHER CORRESPONDENCE TO BE PLACED ON THIS FILE

This file contains the proceedings of a military ~~to~~ court of inquiry and cannot therefore be opened for public Access

Philip Haplin  
for Director

Directorate of History  
NDHQ, Ottawa

13 Feb 79

NOT TO BE PUBLISHED

THE INFORMATION GIVEN IN THIS DOCUMENT IS NOT TO BE COMMUNICATED, EITHER DIRECTLY OR INDIRECTLY, TO THE PRESS OR TO ANY PERSON NOT HOLDING AN OFFICIAL POSITION IN HIS MAJESTY'S SERVICE.

*Copy*

MILITARY COURT OF INQUIRY  
INTO DISTURBANCES IN HALIFAX AND  
DARTMOUTH NS ON 7TH AND 8TH  
MAY 1945

VOLUME "I"

---

TABLE OF CONTENTS

List of Witnesses  
Chronological Summary of Events  
Testimony pages 1 - 265  
Rulings on Technical matters  
Findings

MILITARY COURT OF INQUIRY  
INTO DISTURBANCES IN HALIFAX AND  
DARTMOUTH N.S. ON 7TH AND 8TH  
MAY 1945 =

**PROCEEDINGS OF MILITARY COURT OF INQUIRY  
INTO DISTURBANCES OF 7 - 8 MAY '45  
IN HALIFAX AND DARTMOUTH, N.S.**

---

**TABLE OF CONTENTS**

|                 |   |
|-----------------|---|
| <b>VOL. I</b>   | <b>List of Witnesses.<br/>Chronological Summary of Events.<br/>Testimony - Pages 1 to 265.<br/>Findings.</b>      |
| <b>VOL. II</b>  | <b>Exhibits - A-1 to WWW.</b>   |
| <b>VOL. III</b> | <b>Exhibit A - Newspaper Clippings.<br/>Exhibits YY-1 to YY-4 - Pictures.<br/>Exhibits NNN-1 to NNN-4 - Maps.</b> |

---

**NOTE:** See page 266 for rulings on following technical matters:-

1. Compliance with R.P. 125A.
2. Waiver of re-reading and signing of testimony.
3. Waiver of ruling and initialling certain pages.
4. Civilian witnesses.
5. Addition of Table of Contents, List of Witnesses and a chronological Summary of Events, to front of Proceedings.

# LIST OF WITNESSES

| No. | N A M E  | PAGE |
|-----|--|------|
| 1.  | Maj. J.F. Browne, GSO II (I & S) M.D.6   | 1    |
| 2.  | Col. A.E. Duncanson, Col i/c Admin., M.D. 6                                    | 18   |
| 3.  | Lt-Col F.J. North, AA&QMG, M.D. 6  | 27   |
| 4.  | Lt-Col A.A. Bell, GSO I, M.D.6   | 40   |
| 5.  | Maj. H.G. Wylde, DAAG, M.D. 6  | 47   |
| 6.  | Capt J.W. Bell, Camp Commandant, M.D. 6  | 49   |
| 7.  | Capt E.F. Harrington, GSO III (I), M.D.6                                       | 51   |
| 8.  | Lieut A.P. MacCarthy, OC 6 Sec & Int Sec, MD6                                  | 57   |
| 9.  | Col. F.E. Andrew, O.C. 6 Dist. Depot, MD 6                                     | 60   |
| 10. | Lt-Col E.P. Flowers, A/Comd, Halifax Fortress                                  | 65   |
| 11. | Capt R.J. Butts, RCA, Staff Capt A Hfx Fort                                    | 69   |
| 12. | Lt-Col H.D. Rice, Dist Sigs Offr, M.D. 6                                       | 74   |
| 13. | Lt-Col D.G. Ketcheson, D.Ord. Offr. M.D. 6                                     | 78   |
| 14. | Lt-Col F.C. Andreas, OC Emb Transit Unit                                       | 83   |
| 15. | Maj. A MacKinnon, Dist Aux Offr, M.D. 6  | 86   |
| 16. | Maj. A.N. Harris, A/O.C. 6 Coy RCEME, M.D.6                                    | 88   |
| 17. | Lieut J.G. MacLean, #6 Coy RCEME, M.D.6  | 97   |
| 18. | Maj. H.S. Dunn, OC #6 ES&W Coy RCE, M.D. 6                                     | 101  |
| 19. | Maj.A.D. Grayston, OC 6 Voc Trg. School  | 105  |
| 20. | Capt M.C. Cawsey, OC 106 Depot Coy CWAC and<br>No. 17 Admin Unit CWAC MD 6     | 107  |
| 21. | Capt E. McGregor, OC No. 10 Admin Unit CWAC MD6                                | 111  |
| 22. | Lt-Col C.W. Clarke, DAPM, M.D.6  | 115  |
| 23. | Lieut. J.N. Ramsay, Odn Provost Corps MD 6                                     | 132  |
| 24. | Lieut. B.W. Daines, MT Offr, 37 Provost Coy, MD6                               | 135  |
| 25. | Lieut. J.T. Brown, No. 37 Provost Coy, MD6                                     | 137  |
| 26. | Capt. J.S. Speakman, C.Pro.C. Camp Borden Ont.                                 | 140  |
| 27. | Lieut.R.G. Parker, C.Pro.C. #2 Transit Camp, Debert NS                         | 141  |
| 28. | Lieut. W.G. Perry, C.Pro.C., Camp Borden, Ont                                  | 142  |
| 29. | Maj.C.R. Lowway, OC 37 Pro. Coy, M.D. 6  | 143  |
| 30. | Maj.E.E. Bannard, OC 45 Pro Coy, M.D. 6  | 147  |
| 31. | Capt M.E. Byers, 2 i/c #37 Pro. Coy, M.D.6                                     | 151  |
| 32. | Capt B.L. Conway, 2 i/c #37 Pro. Coy, M.D.6                                    | 154  |
| 33. | Maj. H.V. Kerney, OC 21 Coy V.G.C., M.D. 6                                     | 158  |
| 34. | Lieut E.G. Witherspoon, "A" Tp Comd, 19 HAA Bty<br>21 AA Regt (Princess Lodge) | 159  |
| 35. | Col. W.D. Simpson, OC 36(R) Bde Gp, MD 6                                       | 160  |
| 36. | Maj. B.A. Snow, 6 Ord Depot RCOC, MD 6   | 163  |
| 37. | Lt-Col G.L. Kent, OC 21 AA Regt, M.D. 6  | 166  |
| 38. | Maj. A.C. Sinclair, 1st Hal Cst Regt MD 6                                      | 170  |
| 39. | Maj. R.A. Young, OC 6 Dist Coy RCASC, MD 6                                     | 173  |
| 40. | Lt-Col E.A. Agnew, OC 6 Coy RCEME & DEME MD 6                                  | 176  |
| 41. | Maj. J.J. Frape, OC Trained Soldier Coy at<br>A.14 CITC Aldershot, NS          | 180  |
| 42. | Maj. H.L. Nixon, Staff Capt, HQ 1 Trg Bde Gp, Debert                           | 181  |
| 43. | Lt-Col J.A. MacLellan, Dist Chap (RC) MD 6                                     | 183  |
| 44. | Col. J.L. Sutherland, Dist Medical Offr MD 6                                   | 188  |
| 45. | Lt-Col J.A.G. Roberge, OC Le Regt de Ste Hyacinthe                             | 191  |
| 46. | Detective W.J. Fitzsimmons, RCMP, Halifax NS                                   | 194  |
| 47. | Sergeant J. Murray, RCMP, Halifax Det.   | 199  |
| 48. | Corporal S.F. Hall, RCMP, Halifax Det.   | 204  |
| 49. | Capt. W.V. Cockman, Asst PRO, M.D.6  | 208  |
| 50. | Capt. G.S. Clark, OC 12 Spec Employment Pl MD 6                                | 213  |
| 51. | Pte. Jean Dickie, RCASC (CWAC)   | 215  |
| 52. | Mr. David Oland, Jr, 32 Regina Terrace, Halifax                                | 220  |
| 53. | Maj. A.E. Lomas, Mgr. Henry Birks & Sons Halifax                               | 224  |
| 54. | Mr. W. Roy Eisnor, 217 Agricola St, Halifax                                    | 227  |
| 55. | Capt N.E. Whelpley, A.23 C&AAA TC Halifax, NS                                  | 231  |
| 56. | Lt-Col T.R. Meighen OC A-23 C&AAA TC Halifax, NS                               | 234  |
| 57. | Capt P.A.B.R. Paquet, A-23 C&AAA TC Halifax, NS                                | 239  |

(S E E O V E R)

- 2 -

|     |  |     |
|-----|--|-----|
| 58. | F.51076 Sgt Meldrum, CA, NCO i/c Dartmouth Det 37Pro.C | 242 |
| 59. | Mr. W.D. Murray, Stipendiary Magistrate, Dartmouth NS  | 247 |
| 60. | Mr. J.J. Lawlor, Chief of Police, Dartmouth, N.S.      | 250 |
| 61. | Majo M.O. Element, D.S.&T.O., M.D. 6                   | 254 |
| 62. | Lt-Col H.F.C. Cocks, Dist Chaplain (P) M.D.6           | 257 |
| 63. | Brig. D.A. White, D.S.O., D.O.C. M.D. 6                | 260 |

CHRONOLOGICAL SUMMARY OF EVENTS OF 7-8 MAY 1945

7 May 45

- 1030 hrs. Announcement over radio of unconditional surrender of Germany.
- 1100 hrs. Stores, restaurants, etc. started to close for balance of day. Theatres closed for day.
- 1140 hrs. D.O.C. declared balance of day a holiday (Sunday pattern) for H.Q., M.D. No. 6.
- 1308 hrs. Telephone call from Brig. Ferguson, V.A.G. to D.O.C. giving information re official announcement to be made by Mr. Ilsley.
- 1445 hrs. Teletype message A.8782 to all Units giving effect to telegram Ranks 7454.
- 1800 hrs. Street dances on South and South Park streets commenced.
- 2000 hrs. Memorial Service at All Saint's Cathedral.
- 2100 hrs. Fire works on George's Island.
- 2130 hrs. Some Victory Loan flags on Barrington St. were torn down.
- 2200 hrs. Crowds on Citadel Hill watching fire works began to disperse.
- 2330 hrs. Tram car and police patrol car burned on Barrington St.
- 2345 hrs. Sackville St. Liquor Store entered and partly looted.

8 May 45

- 0010 hrs. Hollis St. Liquor Store entered and partly looted.
- 0015 hrs. Window of Nava Scotia Light & Power Co. on Barrington St. broken, and some looting.
- 0015 hrs. Buckingham St. liquor store entered and partly looted.
- 0120 hrs. Buckingham St. Liquor store cleared of looters.
- 0145 hrs. Provost extinguished fires on Salter St. and Granville St.
- 0150 hrs. Crowd at Hollis St. Liquor store finally dispersed.
- 0300 hrs. Streets practically empty of Service personnel and civilians.
- 0930 hrs. Crowds began to gather on Garrison Sports Grounds for Civic Public Meeting and concert at 1000 hrs.
- 1030 hrs. Meeting at main office of N.S. Liquor Commission to discuss method of preventing further

looting of liquor stores.

1100 hrs. Thanksgiving Service in city churches.

1330 hrs. Large numbers of Navy congregating on Barrington and Granville Streets. Rioting in front of City Hall. Provost sent from Garrison parade grounds to assist Halifax police.

1340 hrs. First break into Keith's Brewery and some looting.

1400 hrs. Reports received of window breaking in business section of city of Halifax.

1430 hrs.- Combined services, Thanksgiving Service on Garrison Grounds commenced. Additional C. Pro. C. despatched to Keith's Brewery.

Chief of City Police advised by DAPM that situation was completely out of hand. Chief was to contact Mayor immediately.

1445 hrs. Second break into Keith's Brewery and complete looting of premises.

1450 hrs. DOC advised of seriousness of situation. DOC in turn advised Admiral Murray.

1500 hrs. Hollis St. store was entered again and completely looted.

Admiral Murray ordered the Forces attending Thanksgiving Service to parade through streets in business area.

1505 hrs. Combined Services Thanksgiving Service on Garrison Grounds ended.

Instructions issued to C. Pro. C. to send all Army personnel who were misbehaving themselves, back to Units at once.

1600 hrs. Main office of N.S. Liquor Commission entered and looted.

1630 hrs. Bonded warehouse at Cold Storage Plant entered and small amount of stock looted.

Meeting in D.O.C.'s office at request of Mayor to discuss action to be taken to stop rioting.

1650 hrs. Buckingham St. Liquor Store entered and completely looted.

1710 hrs. Agricola St. Liquor Store entered and completely looted.

1730 hrs. D.O.C. ordered all Army personnel back to barracks or homes and Provost and Unit personnel were instructed to carry out this order.

Dartmouth liquor store entered and completely looted.



1800 hrs. V.E. Day celebrations over as ordered by Mayor.

1815 hrs. Approximately 250 all ranks despatched to assist C. Pro. C.

1830 hrs. Dartmouth ferries stopped and anchored in mid-stream, on instructions of Civil Authorities in Dartmouth.

1845 hrs. Mayor and Admiral Murray in sound truck proceeded through streets announcing V/E Day over at 6 p.m. and ordering Service personnel to return to barracks and requesting civilians to return to homes at once. Also announced curfew would be in effect as from 8 p.m.

1910 hrs. Detachment of one officer and 28 ORs arrived in Dartmouth from A.23 C. & A.A.A.T.C. to assist C. Pro. C.

1930 hrs. All soldiers reported off streets of downtown Halifax.

2000 hrs. Curfew in effect.

2030 hrs. All Army Personnel off streets of Dartmouth.

2210 hrs. Advance part special force of troops from Debert, N.S. arrived at No. 6 District Depot, Halifax, N. S.

2230 hrs. Remainder of special force of Army troops from Debert, N.S. arrived at No. 6 District Depot, Halifax, N.S.

\*N.B.—As this form is applicable to any Board of Officers or Committee or Court of Inquiry, the blank is to be filled in accordingly.

The signature of each Officer composing the Board, etc., should appear on the last page of this form in the space provided therefor.

PROCEEDINGS of a\* Court of Inquiry  
assembled at Halifax, N. S.  
by order of Brig. D.A. White, D.S.O., D.O.C., M.D. 6.  
on the 15 May 1945  
for the purpose of inquiring into and reporting upon a matter  
to be placed before it.

PRESIDENT

Major-General A.C. Spencer, C.B.E., E.D.  
Commander, Camp Borden, Ontario.

MEMBERS

Brigadier A. R. Roy, O.B.E.

Lt.-Col. E. A. Chater, E.D.  
A.14 C.I.T.C., Aldershot, N. S.

Lt.-Col. M. H. Toy, R.C.A.  
No. 1 Trg Bde Gp., Debert, N. S.

Major L.C. Carroll, D.A.J.A.G., N.D.H.Q., is  
detailed to assist the Court pursuant to K.R. (Can) 627.

The Court having assembled pursuant to order, proceed to read and examine the Convening Order and Terms of Reference by the Convening Officer placed before it by the President. The Convening Order and Terms of Reference are attached hereto as Exhibit A1 and A2. On 15 May 1945 the Court assembled and, accompanied by Lt.-Col. C.W. Clarke, DAPM, toured and viewed the parts of the city of Halifax, N.S. and town of Dartmouth, N.S. in which the disturbances of the peace referred to in the Terms of Reference were alleged to have taken place.

The Court devoted the 16 and 17 May 1945 to arranging for the hearing of witnesses. The hearing of witnesses was commenced on the morning of 18 May 1945 and concluded on 29 May 1945.

The following shorthand writers were duly sworn by the President of the Court:— F.83514 SM (W01) Ross, J.R., A.99629 S/Sgt. Kehl, G.L., F.52435 Sgt. Fillmore, G.E., W.60138 Sgt. McKenna, J.L., B.625254 Cpl. Stein, H., B.163636 Cpl. McGuigan, J.J.

FIRST WITNESS

Major J.F. Browne, G.S.O. II (I. & S) H.Q. M.D. 6,  
being duly sworn states:

Q.1 What are your functions and duties at H.Q. M.D. No. 6?

A. Supervision of Intelligence work within the District, particularly those duties dealing with Operational Intelligence.

Collation, collection, and distribution of Intelligence material from all sources, exclusive of counter-intelligence.

Q.2 Will you give the Court an overall chronological picture of the events leading up to and including the disturbances of the peace in Halifax, N.S. and Dartmouth, N.S. on 7 May 1945 and subsequent thereto?

A. May I remark that all times that I may mention are Atlantic Daylight Saving which is also known as "P" time.

16 SEPTEMBER 1944 - 16 Sep 1944 I was G.S.O. (I) of Atlantic Command. I was absorbed into the staff of H.Q. M.D. 6 upon the disbandment of Atlantic Command.

For seven months past it has been realized that the Germans were faced with eventual defeat, and that an offer of surrender might be made in the near future. The Heads of Services accordingly raised the question of the way in which way V-E Day should be celebrated. The Minutes of the Joint Services Committee, Atlantic Coast, meeting No. 151 held on 16 September 1944, disclosed that the A.O.C.-in-C. brought before the Committee a proposal submitted by the Chaplains of the three Services to organize a suitable Drumhead Service of thanksgiving on V-E Day. The Committee were of the opinion that it would be desirable to prepare such a plan and ascertain through the Chiefs of Staff what nation-wide ceremonies were contemplated; this submission was duly presented to the Chiefs of Staff Committee.

The Minutes of the Joint Services Committee, Atlantic Coast, meeting No. 153, record that Chiefs of Staff Memorandum (CSC 300) dated 17 October 1944, had been received relative to a Cabinet decision in connection with V-E Day ceremonies, and the Joint Services Sub-Committee (Administrative) were instructed to effect the necessary arrangements with the Deputy Provincial Secretaries of M.D.s 6 and 7. Subsequent correspondence with the Provincial Secretary for Nova Scotia is to be found on Atlantic Command files, which it is believed, are in Wellington Barracks for safekeeping, but the gist of this correspondence was believed to be that arrangements would be in the hands of the Provincial authorities with the Services participating. That information was conveyed to the Staff Officers, Atlantic Command, at a meeting presided over by Brigadier Goodeve, B.G.S., Atlantic Command.

About the time the question of V-E Day was being considered by the Joint Services Committee, Atlantic Coast, meetings were being held by the civic authorities at which representatives of the Navy, Army and Air Force, and Fortress Commander were present. There was some discussion as to the manner in which the Armed Forces could assist in keeping order. It was pointed out that Service Police would assist in every way possible to control any misbehaviour on the part of the Armed Forces, but that we had no power over civilians. It is believed, also, that Service representatives suggested that the Civil Defence Corps should assist the Police on V-E Day. The subjects arising at these meetings are covered in separate testimony by Lt.-Col. F.J. North, AA & QMG, and are found in H.150-1-2 (AQ) and appendices thereto.

16 APRIL 1945 - On this date the Joint Services Sub-Committee (Administrative) Meeting No. 11, was held when a letter from the Joint Services Committee was discussed and the following recommendation was recorded in regard to the

-4-

whatever celebrations were to take place and any drinking which might result, had better take place within Army Canteens and Messes where it could be controlled, rather than outside. (I produce extracts from minutes of the D.O.C.'s Weekly Conferences, which are examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "C".)

Press clippings referring to the approach of V-E Day are produced, examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "A".

7 MAY 1945 - While in an Army vehicle, I heard an announcement on the car radio between 1055 and 1100hrs that Germany had surrendered unconditionally and that Tuesday 8 May would probably be kept as V-E Day. Within a minute of hearing this flash I bought a special edition of the Halifax Chronicle on the streets with headlines in 5-inch letters - GERMANY QUIT. (see Exhibit "A").

After the radio announcements, civilians left their offices and places of business and filled the streets, literally falling on each others necks for joy. I was in town on my daily liaison duties, and was struck by the restraint and orderly demonstrations at that time.

In District H.Q. the balance of Monday, as from after lunch, and the whole of Tuesday, were treated as a holiday, and only skeleton staffs were detailed for duty in the offices.

Shortly after 1135 hours 7 May 1945 I was present at an informal meeting in the D.O.C.'s office at which were present Col Duncanson, the Officer i/c Admin and Lt.-Col North, the AA&QMG, and others. I showed a copy of the newspaper to the gathering and was informed that some of them had already heard the radio announcement. After discussion, the D.O.C. decided the rest of the day would be treated as a Sunday.

The liquor stores in Halifax closed as usual on Friday 4 May 1945. They were scheduled to open normally at 1230 hours Monday, 7 May 1945, but did not do so and remained closed throughout the 7th and 8th May, and are still closed as of 18 May 1945.

Theatres and practically all restaurants also closed their doors. I am not aware of any civil order or law which compelled theatres and restaurants to close, and believe it was a voluntary decision by the proprietors concerned.

At 1308 hours Brigadier Ferguson from the A.G.'s Branch, telephoned the D.O.C. and stated:

"Mr. Illsley, representing Government, is expected to speak on the C.B.C. at any moment. He will make an official announcement and telegram Ranks 7454 will apply. Remainder of the day and all the next day will be a holiday. Those who have to remain on duty will be given leave later on."

u "He also stated that the announcement had been scheduled for noon Ottawa time but was delayed, probably as they were waiting for Mr. Churchill."

I produce the D.O.C.'s notes of this meeting. These are examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "E".

Mr. Illsley's address, however, was not heard on the radio, in Halifax, until 1700 hours although at 1440 hours the following item was picked up from a radio broadcast:

-5-

"Ministry of Information England announces tomorrow 8th May will be V-E day."

At 1445 hours a teletype message to all Units (A.8782) was issued by District H.Q., proclaiming the remainder of May 7th and all day May 8th would be a holiday, in accordance with N.D.H.Q. instructions. I produce copy of this telegram. It is examined by the Court and file as Exhibit "B".

The Press of 8th May reported that during the evening of 7th May the Sackville Street liquor store had been broken into and looted by Servicemen, mostly sailors, merchant marines and civilians. After this occurrence, the Provost Corps was called. In the Press it was reported that a Police Patrol car had been set on fire by the mob and two street-cars overturned and wrecked. It was also reported that an attempt was made to set a street-car on fire.

The Halifax Herald on the 8th May (see Exhibit "A") gave an account of the occurrences on the evening of 7th May. From the reports received by me as Intelligence Officer the reports in the Herald appear to have been a fairly good account. It would appear that Navy personnel formed a very large proportion of the Servicemen creating the damage.

Press Clippings in Exhibit "A" give a true picture of the reaction of Halifax citizens when the news of Germany's surrender was received. One extract from the Halifax Chronicle of 8th May reads as follows:

"The Naval Shore Patrol arrived on the scene during the early part of the rioting and were roundly booed by the tense, maddened throng, for their projected interference. Appraising a hopeless situation, the men moved on and again were booed by the crowd, this time for failing to risk their bodies among the maddened rioters."

8 MAY 1945 - The city was quiet during the morning. A large civic Thanksgiving Service was held on the Garrison Grounds adjoining H.Q. M.D. 6 at 1000 hours. Insofar as I know this was a purely civic service and no Army personnel were detailed to attend or required to attend.

The Thanksgiving Service for the Combined Services, at which 500 each from Navy, Army and R.C.A.F. attended, was scheduled to be held on the same site at 1430 hours under the command of Vice Admiral L.M. Murray, CB, CBE.

At 1400 hours, while the parade for the combined Services was assembling, the D.A.P.M. reported to Lt.-Col. North, AA&QMG, that he had received a call from the City Police to assist in breaking up a mob of sailors gathered in front of the Nova Scotia Light and Power Company. At 1405 hours all available Provost Personnel were being despatched in vehicles from the Garrison Grounds and elsewhere to the scene.

At 1425 hours when the senior officers were mounting the platform for the service the Chief of Police and Mayor arrived to request additional assistance. It was estimated that the mob at the N.S.L. & P. Co consisted of a large number of sailors and civilians with a sprinkling of soldiers and airmen. The Thanksgiving Service, which was to be only 20 minutes duration, was not begun until 1440 hours and terminated about 1457 hours.

About 1450 hours, Lt.-Col. S. G. Oland, Proprietor of

000330

Olands Brewery, appeared on the platform to say that the mob had broken into his Brewery and beer was being removed by the crowd.

In view of the holiday, no additional organized bodies of Service personnel were immediately available to deal with the situation. The Heads of the three fighting Services, however, immediately after the end of the service at 1457 hours, ordered the soldiers, sailors, and airmen of the service personnel parading at the service, to parade down town with the bands, as a counter-attraction, with the hope of diverting the attention of the crowds. Unfortunately, this action had little effect and by this time liquor and beer were being carried around by the bottle or case.

The Halifax Police, it was reported, had only about 40 available for duty and were helpless to deal with the situation as were the Provosts on the scene.

At the request of the Mayor, a meeting of the Heads of Services, R.C.M.P., City Officials and the Attorney General of Nova Scotia was called for 1630 hours at H.Q. M.D. 6.

At 1600 hours, in anticipation of the need, Col. Duncanson, Col i/c Adm H.Q. M.D. 6, ordered the O.C. 1 Trg Bde Gp at Debert, to hold in readiness 1000 men in Battle Order, organized as a battalion of 6 companies, with one officer for each 20 men.

At 1630 hours during the meeting it was suggested by military staff officers that all available Army Officers in town should be despatched around the city to order all troops back to barracks. This was done during the meeting. (see minutes of meeting attached as Exhibit "E".)

At 1705 hours Lt.-Col. North, AA&QMG, telephoned to Brigadier Ferguson, A.G.'s Branch in Ottawa, stating that we were in trouble here and were calling troops in off the street; also, that a force had been ordered to Stand-by in Debert.

At the joint meeting in the D.O.C.'s office held at 1630 hours it was arranged that the Mayor would impose a curfew and that the Services would call their troops back to barracks.

The radio stations announced at 1735 hours that the Mayor had declared V-E Day over as of 6 p.m. and he requested that all citizens remain in or near their homes at that hour. I produce the text of this announcement. It is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "F". The Mayor also made a proclamation at 1845 hours 8 May 1945 the text of which I produce as part of Exhibit "F".

At the joint meeting referred to it was decided that Admiral Murray and other persons would proceed in an R.C.A.F. sound truck around the City of Halifax and advise all service personnel to return to billets or barracks immediately. This was commenced at 1810 hours.

At 1745 hours, at the request of the Attorney General and with the approval of Rear Admiral Murray and Air Vice Marshal Morfee, the D.O.C. issued instructions to have an armed force of 1000 men, which had previously been warned to stand by at 1600 hours, move from Debert to No. 6 District Depot. This force, in fact, consisting of 72 officers and 1264 other ranks, including drivers of 115 vehicles, left Debert at 1945 hours and by 2210 hours the advance party had reached the District Depot. The main body arrived at 2240 hours under command of Lt.-Col. Thomson, O.C. 1 Trg Bn. N.D.H.Q. was advised of this movement by wire. Lt.-Col. A. A. Bell, G.S.O. 1, met Colonel

-7-

Thomson at No. 6 District Depot and handed to him a sufficient supply of maps of the City.

By 1800 hours the troops in Halifax were returning to their barracks and quarters in satisfactory numbers. At this time all available officers and men of the 21st AA Regiment, No. 6 District Depot and No. 6 District Signals Company, were being despatched in Units under Officer control to the Provost Barracks to assist the D.A.P.M. All fit and available personnel were sent to the Provost Barracks as reinforcements at this time.

At about 1810 hours, Admiral Murray made a tour in the RCAF sound truck and instructed all Service personnel to return to their quarters by 2000 hours.

Early in the evening the O.C. 106 Depot Coy, CWAC, and No. 17 Admin Unit, CWAC, reported that about 10 Naval personnel and one soldier had gathered at the fence outside the Recreation Room at the CWAC Wellington Barracks. These personnel were under the influence of liquor themselves and were handing bottles of beer and liquor through the fence to CWAC personnel. A call was sent to the Provost and Naval Shore Patrol to have the men removed. The Provost arrived but the Naval Shore Patrol did not respond to the call.

At 1830 hours, additional guards under Officer control were posted around the CWAC quarters, both at Wellington Barracks and Cathedral Barracks.

During the evening there were numerous reports from Dartmouth of trouble there. It was reported to the G.S.O. III by A.23 C.&A.A.A. T.C. that a number of their personnel (approximately 40) were despatched to the scene of the trouble to assist the Provost and Police there. A.23 C.&A.A.A. T.C. recalled all men on pass and then also detailed 25 other ranks with officers and N.C.O.'s under command of Capt P.A.B.R. Pacquet, to assist the Provost and Police there.

At 1930 hours the R.C.A.F. Station at Dartmouth requested a supply of Tear Gas. 25 cannisters were supplied at 2000 hours. I produce A.23 T.C. report. It is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "G".

I understand that during the evening the Attorney General communicated with the Deputy Minister of Justice to arrange procedure in the event of it becoming necessary for him to requisition for Aid to the Civil Power, under P.C. 4934 dated 27 June 44.

At 2116 hours the D.A.P.M. reported to the AA&QMG that only about 50 soldiers in small parties were left around the city of Halifax and these were en route to barracks or billets. Approximately 1000 Naval personnel and 3000 civilians, however, were still on the streets. The fire which had broken out in Credit Jewellers, was now reported to be nearly under control. A report from Camp Hill Hospital was received at District H.Q. that sailors were trying to wreck the Ambulance. Provost Corps personnel were despatched to attend to the matter. These events are given in more detail in the Provost reports.

At 2130 hours the O.C. No. 6 District Depot telephoned to say that his men were coming in well in response to orders

000332



-8-

and were giving little trouble.

At 2145 hours, Captain Miles, Naval Chief of Staff, telephoned to the D.O.C. regarding the situation in Dartmouth. He was advised that Army personnel were being cleared off the streets and that we were leaving only a few Provost Corps there. Captain Miles also advised that the Navy was not doing anything at the moment.

At 2150 hours, Captain Miles called again asking for help in Dartmouth. He was informed regarding the detachment from A.23 C.&A.A.A. T.C.

At 2200 hours, 1000 sailors and 500 civilians were reported to be looting the stores at Dartmouth.

At 2205 hours the Security Patrol returned to District H.Q. and reported that the crowd in Halifax was still smashing windows and looting and was moving along Barrington Street towards the C.N.R. station.

At 2245 hours, message O.781 was despatched to Ottawa. I produce copy of same. It is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "H".

At 2300 hours, it was reported that the streets were clear. A few civilians were abroad but no troops.

At 2300 hours Brigadier Ferguson instructed the D.O.C. by telephone with regard to the procedure for bringing into effect Aid to the Civil Power, and told him not to act until he had received a requisition in writing from the Attorney-General.

At 2335 hours, all Units were informed by telegram (O.782) that no leave would be granted and that all troops were to be on duty or confined to barracks until further orders. I produce copy of this telegram. It is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "I".

At 2359 hours, Stand Down was ordered at District H.Q. The Officers and other ranks who had been on duty all day were allowed to proceed to their billets or homes, and the Operations Officer on duty assumed control as is usual during the night hours. A Security Guard remained on duty at H.Q. all night, from 8th to 9th May, 1945.

Shortly after midnight, the Attorney-General, accompanied by the D.O.C. and AAQMG, drove through the principal streets that had been wrecked. A heavy rain was falling and streets were cleared of people, with the exception of a few individuals or pairs. The remaining stragglers were being picked up.

I have had occasion to visit the scene of the damage in various parts of Halifax myself both on 8th May and several times during the 9th. The windows and store fronts on the ground floor and sometimes on the second floor on both sides of Barrington Street from South Street to Buckingham Street were practically all smashed and badly damaged. Along Barrington Street the damage thinned out quickly after reaching Buckingham. On Granville Street the damage of this nature appeared to be less severe. On Hollis Street again the damage, though severe, was not as bad as that on Barrington Street. On Sackville Street the liquor store and Eaton's



-9-

windows were also completely smashed. On Agricola Street the liquor store windows were completely smashed as were the windows of a number of small stores on the same street. Apparently not all the stores had been attacked. No specific stores appeared to have been singled out for attack except the liquor stores. The liquor stores at Hollis, Sackville, Buckingham and Agricola Streets as well as Keith's Brewery on Hollis Street were entered by force.

During the afternoon of 8th May, after 1730 hours, Service personnel and civilians carrying loot in the form of liquor, jewellery and clothing, were rounded up as they passed District H.Q. and were brought in to me. These personnel were identified and an inventory made of the articles of loot carried, after which they were ordered to return to their quarters. The details of such personnel and loot were given to the AA & QMG for action.

WEDNESDAY, 9th MAY, 1945 - All was quiet in the City of Halifax and the town of Dartmouth that morning. All troops not on leave were back to normal duty, and any who were not on duty were confined to quarters and billets.

A report was received from the O.C., A.14 C.I.T.C., Aldershot, N.S. that at about 2200 hours the previous night, 8 May 45, civilians in the majority, with some soldiers, broke windows in the Kentville Liquor Store and commenced looting. Officers and N.C.O.'s from the Training Centre turned out and stopped the trouble at 2359 hours. The damage was estimated by the liquor store manager at about \$200.00

From Sydney, N.S. came a report of civilians and sailors breaking windows at a liquor store, but the report indicated that the situation was satisfactorily handled by the Naval Shore Patrol and the Civil Police.

During the day the Chief of Police, Halifax, stated that citizens must report any loot remaining in their possession to the City Police.

Rumours persisted during the day that Naval personnel intended to break out of barracks and finish the job they had begun on Halifax yesterday. These rumours came to District H.Q. through civilian channels and were reported by Security personnel; but no official information was received regarding any actual attempt being made to break out. These rumours kept us on the alert for further disturbances throughout the day.

Members of the Security Intelligence Section were employed round the city, in order that they might telephone early warning to District H.Q. should there be any attempt on the part of service personnel or civilians to congregate in a disorderly manner.

At 1030 hours the D.O.C. telephoned to the A.G.'s Branch, N.D.H.Q., reporting on the situation.

At 1455 hours Halifax Fortress advised this Headquarters that the D.A.P.M. had asked for 100 additional men to strengthen his picket near Oland's Brewery. These were provided.

The D.O.C. spoke to Captain Miles, Naval Chief of Staff, who stated that there were no Naval personnel in the vicinity

-10-

of the Brewery now.

At 1530 hours the D.O.C. inspected a parade of the Debert Battalion on the North Common. After the inspection, the parade marched round Citadel Hill and along Sackville Street, where the D.O.C. took the salute. Numerous civilians were seen both on the Common and along the line of march. The troops were well-officered and well-disciplined, and their morale appeared to be high. From Press notices (Exhibit "A") it is evident that the troops made a good impression on the civilian population, and the result was generally reassuring. At 1605 hours a report was received from Major Smith, Royal Liverpool Insurance Group, saying that soldiers were causing trouble in Dartmouth by preventing people from boarding the Ferry. A check was made, and this H.Q. was later advised that passengers were being checked in order to ensure that they had a legitimate reason for crossing on the Ferry. Major Smith was so advised.

At 1620 hours, word was received from the General Agent C.P.R. Telegraphs, saying that rumours were current to the effect that there would be further trouble this evening, and requesting military assistance in guarding their premises. The matter was taken up with the AA&QMG who advised that nothing could be done unless a request were made by the proper Civil authorities. The D.O.C. was advised of this request and the C.P.R. Telegraphs were duly notified.

At 1635 hours a telephone call was received from Mr. Beazley, Executive Assistant to the Attorney General, to the effect that it was desired to call a meeting of the Heads of Navy, Army, Air Force, R.C.M.P., Chief of Police and Mayor of Halifax at District H.Q.

This meeting was held at 1700 hours. At this meeting, the Mayor raised the question as to what action should be taken in the event of a major outbreak, and stated that the Police would be armed and carry night-sticks. The Mayor and Chief of Police stated that civilians would be strictly handled. Ass't Commissioner Eames asked for clarification of what action was being taken to control Merchant Seamen. Admiral Murray replied that they were confined to their ships. The R.C.M.P. agreed to augment the Civic Police. The Services were asked whether they could provide additional accommodation where the Civil Police might incarcerate Civilian offenders until such time as other arrangements could be made for them. The D.O.C. agreed to make the Miniature Rifle Rang in Halifax Armouries available for this purpose, provided that the Civil Police undertook to guard and supervise any civilians who might be placed there. A Provost guard was placed at the main door of the Armouries.

Accordingly, at 2000 hours the Chief of Police requested that this accommodation be made available immediately, and this was done.

At 1715 hours the D.O.C. telephoned to the O.C. No. 60 C.I.(B)T.C., Yarmouth, N.S. to enquire how the situation was there. All was quiet. The D.O.C. ordered Major Chisholm of No. 60 C.I.(B)T.C., Yarmouth, N.S. to C.B. the troops at once. This would have to be removed later.

-11-

At 1730 hours Mr. Beazley, Executive Assistant to the Attorney General, telephoned from the D.O.C.'s office to Mayor Wright of Liverpool regarding the situation there. The situation was satisfactory.

At 1820 hours an additional 30 Provost Corps Reinforcements arrived by air from Camp Borden. Another flight was expected to arrive three or four hours later.

At 2100 hours Lieut. Shea, R.C.A.S.C., reported from the Halifax Armouries that there were about 68 civilians now occupying the incarceration space allotted by the Army, but only one civilian Policeman was present. The numbers in custody later swelled to 151. Lieut. Shea added that several of the intoxicated persons, in his opinion, required the services of a Doctor. Col. Duncanson, Col i/c Admin, telephoned to the Chief of Police who agreed to send more Civilian Policement and a Doctor. This was done.

At 2330 hours the G.S.O. II (Int) made the last security patrol of the day round the Halifax Area affected, and reported that all appeared to be quiet, both on the streets and in the various barracks.

At 2359 hours the R.C.M.P. report all quiet.

At 0330 hours the D.A.P.M. presented a similar report.

10 MAY 1945 - At 0950 hours, Brigadier Ferguson called the D.O.C. on the telephone from N.D.H.Q. re aspects of Aid to Civil Power. I produce a note of this conversation. It is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "J".

At 1120 hours, the D.O.C. met with District Staff Officers, Fortress Commander, Lt.-Col. A. Thomson, O.C. Debert Troops, Commander E.P. Shaver, R.C.N.V.R., Staff Officer, Chief of Staff (Admin.). At this meeting, all aspects of Aid to Civil Power were discussed and complete instructions were given to all concerned. Copy of these instructions I produce. They are examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "K". During the meeting, the D.O.C. was called to the telephone to speak to Brigadier Orde, N.D.H.Q., who clarified certain points dealing with the question of Magistrates accompanying the detachments. This important subject is covered in the minutes of this Meeting. I produce copy of these minutes. They have been examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "K".

Major Chisholm, No. 60 C.I.(B)T.C., telephoned at 1130 hrs regarding disturbances which took place in Yarmouth during the night of 8-9 May. The party responsible for the break-in of the liquor store consisted of about 75 men, mostly soldiers. A few civilians and R.C.A.F. personnel were in the crowd and shared in the plunder, although they are not known to have taken any actual part in the break. The total loss to the Liquor Commission was about 300 quarts of hard liquor.

Two soldiers from that Training Centre are in civil custody and were remanded until Tuesday, 15 May 1945. All troops at the Training Centre are now quiet. They were under C.B. and

-12-

a Patrol of Camp Police was kept moving around town last night.

At 1700 hours, the D.O.C. met with Mr. Beazley, Mr. MacDonald of the Attorney General Branch, the Attorney General, Col. Duncanson and Lt.-Col. North. At this meeting the procedure to be carried out by Civil Authorities, in the event of their calling upon the Military in Aid to Civil Power, was thoroughly checked, and copies of the necessary requisitions and instructions were handed to the Attorney General.

At 1705 hours, a wire was despatched to N.D.H.Q. asking for a firm decision regarding soldiers found in possession of loot, as to whether they should be charged under the Army Act or turned over to Civil Authorities. I produce a copy of this wire. It is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "L".

At 1720 hours, the D.A.P.M. telephoned this H.Q. stating that the Provost Detachment at Dartmouth were asking for only 30 men from A.23 C.&A.A.A. T.C. to assist the Provost that night. At 2040 hours, the Security Patrol returned after a tour of Halifax. One fire was reported in the I.P. Store on Gottingen Street. The fire was under control and the city was quiet.

At 2105 hours, Mr. J.B. Hayes called with reference to a Provost Guard being placed at the Nova Scotia Light & Power plant. Capt. Harrington, the G.S.O. III (Security) advised Mr. Hayes to contact the Provost Duty Officer.

At 2200 hours, all civilian prisoners lodged in the Halifax Armouries appeared to have been removed.

At 2245 hours, Col. Dobbie, Commander Defended Port of Sydney, called the D.O.C. regarding disturbances in Sydney. These disturbances, together with the Commander's plans for V-E Day are dealt with in the Defended Port of Sydney report.

At 2250 hours, the Security Patrol returned to District H.Q. and reported all quiet in Halifax.

At 2300 hours, the D.O.C. again spoke on the telephone to Col. Dobbie in Sydney, who reported that there were disturbances in New Waterford around the liquor store. The store had already been emptied last night. The culprits consisted mostly of youths and women throwing stones and bricks. There were 6 civilian Police; approximately 40 R.C.M.P.; and approximately 20 Army Provost Personnel employed. Approximately 40 Naval personnel were also expected to assist as individuals. Col. Dobbie stated that the situation would quickly clear up when they arrived.

At 2350 hours, the Operations Officers on duty at Dist H.Q. called Col. Dobbie to confirm that the Attorney General had spoken to the Mayor of New Waterford.

-13-

11 MAY 1945 - At 0100 hours, Col. Dobbie telephoned to advise that things had quieted down at New Waterford. In Sydney, he had had 100 Artillery and 50 Infantry personnel "standing to". These he had now ordered to "stand down". There had been other disturbances of a similar nature at the Dominion & Sydney Mines, but they had subsided.

At 0210 hours, Major Newsam, Brigade Major, Defended Port of Sydney, telephoned to say that he had just returned from New Waterford. He advised that there had never been definite cause for alarm and that the group were made up mostly of youngsters throwing stones.

All was quiet in Halifax that morning.

During the forenoon, the D.O.C. issued a special District Order, No. 703, copy of which I produce. It is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "M".

At 1030 hours, the D.O.C. was in touch with the Duty Officer, Defended Port of Sydney, by telephone regarding the situation there.

At 1205, the Chief of Police of Halifax, informed the AA & QMG that the hour of the Curfew had been changed to 2200 hours that night. By orders of the D.O.C. M.D. 6 in telegram, copy of which I file as Exhibit "N", the confinement to barracks of troops in Halifax and Dartmouth, which had existed up to this time, was lifted and notice was given that the curfew would be at 2200 hours and all troops would conform to the curfew. Copy of this wire is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "N". A similar order was issued by the D.O.C. regarding personnel at outside points. I produce copy of telegram from D.O.C. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "O". On Saturday, 12 May, the Service personnel and citizens will be allowed to remain on the streets until 0030 hours 13 May 45.

Authority was received from N.D.H.Q. to try Service personnel found in possession of loot, under the Army Act. Those arrested by Civil Police will normally be tried by them. I produce copy of wire from N.D.H.Q. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "P".

At 1230 hours, the D.O.C. visited Nos. 37 and 38 Provost Coys, plus 60 Provost who were flown in as Reinforcement from Camp Borden, when he expressed appreciation for their good work under recent difficult conditions.

At 1330 hours, all ranks of No. 6 District Depot were paraded in the Drill Hall where the D.O.C. addressed the group, praising them for their good behaviour and explained the necessity for imposing the recent restrictions.

At 1600 hours, the D.O.C. addressed, in a similar manner, all ranks of No. 6 Ord Depot and No. 6 Coy, R.C.E.M.E. Personnel from both groups have been called upon for extra duties during the disturbances.

At 2346 hours, the D.A.P.M. and Sec. Patrols, reported that everything was quiet in Halifax. The D.A.P.M. reported also that the Chief of Police concurred in the plan to reduce the scale of Provost on duty to 1/5 strength.

-14-

The Halifax Civil Emergency Corps, which is a branch of A.R.P., had 200 men on duty during the night 11-12 May. These men were very alert and competent and rendered excellent service. They carried night sticks and wore white armlets and steel helmets. They went about their duties in a very business-like manner.

The curfew in Halifax has been generally well observed.

12 MAY 1945 - At 0945 hours it was reported that the liquor store at New Waterford, N.S., was set on fire during the night, but was soon extinguished. Damage was slight.

A number of arrests were made at New Waterford after the curfew. All were citizens who were drunk. Extra Provost Patrols were on duty all night at New Waterford.

New Waterford was reported quiet this morning.

The Halifax Chronicle of 12 May contains a report of the manner in which offenders are being dealt with by Magistrate Inglis in the City Police Court. (see Exhibit "A" ).

An examination of press clippings in Exhibit "A" will show that there was a marked tendency on the part of newspapers to fasten the blame on service personnel, especially the Navy, for the unfortunate disorders which occurred during V-E Day celebrations. The Mayor, in a radio address, used very emphatic language to describe the Navy's part in the disturbances, but feeling has now subsided to some extent, and the press has adopted a more conciliatory tone.

I produce copies of several releases by the Public Relations Officer, M.D. 6, to the local papers on 9, 10, and 11 May 1945. These are examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "Q1-Q4".

From various Unit reports received from Unit Commanders and supplied to me as G.S.O. II (I) and from personal observation, I believe that the careful preliminary steps taken by Unit Commanders in anticipation of V-E Day, following on conferences with the D.O.C., contributed in large measure to the comparative orderly behaviour of Army personnel. In No. 6 District Depot, for example, the largest military establishment in Halifax, the O.C. reports that after careful investigation, there is no available record of any soldiers from his Unit having actively participated in troublesome demonstrations. The O.C. No. 6 Coy, R.C.E.M.E., having a strength of 15 Officers and 352 other ranks, outlines in his report the address he gave to his troops when the news of V-E Day was received.

Q.3. Major Browne, apart from the general testimony which you have just rendered, and to give the Court an overall picture of the situation, will you please now tell the Court what you did personally and observed personally on the 7th and 8th May, 1945?

A. Monday, 7th May, 1945.

At 0830 hours I arrived at Dist H.Q. At 0900 hours I attended the D.O.C.'s usual Monday morning conference of Staff Officers, Heads of Services, and local Unit Commanders. So far as I know V-E Day was not especially discussed. At about 1100 hours I visited R.C.M.P. Headquarters on official business. On my

-15-

way down I heard over the car radio of Germany's unconditional surrender. A paper immediately appeared on the street with large caption "GERMANY QUITTS". I bought a paper and entered R.C.M.P. Headquarters where I found great excitement on the part of the R.C.M.P. officers and men whom I saw. After this I paid my daily visit to Combined Headquarters (EAC) on South Street and met R.C.A.F. and R.C.N. Intelligence Officers. This was about 1115 hours. All sub-staffs and civilians were streaming out of the offices of Eastern Air Command Headquarters and from places of business en route. At about 1135 hours I returned to Dist H.Q. and went to the office of the D.O.C. to report to him what I had heard and to show him the special edition of the Halifax Chronicle which I had purchased. The D.O.C. asked me whether I knew anything more about the announcement, which he said he had heard on H.Q. radio. I then told him I knew nothing more than what I had heard over the radio and was stated in the newspaper.

At 1145 hours I returned from lunch to Dist H.Q. and worked in my office. There was a skeleton sub-staff only on duty. I know nothing personally about any disturbances of that day, 7th May, 1945.

Tuesday, 8th May, 1945.

I arrived at Dist H.Q. at 0830 hours. I had already read in the morning paper of the disturbances down town during the night.

At 1100 hours I visited Combined Headquarters on daily liaison visit, after which I drove down town to look over the situation, at about 1130. A fair sized but orderly crowd was lined up along both sides of Barrington Street. The RCAF sound truck drove behind me in which a speaker was exhorting the crowd to behave in an orderly fashion, deploring the damage of last evening and stating that we should be on our knees in thankfulness rather than making the occasion one for a drunken orgy and for the destruction of property. I was later informed that it was a Minister of the Gospel who did the speaking. It was a very good and effective voice and made a great impression on the crowd.

I returned to Headquarters at about 1130 hours. I saw no disorder during my tour.

At 1345 hours I returned to H.Q. from lunch and went out onto the Garrison Grounds for the combined thanksgiving service. I saw the Provosts going off in trucks and jeeps and there were very few left on the grounds. I did not actually hear of any disturbances until after the service was concluded at about 1457. Then I learned that the Sackville Street liquor store had again been entered, also Kieth's Brewery, and that the crowd was smashing windows on Barrington Street.

When I returned to H.Q. from parade I learned that Capt. Harrington, G.S.O. III Security had been instructed by Col. North, AA & QMG, to take a jeep down town to look over the situation. I remained on duty in H.Q.



-16-

At 1500 hours Capt. Harrington returned and reported to me. At about this time messages were coming in to Dist H.Q. quite frequently. I assisted the G.S.O. I and G.S.O. II in telephoning to Units regarding the sending of Officers out to order troops back to barracks, and arranging for guards on the CWAC quarters, as well as Security Guard at Dist H.Q.

I also arranged with Signals, 21 A.A. Regt, and No. 6 D.D. to augment the Provosts as fast as the Officers and men came in.

During the afternoon, I do not remember what time, 2 soldiers of the Regiment de St. Hyacinthe, who had apparently not been drinking, were passing Dist H.Q. on North Park Street apparently carrying loot. They were brought in before me and I took down particulars as to name, number, and Unit from identification card, relieved them of the loot, made an inventory of it, and warned the men to proceed back to barracks immediately. The names of the soldiers and the loot taken from them are as follows:

**D 146585 Pte Gagnon, J.M. Regt de St. Hyacinthe**

- 1 pr Men's Brown Leather Hart's shoes
- 2 pr Children's bathing trunks size 24
- 1 pr Men's bathing trunks, size 30
- 1 Men's blue shirt.

**E 628525 Pte Jobin, C. Regt de St. Hyacinthe**

- 3 windbreakers
- 3 boy's maroon sweaters
- 10 cartons tobacco
- 1 bottle wine
- 1 bottle beer

I also saw approximately 8 soldiers, civilians, or navy personnel being brought into Dist H.Q., but they were taken to other Officers for disposition of their cases. During the same afternoon I saw two civilians passing Dist H.Q. carrying what appeared to be loot, drop same and run, when approached by Army personnel. I had received orders from the AA & QMG for H.Q. personnel not to arrest any personnel found with liquor or loot, but to take down their particulars and take charge of the loot and order them back to barracks.

At 1800 hours I received a call from Col. Andrew, No. 6 D.D., stating that his men were coming in well. This I reported to the G.S.O. I.

At 1830 hours on the instructions of L.t.-Col. A. A. Bell, G.S.O. I I proceeded to Wellington Barracks to post a guard of 20 men under an Officer on the CWAC barracks as we had heard that some male service personnel were passing liquor into the CWAC barracks. I saw Col. Agnew, O.C. 6 Coy, R.C.E. M.E., who detailed an Officer for this guard and proceeded with me to the CWAC barracks where we found a guard had already been posted under Major Mosher, R.C.A. I did not see anybody attempting to pass liquor into the CWAC barracks, or any disturbances of any kind.

After this I returned to Dist H.Q. and remained on duty

000341



-17-

for the rest of the day with Capt. Harrington, receiving reports and keeping the Intelligence log. I remained in the Operations Room in order to be near the telephone.

At 2330 hours I made a patrol of the City with two Security ECO's, when I saw no disturbances, but I did see one or two soldiers who were making their way back to barracks.

I went off duty at 0100 hours on the 9th May. Capt. Harrington remained on duty all night.

- 18 -

SECOND  
WITNESS:

D.S.O. & D.  
Colonel A.E. Duhcanson, Colonel  
in charge of Administration, H.Q., M.D. No. 6,  
being duly sworn states:

- Q. Will you describe your functions and duties in relation to M.D. 6?
- A. I am responsible to the D.O.C. for all administrative matters in the District. Up until the 11 March 45 I was in command of A.21, Commanding Officer and E.M.E.T.C. I was appointed Col i/c Admin, H.Q. M.D. 6 effective 12 March 45. I received my general instructions as to what my duties were from Major General Gibson, ECGS, NDHQ, Ottawa, prior to leaving for Halifax. In effect, they were that my duties were to represent the D.O.C. and act for him in any matters he saw fit. I arrived in Halifax 12 March 1945 and reported to the D.O.C. on the 14 March as he was away at the time of my arrival. I was instructed by the D.O.C. to take two weeks leave to travel through the District, which I did, and assumed my appointment actually on the 26 March 45. In discussing my duties with the D.O.C. it was generally agreed that there would be no change in the normal functions of the District staff and that the AAAQMG would be responsible to me for all AAQ matters. I was away from 10 - 23 April 45 inclusive at Goose Bay and Ottawa during which time the AAAQMG performed my duties.
- Q. Are there any written terms of reference, orders or instructions relative to your appointment?
- A. None, except the Part II Order which stated that I was appointed Colonel i/c Administration, effective 12 March 1945.
- Q. Are the instructions or orders under which you are now carrying out your duties only those verbally given by the D.O.C.?
- A. Yes sir, and that applied prior to 7 May 1945.
- Q. Is this arrangement as it now stands functioning properly?
- A. Yes sir, it is.
- Q. When you were given instructions or orders by the D.O.C., who in addition to yourself was advised of your duties.
- A. <sup>At</sup> The regular Monday morning conference of the D.O.C., the D.O.C. advised the assembled officers, estimated at approximately 40 to 50 officers, that I had been appointed Colonel i/c Administration, M.D. 6, and also advised them of my duties as I have previously described them above.

- 19 -

- Q. Will you tell the Court who is responsible for the various officers and military personnel employed at H.Q. M.D. 6?
- A. The AAAQMG as far as the administrative side is concerned and the GSO I as far as the 'G' staff is concerned, and as far as the sub-staff is concerned, the responsibility for employment and duties purely clerical is under Captain Hadland, who was posted to this District from NDHQ. The responsibility of the orderlies and other personnel of that nature is under Captain Bell, the Camp Commandant. District Headquarters Part I and Part II Orders are issued by the D.O.C. and signed by Lt-Col North, AAAQMG.
- Q. What is the approximate strength of H.Q. M.D. 6?
- A. This will be supplied by Lt-Col. North, AAAQMG.
- Q. What is your estimate of the approximate number of officers and other ranks out of barracks not on duty in Halifax, N.S. and Dartmouth, N.S. on 7 and 8 May 1945?
- A. In the morning of 7 May none except those on duty. In the afternoon of 7 May at least 60% were out. In the evening of 7 May, about 90% were out.
- In the morning of 8 May at least 80% out. In the afternoon of 8 May about 50% and in the evening not more than 40% were out.
- Q. Would you please advise the Court of the time, place and nature of all disturbances involving Army personnel on or about 7 or 8 May 45?
- A. I have no personal knowledge.
- Q. Have you any details regarding such disturbances advised or reported to you?
- A. The reported matters were only reported to me by the AAAQMG, Lt-Col North and it is suggested that his report would answer the requirements as he is in a better position to answer these questions himself as these reports were made direct to him.
- Q. What, from your own personal knowledge, can you tell the Court in connection with time, place and nature of disturbances involving Army personnel?
- A. I did not see anything. On the 7th of May I saw nothing myself. On the 8th of May I witnessed from the window of my office, civilian police and Provost stopping civilians and service personnel and taking articles from them, presumably so far as civil police were concerned, taking their names, and as far as the Provost were concerned, taking their names.

At about 0200 hours of the morning of the 9th I took a tour of the town with Capt. Harrington. We drove through the principal streets which were in very bad shape, and saw a very considerable number

- 20 -

of drunken civilians, no soldiers, no airmen, and a few sailors. The streets had about 10 persons per block.

Q. Were you down town in Halifax on the 7th of May and 8th May 1945?

A. On the 7th I saw no disorders of any kind. On the 8th I was not down town at all. The first official report I had on the 7th May 45 of disturbances, was from the D.A.P.M. in the forenoon.

Q. What instructions did you receive or give, or what arrangements did you make for the celebration of V.E. Day, prior to the 28th April 45.

A. Shortly after my arrival here, I inquired what arrangements had been made for V.E. Day. I was informed that there was a V.E. Day committee, composed of representatives of the City and the three Services and that Lt-Col North, AA&QMG, was the Army representative of that committee. I learned from Col North the general program of celebration and army participation, and that the Provost Marshals of the three Services were working with the City Police, or had made arrangements with the City Police, for handling the crowds. On the 27th March 45, I inspected the Provost Companies here and had a chat with the D.A.P.M. and his officers about their arrangements, which he explained to me, and for which he will produce his orders which he issued.

On the 5th May 45 I instructed the D.A.P.M. to place three-man patrols at H.Q. and at Bellevue to keep out people who might wander through. The only other order I issued was for the Ceremonial Parade, which I file herewith.

NOTE

The order is examined by the Court and filed as EXHIBIT "S".

Q. What orders or instructions were sent from H.Q. M.D. 6 to units in the District, other than those in the immediate Halifax area.

A. None, sir.

Q. Were there any other orders or instructions issued to the units in the Halifax area other than the order filed as Exhibit "S".

A. No, except for the orders issued by the Provost.

Q. Are you conversant with the signal dated 28 April 45 from NDBQ in connection with the expected V.E. Day.

A. Yes sir.

NOTE

This was examined by the Court and filed as EXHIBIT "T".

- 21 -

Q. When did you first see this signal?

A. On the morning of the 29th April 45.

Q. Upon receipt of this signal, what action did you take?

A. I showed the signal to the D.O.C., the AA&QMG the GSO I and some other senior officers, then placed the signal in safe-keeping. My reason for doing this was that the signal contained the instruction "Following proposals are tentative and subject to confirmation. In the meantime no repeat no publicity is to be given to this."

I took no further action until the D.O.C. received a telephone call from Brigadier Ferguson, DAGB of NDHQ advising as to V.E. Day and that Ranks 7454 dated 28 April 45 will apply.

(Memorandum re this telephone conversation is filed already as EXHIBIT "C". )

As a result of that conversation a teletype message A.8782 at 1445 hrs, 7 May 1945 was sent out by H.Q. M.D. 6 to all units in the District. This teletype message was to give affect to the instructions contained in Ranks 7454 dated 28 April 45. (copy of this signal has already been produced as Exhibit "B").

Q. Why was no action taken in connection with the signal Ranks 7454 dated 28 April 45 until a telephone call from Brigadier Ferguson, NDHQ was received at 1308 hrs, 7 May 1945?

A. Because Ranks 7454 contained the information "The following proposals are tentative and subject to confirmation. In the meantime no repeat no publicity is to be given this." And again in para 8 there was a warning.

Q. You did not consider then that it would be advisable to give advance notice to Unit Commanders in the District similar to that advance notice given H.Q. M.D. 6 by the signal Ranks 7454 dated 28 April 45.

A. No, sir.

Q. Why was District Signal A.8782 issued over the signature of Lt-Col North for D.O.C. M.D. 6?

A. On instructions from the D.O.C.

Q. Do you consider that A.8782 was given in sufficient time to allow full action to be taken?

A. I do, sir.

- 22 -

- Q. When did you understand the cessation of work or holidays to commence on the 7th May?
- A. When Ranks 7454 was made operative.
- Q. When did Ranks 7454 become operative?
- A. At the termination of the telephone conversation between the D.O.C. and Brigadier Ferguson. The D.O.C. ordered us to get out a teletype giving effect to Ranks 7454.
- Q. Who prepared this teletype message?
- A. Col North prepared it.
- Q. You did not understand that a radio announcement by Mr. Ilsley or an official of the Government was required before signal Ranks 7454 became operative?
- A. No. I acted on instructions from the D.O.C. who had this conversation with Brig. Ferguson.
- Q. What orders or arrangements were made by you on 8th May 1945, other than written?
- A. I have already referred to the ceremonial order relating to the service on the 8th May. Apart from this, at about 1440 hrs I sent the D.A.P.M. down <sup>on</sup> a report of riots down at the brewery. He reported the situation as being very serious. This was reported to me on the platform of the Garrison Grounds where the V.E. Day ceremony was in progress. After the ceremony I suggested to the D.O.C. that ~~his~~ troops from Debert be warned to stand-by in readiness to be brought into the city. The suggestion was agreed to by the D.O.C.
- At about 1600 hrs I telephoned Brig. Colquhoun at Debert and told him to have 1000 men with an officer for 20 men, armed with rifles and bayonets, vehicles gassed and be ready to move to Halifax on receipt of a Move Order. I then reported to the D.O.C. that Brig. Colquhoun was getting on with this. He told me a meeting had been called for 1630 hrs in the D.O.C.'s. office at which Heads of Services, Attorney General, Mayor, Chief of Police, Head of local committee and various other civilian authorities. Minutes of this meeting which I prepared myself, have already been filed as Exhibit "E".
- Acting on orders from the D.O.C. I had all units in the area telephoned about 1715 - 1730 hrs to have all officers and NCOs available, sent into the city to have the soldiers taken off the streets. I then instructed the A&Q to telephone Wellington Barracks to organize all available men to stand by to assist the Provost. I telephoned the same message to Halifax Fortress.

- 23 -

At 1745 I telephoned Brig. Golquhoun at Debert to get his force moving. I arranged for guides to meet them at Bedford and arranged for the S & T0 to have rations provided and the O.C. No. 6 District Depot for housing. The District Ordnance Officer to have ammunition available at No. 6 District Depot. I spent the rest of the afternoon and evening at District H.Q. dealing with various rumors and suggestions and keeping the D.O.C. appraised of any information that came in.

The D.O.C. issued an order at about 1800 hrs ordering all troops to return to barracks and to be confined to barracks until further orders.

At about 1830 the excitement appeared to die down as far as service personnel were concerned.

- Q. When did you first become aware of the disturbances on the evening of 7th-8th May?
- A. In the forenoon of the 8th.
- Q. Were you aware of it prior to that time?
- A. I do not remember seeing it in the local papers.
- Q. What time did you arrive at your office on the 8th?
- A. At 0830 hrs.
- Q. Can you approximate the time of the disturbances on the 8th?
- A. At about <sup>1430</sup> 2030 hrs. 1430
- Q. What steps or arrangements did you take between the time you became aware of the disturbances on the evening of the 7th-8th May, until the time of the service at the Garrison Grounds at 1430 hrs?
- A. I checked with the D.A.P.M. When the D.A.P.M. had reported these disturbances to me I asked him what action had been taken by the V.L. Day Committee and learned from him that they had a meeting in the forenoon at which the opinion was expressed that no further disturbances were expected before nightfall and that the Chief of Police had arranged with the RCMP and the three Services to have Civil Police, Provost, RCMP and Naval Shore patrol in strength at various vulnerable points.

- 24 -

Q. What did you do as a result of this conversation?

A. Reported the matter to the D.O.C. on the telephone. It appeared to me that the Chief of Police and the Provost were in a position to gauge what was required and I saw no reason to take any special precautions or extraordinary steps.

Q. Did the D.A.P.M. make any suggestions to you?

A. No.

Q. Did the D.A.P.M.'s conversation with you reveal that any Army personnel were involved in the disturbances on the night 7-8th May?

A. I think he mentioned there were a very few Army personnel. My reason for not expecting trouble as far as Army was concerned, is because the 4000 odd troops quartered in barracks are mostly technical soldiers employed in shops, on services and in offices, mostly older men who were well organized in small units and well-known to their officers. In addition, some 1200 all ranks approximately, are on subsistence and it is a general rule that only men of good behaviour are to be permitted out on subsistence.

I was particularly impressed two or three weeks before the disturbances when I inspected the Provost Corps - impressed with their bearing and training, which impression, judging from reports of their action I have received, was justified.

Q. To your knowledge was there any consideration given to a combined law enforcing force of sufficient police, RCMP, Shore Patrol and Provost personnel?

A. I know of no suggestion.

Q. Your testimony, in general, not only covers Halifax but Dartmouth as well?

A. Yes, but in regard to Dartmouth, I also telephoned A.23 CD&AAA TC about 1730 hrs on 8 May to have any available troops standby to reinforce the Provost personnel.

Q. What orders or arrangements were made by District H.Q. on 9 May or thereafter, except other than written, to prevent further disturbances?

A. C.B. was maintained and Army personnel on subsistence were instructed to obey the curfew. Heavy motorized Provost patrols were patrolling the town to ensure that there were no soldiers on the streets. C.B. was lifted on 11 May, the curfew was lifted on the 13th May. The extra Provost patrols were continued as long as the curfew was in force.



- 25 -

Q. Would you tell the Court, What in your own opinion, were the contributing factors to the disturbances of 7-8th May 1945?

A. I think the contributing factors were the greatly over-crowded condition of the city, over-taxed restaurants and theatres and the fact that the liquor stores were closed over the holiday. Actually all Army units in the Halifax area had prepared and carried out entertainment for their troops in their own lines. This will be borne out by nearly all unit reports which will be submitted later.

Prior to V.E. Day it was intended to have the Army garrison parade through Halifax, but the Joint Service Committee decided to have a Joint Service parade to which each service would send a token force of 500.

After the parade was held on the Garrison Grounds at about 1430 hrs on 8 May 45, the Thanksgiving Service was held from 1430-1450 hrs at which Admiral Murray ordered the Service personnel assembled to parade to down town Halifax in the hope of distracting the unruly crowd.

Q. What do you know concerning the use of the army rifle range at the Halifax Armouries on 9th May 45 by the civil police for incarcerating persons arrested by them?

A. That arrangement was made as a result of a suggestion by the D.O.C. to the Chief of Police, Mayor and Assistant Commissioner Eames of the RCMP, as in his opinion, the remaining source of trouble lay with drunken civilians who he observed to be many. The D.O.C. considered that the many drunken civilians who were still on the streets of Halifax were the only menace remaining on the 9th May.

It was then arranged that the RCMP would assist the civil police in arresting drunken civilians. The Chief of Police stated his lock-up was over-crowded and asked for the use of the rifle range of the Armouries as an auxiliary lock-up, which was granted. The city provided the food and guards for these inmates. I didn't see any soldiers when I visited this place but saw a lot of drunken civilians.

Q. From whom did the D.A.P.M. received his instructions regarding the preparation for V.E. Day?

A. His services were placed at the disposal of the V.E. Day Committee by the D.O.C. I am not aware of any other instructions to the D.A.P.M.

- 26 -

- Q. In view of the disturbances which have taken place and also the duty the Army bears to the civilian population, and also that the Navy cannot be called out in Aid to the Civil Power, and due to their numbers here in Halifax, can you recommend any change in the military set-up of precautions that should be taken other than those that were taken?
- A. No, sir.
- Q. Say within a months time the war with Japan is over, what special arrangements would you contemplate making at District H.Q.?
- A. In view of what has happened, and if the great force of Naval people were still here, undoubtedly I would say, keep on hand any troops that are here.

- 27 -

**THIRD  
WITNESS :**

<sup>mc</sup>  
Lieut-Colonel F.J. North, A.A.&Q.M.G., M.D. 6  
having been duly sworn, states:

Q. Will you describe your functions and duties as AA&QMG M.D. 6?

A. I was appointed AA&QMG, M.D. 6 in January 1942. All administrative matters, up to the time when Colonel Duncanson was appointed Col i/c Admin on 12 Mar 45, came under my guidance. In addition to that, the D.O.C. appointed me as Officer i/c Discipline of all H.Q. details and as such, I practically acted in his place as Officer Comdg all H.Q. Staff, as far as my rank would allow. In addition I am Officer i/c Discipline for the CWAC in Halifax. When Col. Duncanson was appointed Col i/c Admin, he asked me to work with him and to give him all new business, particularly regarding policy. The D.O.C. told me and other Staff Officers that Col Duncanson was appointed Col i/c Admin and that he was disappointed, and he knew I would be, but he called for co-operation, which we promised to give.

Prior to Col Duncanson's appointment, the large number of troops and large number of administrative work involved had caused a request to be submitted from this District to Ottawa for an assistant to the AA&QMG, which NDHQ granted. Major Wylde was given this appointment and functioned as such until a change of establishment was granted following the reduction to nil strength of Atlantic Command H.Q. On the new establishment, a Col i/c Admin was appointed and I was detailed to carry on as the AA&QMG under the Col i/c Admin.

Q. What, prior to 7 May 45, were the respective functions of the Col i/c Admin and the AA&QMG?

A. We worked as one officer practically. On matters of policy a consideration was given by the Col i/c Admin. Routine A&Q matters were handled by myself and staff.

Q. Do you find the present arrangement to work satisfactorily?

A. Yes. We get on very well together.

Q. Which officer, Col i/c Admin or the AA&QMG, is primarily responsible for such matters as arrangements, orders and instructions prior to an event such as V-E Day?

- 28 -

- A. Prior to Col Duncanson's arrival, I was responsible for all ceremonials and order other than 'Q' orders. After his arrival, the D.O.C. would sometimes tell me and sometimes instruct Col Duncanson to look after it. There was no particular dividing line.
- Q. Who did the D.O.C. deal with in connection with orders and arrangements for V-E Day?
- A. The actual ceremonial order was got out by Col Duncanson. That was the only order we got out.
- Q. What is the total strength of the staff and sub-staff in H.D. 6 as of 7 May 45?
- A. 91 male officers; 4 CWAC officers; 108 male ORs; 50 CWAC ORs; and added to that number 28 ORs of No. 8 Employment Platoon. In addition to these must be added the Service sub-staffs which work with the Services but are part of the HWE of this H.Q. They are as follows:-

|              |                             |
|--------------|-----------------------------|
| <u>RCE</u>   | - 9 soldiers and 6 C.W.A.C. |
| <u>RCALB</u> | - 4 soldiers and 1 C.W.A.C. |
| <u>CDC</u>   | - 1 soldier and 1 C.W.A.C.  |
| <u>RCASC</u> | - 5 soldiers and 9 C.W.A.C. |

All personnel referred to above are ORs.

- Q. What is the total strength of the troops in the Halifax and Dartmouth area?
- A. This is shown on a chart which I have prepared.

NOTE

This chart is examined by the Court and produced as Exhibit "V").

- Q. What is your estimate of the approximate number of all ranks out of barracks not on duty in Halifax and Dartmouth on 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. Exclusive of Service Sub-staffs, about which I have no information, there were on the morning of 7th, 3 officers and 34 ORs not on duty in Halifax, they may have been either on duty elsewhere or on leave. In the afternoon of the 7th, there were 69 officers and 92 ORs; in the evening of the 7th, there were 85 officers and 141 ORs.
- On the 8th May 45 - in the morning, there were 79 officers and 92 ORs. In the afternoon, 79 officers and 181 ORs. In the evening, there were 85 officers and 183 ORs.
- Q. Have you any personal knowledge of disturbances involving Army personnel on 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. No. I was not downtown on either of those days.

- 29 -

Q. Will you give the Court the time, place and nature of all disturbances involving Army personnel on the 7th-8th May 45 which have been advised or reported to you?

A. Breaches of discipline - On 7-8th May AVL - 13

Drunkenness - 5

Being in possession of plunder - 15 (this incl 3 at A.14).

Dealt with by the Civil Court - 14 (these were infractions of discipline that came under civil law).

In addition to that, we took from a civilian who gave the name of Mr. Leo Gordon Landry, certain articles, including silver goods and clothing.

I produce a list of confiscated goods taken from civilians, Naval personnel and Army personnel, as they were passing District H.Q., M.D. 6 on the afternoon of 8 May 45. (This list is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "W"). The names of BQIS Newman and Pte Bordeleau are listed together in connection with certain articles, as they were each jointly in possession of these articles. These articles were taken from these persons by my orders, a list made, and each lot placed in separate containers, except that a number of articles were taken from individual civilians who failed to give their name and address.

In the case of the civilian person who gave his name as Landry, this has been reported to the Police. The articles obtained from this person are being turned over to the Police and a receipt obtained. Also turned over to the Police were the articles obtained from unidentified persons.

In the case of Navy personnel, the Navy have been advised that we have these articles, and that we are retaining same until they are required by them as Exhibits. No action has been advised up to this date.

In the case of the Army personnel, the Fortress Commander has been advised of the names and articles obtained from the soldiers.

Instructions were given to all officers commanding on 11 May 45 with regard to disciplinary action to be taken. I produce a copy of this letter. (This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "W").

Exhibit "W" refers to letter dated 9 May 45 from me to all officers commanding, dealing with breaches of discipline. I produce copy of this letter. (This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "X").

- 30 -

- Q. Will you produce a report of all cases reported to you, or which have come to your knowledge of all breaches of discipline by Army personnel on 7, 8 and 9 May 45, which will show the numbers, names, ranks, and attachments of all such personnel, the charges laid against them, and the disposition of such cases, this list to include both arrests by the Civil Police and charges and trials in the Civil Courts, and arrests by military personnel and disciplinary action taken by way of summary disposal or Court Martial?
- A. I produce a list showing these facts. (this is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "AA").
- I wrote to the Chief of Police of Halifax on 13 May requesting detailed information concerning military personnel charged in the Civil Courts but I have not yet received any reply. (Copy of this letter is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "BB").
- I wrote a similar letter to the Chief of Police of Dartmouth on 13 May but have not yet received a reply. (Copy of this letter is examined by the court and filed as Exhibit "CC").
- Q. When were you first advised that Army personnel would likely be brought up before the civilian courts on charges involving disturbances on the 7th - 8th May?
- A. I was never so advised. I first saw it in the newspaper on the 10th May 45, as far as I can remember.
- Q. Did you despatch anyone to attend at the Civil Courts on the morning of the 8, 9, 10 and 11 May 45 to ascertain whether any army personnel were being charged, and if so, to provide the assistance required by K.R. Can.?
- A. No, because there is an agreement between Colonel DesRosiers, Deputy Minister of National Defence and the Attorney General of Nova Scotia, dated Jan 1941 in which the Attorney General agreed that all magistrates within the Province of Nova Scotia would, immediately a soldier was charged before the, communicate with the appropriate Military authority, so that the provisions of K.R. CAN. could be carried out. This letter is on file at NDHQ.
- I am not aware of any case in which the Civic Magistrates have carried out this agreement at this time, but I am aware of one case in which a complaint for non-compliance has been received and forwarded today to the Attorney General of Nova Scotia. I produce a copy of this statement, which is being forwarded by me to the Attorney General.
- (This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "DD"). I also produce correspondence between NDHQ and the Atty-Gen on this subject, filed as Ex. "DD1". I have been given to understand that since 1939 the Navy have had a legal officer attend the Magistrates Court daily as there is generally not less than 3 ratings for trial each day.

- 31 -

- Q. Since 7 May, have you received any requests from the Magistrates in Halifax or Dartmouth or from anybody else requesting assistance from the Army in connection with the trial of Army personnel before Civilian Courts?
- A. No. It may be that they have communicated with the man's Commanding Officer.
- Q. What was done by you to ascertain the names and details of the Army personnel appearing before the Civilian Courts after the 8 May 45?
- A. As the Provost and Police said that there was so few army personnel concerned, and as the Provost informed me, in most cases, they hurried the men on their way home, I did not do anything about going to the police court. This is the man's C.O.'s responsibility.
- Q. Have there been any other complaints with regard to the manner in which Army personnel were handled by the Courts?
- A. Only hearsay.
- Q. In view of these rumours of unfair Magistrates' handling of soldiers, what steps have you taken to check up generally over the situation?
- A. I have not done anything as yet. I may add that I have contacted Mr. Beazley, Asst. to the Attorney General, and he has agreed to check up the magistrates, so that they will notify the appropriate military authority in all future cases.
- Q. What instructions or orders were received by you from higher authority relating to V-E Day?
- A. The only instructions received were contained in the Top Secret Signal, Ranks 7454, dated 28 April 45, which has already been filed as Exhibit "T")
- In September last I was detailed to attend a meeting at the Mayor's office, at which representatives of the Air Force and Navy were present.
- Q. What instructions or orders did you receive from the D.O.C. prior to V-E Day?
- A. I was detailed to attend a meeting in September last by the D.O.C., memorandum covering this meeting is submitted.

In September 1944, a meeting was called by Mayor J.E. Lloyd, in the Council Chamber of the City Hall, to discuss plans for celebration on V Day, or when hostilities ceased in Germany. This meeting was attended by a number of civilians, representatives of the Churches, and in addition, representatives of the Navy, Army and Air Force, and the Fortress Commander.

- 32 -

Some discussion took place as to what protection the Armed Services could give against damage. It seemed to me, and I am sure that the other representatives of the Armed forces agreed with me, that the City Officials were tentatively putting out feelers as to whether the Armed Services were prepared to do considerable policing on that day. We pointed out to the meeting that our Service Police would assist in every way possible to control any misbehaviour on the part of the Armed Forces, but we had no power over civilians. It was then agreed that the Heads of the various Service Police should meet with Chief Conrad to discuss the best manner in which the Service Police of all Arms could co-operate.

To the best of my recollection, I believe that one of the representatives of the Armed Forces suggested that the Civil Defence Corps should also assist the Police on such a day. The impression I received at the meeting was that the Civil Defence Corps preferred to take a holiday and let the armed Forces look after any policing that might be required. I don't know of any other meetings being held, because I went overseas in November 44 and returned in January 45.

The next meeting of a Sub-Committee, formed by the Mayor in connection with V-E Day celebration, to which I attended was on March 13, 1945. Copy of the Minutes of this meeting I produce. (This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "EE"). It will be noted that at this meeting no discussion came up about action in case of trouble, as it was the general impression of all attending that there would be no serious trouble.

On March 31, 1945, a further letter was received from the Director of Civil Defence, who was chairman of the Sub-Committee, copy of which I produce. (this is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "FF"). It relates chiefly to the ceremonial part of V-E Day.

Early in April, the D.O.C. received a letter from the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission, informing him that the Liquor stores would be closed for a period during the celebrations, and asked for any suggestions. I produce a copy of these letters. (These are examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "GG").

Sometime early in April, I believe, a further meeting of the Civic Sub-Committee was called. Duties at the last minute at District H.Q. prevented my attending. However, I recollect talking to either Major Crowell or an Air Force officer, who had attended the meeting who told me that the Service personnel objected to the suggested closing of restaurants on V-E Day.



- 33 -

The D.O.C. called a meeting on 10 Apr 45 of all Commanding Officers in the Halifax Area, which includes Dartmouth, to discuss action to be taken regarding the operation of messes and canteens on V-E Day. A memorandum showing the officers who attended and the results of their discussion, I produce. (Copy of this memorandum is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "HH"). This meeting decided that every effort should be made to provide interests and entertainment within unit lines, and that other than the normal personnel on leave or pass, men should be kept at their general duties, particularly members of operational units; and that canteens and messes should be opened on V-E Day at the discretion of the C.O's.

On 16 Apr 45, a meeting of the Joint Services Sub-Committee Administrative was held and the following recommendations were made:

- (a) That there would be a joint Thanksgiving Service on the Garrison Grounds at 1430 hrs, following the announcement of the cessation of hostilities. This service was to be held on the day of the announcement, provided the announcement came before 1000 hrs. If the announcement came after 1000 hrs the service would be held on the day following. The afternoon service was chosen, as it was known that all churches in the city of Halifax proposed to hold a Memorial Service at 1100 hrs on V-E Day.
- (b) The Committee also made a recommendation that Service Bars should remain open, as this would encourage personnel to remain in Camp and be less likely to congregate in unruly gangs downtown, and this would therefore be the means of extended control.

- Q. Were there any other instructions received by you from the D.O.C. or the Col i/c Admin prior to V.E. Day other than the ones to which you referred?
- A. Acting on my own, I detailed the DAFM to co-operate with the Police following the meeting in Sept. 1944.
- Q. When and how did you receive Signal Ranks 7454 dated 28 Apr 45, from NDHQ?
- A. It was shown to me by Col Duncanson in the morning of 29 Apr 45. I returned it to Col Duncanson, who put it away.
- Q. Was there any discussion whether you should take action on it at that time?
- A. Not on that day. On Monday morning, 30 Apr 45, the D.O.C. made reference to it at his Monday morning conference, when it was drawn to his attention that it was Top Secret, and action ceased then.

- 34 -

- Q. What is the normal procedure when a Top Secret message is received at H.Q. M.D. 6 that would normally indicate action?
- A. It would be sent out Top Secret to the party concerned.
- Q. Do I understand that a Top Secret message means that it has to be sent out as received, if action is to be taken, or do you, under certain conditions, send out your own orders in connection with the information received in a Top Secret message?
- A. If I consider that the need for its being Top Secret has ceased, I can degrade it to Confidential. If I feel that action in a Top Secret message should be communicated to someone else, it would go out either as Top Secret or else as just a Warning Order that something was going to happen.
- Q. In the case of Ranks 7454, why was action not taken to advise the C.O's. of the District generally of the purport of this message?
- A. I seem to recollect that on Monday morning, 30 Apr 45 at the D.O.C's. conference, he explained to the Heads of all Services, Fortress Commander or his representative and the C.O. No. 6 District Depot the gist of Ranks 7454; but to my knowledge no action was taken with regard to points outside Halifax Fortress area.
- Q. Apart from Ranks 7454, did you issue any other orders or instructions to Unit Commanders prior to the 7 May 45?
- A. No.
- Q. Why did you not consider it necessary to do so?
- A. As this would come under the heading of new policy, it was really up to Col i/c Admin to initiate, not me.
- Q. What orders and arrangements were made by you on 7 May other than routine?
- A. On instructions by the D.O.C. and Col Duncanson, I sent out A.8782, which has been put on file as Exhibit "B", but this was actually sent at 1445 hrs by telegram, telephone and runner, so as to get it out as fast as possible.
- Q. Why was it sent at 1445 hrs?
- A. To the best of my knowledge, because of a telephone message received by the D.O.C. from Brig. Ferguson. Either the D.O.C. or Col Duncanson, who were in the same room with me, ordered me to despatch it.

- 35 -

Q. What was your understanding of the purport of the message received by the D.O.C. from Brig. Ferguson. to M.D. 6 at 1308 hrs, 7 May 45?

A. That Mr. Ilsley was going to make a speech immediately and that the principles of Ranks 7454 were to be put into operation immediately. I sent the wire out before I was furnished with a copy of the D.O.C's. notes of his conversation with Brig. Ferguson.

The delay between 1308 and 1445 hrs is due to the fact that after 1100 hrs, when the first radio announcement had been made, I had very few staff left.

There were three loudspeakers placed on the building known as the Naval Shore Patrol bldg, on the edge of the Garrison Grounds, nearest to Sackville Street, which were connected with one of the broadcasting stations across the road, and gave out news from time to time.

Q. Do you think that the information contained in your teletype message, timed 1445 hrs, 7 May 45, was in sufficient time to be of full and proper value to the C.O's. receiving it throughout the District?

A. Yes, I think it was, for this reason. At approx 1630 hrs, I received a message over the telephone from Major Dibblee, DAQIG at No. 1 Trg Bde Gp, who said that they had received my teletype but that Brig Colquhoun was not acting on it because he hadn't heard a Minister of the Crown announce V-E Day. I then sent a further telegram to No. 1 Trg Bde Gp, stating that Mr. Ilsley would speak at 1700 hrs.

Q. When did you send your staff, both civilian and Army, home on the 7th May 45?

A. The staff became so disorganized by the news, which they had all heard at 1100 hrs, that I discussed with the D.O.C. and Col Duncanson the advisability of reducing the staff immediately to a skeleton staff. They agreed and such action was taken between 1100 and 1200 hrs.

Q. What other orders and arrangements did you make on the 7th May 45?

A. None, except to have a discussion whether we should have the Church Service in the afternoon of 7 May or not. Col Duncanson asked me if it was possible and I said I thought it was, as far as the 500 token force we were supposed to put on the field was concerned.

Either the D.O.C. or Col Duncanson then phoned the Admiral, or the Admiral phoned them. I learned later that we were not to have it, as the Air Force were not available. The Admiral decided not to have it that day.

- 36 -

Q. When did you first become aware of the disturbances in Halifax on the evenings of 7th and 8th May?

A. On the morning of the 8th. I either saw it in the newspaper or somebody told me

Q. What did you do about it?

A. I didn't consider any action was necessary as the information I received was that it flared up for awhile and the police had it all in hand.

Q. Did you discuss it with anyone?

A. No. I went to work at 0930 hrs, worked until 12, returned from lunch at 1345 hrs and attended the thanksgiving service at Garrison Grounds at 1430 hrs.

At 1350 hrs, Lt-Col Clarke, CAPM, MD 6, reported to me that there was an outbreak of a disturbance downtown. I instructed him to get as many Provost as possible downtown and reported it to the D.O.C. at 1355 hrs, who conferred with Admiral Murray when Admiral Murray arrived at about 1400 hrs.

After the Service, I returned to the office to await further orders as to action to be taken, and from time to time during the afternoon, instructed either the Provost or the CMSC staff to collect what was apparently loot from passers-by outside District H.Q. and to obtain, if possible, their identity. Service personnel were allowed to proceed after we were satisfied of their identity.

Sometime during the afternoon, I learned that a meeting was being called at 1630 hrs in the D.O.C.'s office, which I attended.

Q. Between 1500 hrs and 1630 hrs, what was done by you with regard to the disturbances downtown, other than what you have stated?

A. Nothing, but to safeguard M.D. 6 H.Q. building.

Q. Was any consideration given during this period to the question of calling in all Army personnel?

A. The ordering and detailing of the troops on parade to march downtown was done by Admiral Murray, and to the best of my knowledge was done with the object of quieting down any disturbance that might be there, so I felt it was only up to me to safeguard the building.

Q. What provisions did you make after hearing of the disturbances from the DAPM prior to the Thanksgiving Service, to obtain a further detailed picture of the actual disturbances?

A. The information from the DAPM was so sketchy concerning the disturbance, and as he was going down to investigate, it did not seem to call for any further action on my part.

- 37 -

- Q. Did he make any further report to you?
- A. No. He reported to Col Duncanson or to the D.O.C.
- Q. Did you leave District H.Q. during the afternoon?
- A. No. I stayed at District H.Q. until approx 1950 hrs when I went down to the Mess, got a sandwich and a drink and returned immediately to Headquarters.
- Q. During this time did you see any disturbances?
- A. No. After supper, I stayed on duty to be handy for anything the D.O.C. wanted me to do, until at about 0200 hrs on the morning of the 9th, I accompanied the D.O.C. and the Attorney General on a tour of the downtown area, where we found everything quiet, with the odd exception at the Corner of Barrington and Sackville Sts, where the Army Provost had just arrested two civilians breaking into a store. The Army Provost seemed to be in control of the situation and were directing traffic. I do not remember seeing any civilian policemen at that time, or any Shore Patrol.
- Q. If the war with Japan was finished in a month's time, is there any recommendation that you could make so that there would be no recurrence of such disturbances?
- A. I recommend that in the case of any Service personnel that not only there be adequate canteen facilities, but also the normal procedure regarding the purchasing of hard liquor or beer from the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission be maintained. Further, that if possible, the strength of the Navy in this port be very much reduced.

In this disturbance, I feel, from information received from both City Police, citizens, and the Provost, that there would have been no disturbance if the Army only had been concerned, as the Officers Commanding the big concentrations of Army troops within the Halifax Area had made provision for a certain amount of entertainment, and in some cases supplied free beer for the men, and so kept them largely within their respective camps. In addition, to that, it must be remembered that the majority of the Army troops in the Area of Halifax are of such an age and category that they are not likely to kick up much fuss.

The available information from photographs and from reports from my staff, show that the percentage of Army personnel actually taking part in the disturbances was extremely small. Therefore, I do not think that in the event of another celebration there is anything to be feared as to the improper behaviour of the Army.

The thought might be given by others to the proper control of civilians and other Service personnel. It will, however, be necessary for both the Civic authorities and also the Navy to properly control their personnel.

- 38 -

Q. What do you remember of the general meeting in the D.O.C's. office on the 8th May?

A. This meeting was held in the D.O.C's. office and commencing at 1630 hrs, Tuesday 8th May. The Mayor and Aldermen present requested some protection for merchants and liquor stores.

Mr. Mahon, the Liquor Commissioner requested protection for one or more of his stores which had not then been broken into but during the course of the meeting information reached Mr. Mahon and through him was conveyed to the meeting that a crowd had already broken into the stores.

The Aldermen present, whose names I do not know, were demanding Martial Law but I am of the opinion that they did not know what Martial Law was.

I believe it was explained to the Mayor and the Aldermen that the only way the Army could help would be by the Attorney General asking for aid to the Civil power. In this connection, prior to the meeting, drafts of the form were copied from the Militia Act and were available for the Attorney General to sign if he had so desired, but he did not actually make such a request, nor did he sign any requisition for such aid.

The D.O.C. suggested that it would be a good idea if the Services sent out officer patrols to recall all their men back to barracks or billets. There was some discussion on this by the Heads of Services. Finally, but some time between 1700 and 1730 hours, Col Clarke who was sitting next to me told me it would help a great deal if at least the Army worked on the D.O.C's. suggestion. I then stood up and requested that the D.O.C. give us permission to get at least the Army off the streets. The D.O.C. agreed. I then left the meeting with Major Wylde and, I believe, Colonel Duncanson to get on the telephone to instruct O.C's. to send patrols downtown to get as many as possible soldiers back to barracks or billets.

Later in the afternoon there were complaints by the C.W.A.C. at both Cathedral and Wellington Barracks that they feared sailors may break into their barracks, so arrangements were made with Ordnance and R.C.E.M.E. to send a piquet with two officers to both places to prevent such an occurrence.

Q. In your opinion would you please say why, in view of the disturbances on the night of 7 - 8 May 45, didn't the Army make special arrangements on the morning of the 8th May to guard against a recurrence of the disturbances of the 7th-8th May?

-39-

- A. My opinion is that the reports received by the D.O.C., G.1 and Col. Duncanson were to the effect that the disturbances on the night 7-8th were sporadic and that the crowd had got all their exuberance out of their system. This seemed to me to be so on the morning of the 8th, because they were certainly enjoying themselves in a reasonably quiet way, where I could see them, on the Garrison Grounds; and they were dancing down at South Park Street. Moreover, long before the commencement of the Thanksgiving Service, the crowd, estimated roughly from 15,000 to 25,000 on the slopes of Citadel Hill, were certainly orderly.
- Q. In the testimony of Major Browne, GSO II (I. & S) there appears to be some question about tear gas being available for use during the disturbances 7-8 May 45. Have you any knowledge of such tear gas being available.
- A. It was reported to me by some Staff Officer at District Headquarters on the evening of the 8 May that there was tear gas available through the R.C.A.F., and it was thought advisable to issue some to A.23 T.C. Detachment, which had come into Dartmouth, N.S. to assist the Dartmouth Provost Detachment. I immediately pointed out that the use of gas or smoke in Aid to Civil Power is forbidden to all except to civil police, and therefore the gas should on no account be issued. I gave orders to this effect.

- 40 -

**FOURTH  
WITNESS:**

Lt-Colonel A.A. Bell, GSO I, M.D.  
No. 6, Halifax, having been duly sworn  
states:

- Q. What is your appointment, when were you appointed and what are your duties?
- A. G.S.O. I, M.D. 6 and I was appointed to that position 25 March 1943. My duties are responsible to the D.O.C. for the Operations, Training, Intelligence, Security and Communications in M.D. 6.
- Q. What do you know concerning any instructions received from higher authority prior to 7 May 1945 relating to V.E. Day?
- A. I am aware that a signal was received from NDHQ towards the end of April, which signal is already filed as Exhibit "Tn", but I do not know when I saw it myself, nor what was done with it.
- Q. Do you personally know of any arrangements made or instructions issued with regard to the V.E. Day celebration other than the arrangements made for the thanksgiving parade on the Garrison Grounds?
- A. No.
- Q. Did you attend the Monday mornings meetings of the D.O.C. for some weeks prior to 7 May 45?
- A. Yes, I did.
- Q. Were there any discussion or reference at these discussions to V.E. Day?
- A. Yes. As far as I recall there was discussions as to general action to be taken on V.E. Day, whether the troops should be C.B'd., wet canteens closed, or whether they should be let out in the town. These questions came up about 2 meetings prior to 7 May.

The consensus of the meeting was that the wet canteens should be opened, with all C.O's. to instruct their officers to stay with the men in the camp or in the canteens to restrict the troops from over-indulgence, or in other words it was to be like Christmas, at which time the officers mixed with the men.

- Q. Did these discussions cover all troops of M.D. 6 or just those of the Halifax area?
- A. The discussions were about those troops of the Halifax area, but were to apply to all troops outside the Halifax area.



- 41 -

- Q. Was there a Fortress Commander present at these meetings; a member of the Halifax Fortress, Capt Butts or Capt Myers?
- A. I don't know whether they were there or not, two weekly meetings previous to 7th May 45?
- Q. Was the Fortress Commander or his representative present at the meeting on the 7th?
- A. I don't recall.
- Q. Were any definite orders or instructions relating to V.E. Day issued at the meetings?
- A. Not at the meetings.
- Q. Are you aware of any orders and instructions issued after the meetings other than the minutes?
- A. No, I don't know.
- Q. What arrangements were made prior to V.E. Day with regard to maintenance of discipline of the District, other than those which you have referred to as having been discussed at the D.O.C's. meetings?
- A. As far as I know the A&Q or Col i/c Admin held a C.O's. meeting at which these things were discussed. I don't know when it was held or what was decided.
- Q. Prior to 7 May 45, what did you understand would be the means to determine when V.E. Day became official?
- A. I don't know.
- Q. Does a copy of all administrative instructions go to 'G'?
- A. Yes.
- Q. If there had been any special instructions for V.E. Day issued by the A&Q, would 'G' have got a copy?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Did you get copies of instructions issued by A&Q?
- A. Yes, 3 copies; one to each Operations, Intelligence and Training Branches.
- Q. When meetings are called by Col i/c Admin, do you have a 'G' representative at these meetings?
- A. No, not always.
- Q. How do you find out at A&Q meetings of matters effecting Operations, Training or Intelligence?
- A. Verbal. Either the A&Q or Col i/c Admin would advise me verbally.

- 42 -

- Q. Did Col. North tell you that he had sent out an order (which is Exhibit "P") that there would be a holiday on the 7th-8th May?
- A. Yes. In that regard it was recognized that any operations would be undisturbed. My knowledge was that if the information regarding V.E. Day was received after 1000 hrs the balance of that day and all the next day were to be declared a holiday.
- Q. What do you know of the events of 7th May 45?
- A. I arrived at my office at 0830 hrs and carried on normal routine until 1600 hrs. I first heard the news between 1100-1130 hrs from some radio report which had announced that Germany had capitulated. It was generally chatted around between the officers, clerks and so on. The clerks as far as I know were told by the A&Q I understand, that they need not come back in the afternoon and I told my clerks there was no need to come back.
- Q. Why did you tell your clerks to take the afternoon off at that time?
- A. I understood that that was the beginning of the holiday.
- Q. In other words, you acted on the announcement over the radio between 1100-1130 hrs?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Was any conference held between the D.O.C. and senior officers with regard to what should be done after that radio announcement between 1100 and 1130 hrs?
- A. I don't recall any conference.
- Q. Did you receive any instructions from higher authority following that radio announcement?
- A. I received no instructions.
- Q. Prior to issuing your orders to your staff to take a holiday, did you ask for a look at the signal which had been received from NDHQ on the 29 April 45, particularly with regard to V.E. Day?
- A. I don't think so.
- Q. What did you do yourself?
- A. I carried on until about 1600 hrs when I met my wife and proceeded downtown on foot.

- 43 -

Q. What did you see downtown at that time?

A. Simply a bunch of people in a happy mood, but I saw no disturbances. Then went up Citadel Hill where we sat until about 1750 hrs looking over the harbour. I had dinner at Wellington Barracks, went to H.Q. Mess and then went home, where I remained. I saw nothing of the disturbances downtown that night. The reason I stayed at home was the lack of enthusiasm I had seen in the afternoon made me feel that things were sort of dead.

Q. When did you first hear of the disturbances 7 - 8th May?

A. At breakfast in the morning from some people who had heard of it. I went to the office at 0900 hrs, viewed the civilian Memorial Service on the Garrison Grounds at 1000 hrs from y window. At 1100 hrs went with my wife for a walk to the Northwest Arm. Reached my home at about 1245 hrs. Left the house at 1400 hrs to return to the office and then at 1415 hrs I went outside to join the D.O.C. and others going to the 1430 service. The first notice I had of any disturbances was when I saw the Provost leaving to go downtown. They left hastily in trucks and on enquiry I was told by the A&Q that he understood some sailors and civilians were creating a disturbance downtown. I attended the service with the D.O.C. and was with him throughout the service.

I returned to the office about 1515 hrs. At about 1530 hrs I went in a jeep with Capt. Harrington, GSO III Security to the northern part of the city and visited Olands Brewery and the Agricola Street Liquor store. At both places mentioned there was Shore Patrol and some Provosts but very few people around.

Returning to Barrington St. there were small groups of sailors and civilians, practically all of whom had bottles of liquor or beer. I did see on the east side of Citadel Hill, a great many small groups of sailors, soldiers, airmen, CWAC's, WHEN's and civilians drinking beer or liquor from bottles. The crowd there was very well mixed and no particular predominance of any particular type.

On my return to H.Q. I saw many service personnel, mostly sailors, carrying liquor or beer. I saw sailors and civilians carrying loot, but no soldiers. I saw civilians and sailors carrying liquor and loot but I don't remember any soldiers carrying liquor or loot.

Then I attended a meeting in the D.O.C's. office called by the Mayor, at which Heads of Services and civilian personnel attended at 1630 hrs. I remained at the meeting until about 1800 hrs.

- 44 -

- Q. The meeting was going on at 1800 hrs?
- A. I said until about 1800 hrs.
- Q. Will you tell us what transpired at the meeting?
- A. The main personalities there were the Heads of the 3 fighting Services; the Mayor, Chief of Police, Attorney General, Asst Commissioner Eames, RCMP, Mr Beazley, ass't to the Atty General, Mr Mann, N.S. L.C., Col Bethune, city solicitor, the three Provost people, DAPM, SOSF and Air Provost Marshal, and several army officers and members of the city council.

The meeting was called at the request of the Mayor who appealed to the Heads of Services to take some action to stop the disorders downtown.

By this time it was generally understood by all that a large group predominantly sailors and civilians had broken into Keiths Brewery, certain liquor stores and had broken many merchants windows and were in the process of looting the merchant's stocks. The crowds were generally feeling the effects of the stolen beer and liquor and appeared to be bent on further destruction. It was reported that few army or air force personnel were involved.

Various means of dealing with the situation were dismissed. Calling out of troops was to be avoided in the opinion of the meeting, if at all possible, to avoid bloodshed. The first action decided upon was to have the Admiral appeal to the sailors from an RCAF sound truck, to return to their barracks at once.

It was agreed that the Mayor would announce a curfew but not read the Riot Act, for all Service personnel and civilians, to begin at 2000 hrs. This was done. The suggestion to get the Service people off the streets was made by the D.O.C.

During the time the discussion on this proposal was being carried out, H.Q. officers telephoned to the various C.O's. in Halifax instructing them to send all their available officers out at once through the city to gather in their own troops. This act was quite effective.

At about 1830 hrs I called various C.O's., such as, 21 AA Regt, No. 6 Dist Signals Coy, No. 6 District Depot, to have all physically fit men in barracks sent to the Provost barracks to assist the Provost detachments. Several hundred responded within a short time to this instruction.

- 45 -

At about 1930 hrs I drove downtown with Major W.A. Smith in his private motorcar. On Argyle St, I stopped a soldier who was with a sailor and civilian, carrying a case of beer. I was in the act of taking the beer from the soldier when two city police constables appealed to us to assist them by taking a soldier prisoner to the police station in the car. They feared they would lose him on the street. He was Gnr. Baginski who was awarded four years in the penitentiary. His pockets were bulging with jewellery.

(Em 12) While we were loading Baginski in the car, the other soldier walked off and when we went after him he dropped the beer and ran off. The sailor and civilian picked up the whole case of beer and walked off. We then delivered Baginski to the City Police Station. We then drove north on Argyle St for some distance and back on Barrington St as far as the Grand Parade where there were a large number of drunken sailors making merry in the street. I then returned to the office and stayed there until after midnight. We avoided the area east of Barrington and south of Duke Sts.

- Q. What actual looting did you see of people going in and out of stores?
- A. I saw none.
- Q. Why did you not drive on the streets which you avoided?
- A. For 3 reasons. The roads were covered with broken glass. The disturbers appeared to be almost entirely drunken sailors and I was in a private car.
- Q. Will you continue please?
- A. At 2200 hrs I met a force of infantry, 72 officers, 1264 ORs from Debert at Bedford and led them into No. 6 District Depot and gave the C.O., Lt-Col Thomson, a general picture of the situation.
- At 2300 hrs I was informed from H.Q. that the situation had quieted down considerably and it was unlikely that the troops would be required that night. I returned to the office about 2315 hrs and remained there until shortly after midnight 8 May 45.
- Q. In your opinion, why did the Mayor of Halifax not call his emergency meeting on the morning of the 8th May after the warning of serious trouble on the night of the 7 - 8th May, instead of later in the afternoon?
- A. I understand there was a meeting of the Provost Personnel, RCMP, with the Chief of Police and Mr. Mann of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission at 1000 hrs on the morning of the 8th. I was not present at the meeting. It was my opinion and I believe the opinion of many others that the lesser disorders on the evening of the 7th-8th had been the V.E. celebration.

- 46 -

- Q. When the Mayor opened the meeting on Tuesday afternoon at 1630 hrs in the D.O.C's. office, what type of assistance did he request?
- A. There were a number of aldermen demanding Martial Law, without knowing exactly what this meant.
- The Admiral presided at the meeting. The mayor addressed himself to the Chairman as there were more Navy personnel involved than any other Service.
- The Mayor said the disturbances were beyond the control of the City Police. He wanted to know what action could be taken by the Services.
- Q. Did anyone at that meeting blame Service people for breaking windows of shops?
- A. The civilians at the meeting generally laid the blame for breaking windows of shops on Service personnel, particularly to the Navy.
- Q. Did the civilian members at the meeting lay any blame for the looting?
- A. I don't recall.
- Q. In the Mayor's statement to the Press the following morning he indicated that he had appealed for help from the Services and had not received the help asked for. In your opinion was there anything said by the Services at that meeting which indicated that any assistance asked would be refused?
- A. No, I would not say there was any refusal.
- Q. What did any representative of the Army say when such assistance was requested? What was the reaction to the Mayor's request?
- A. My mind is not clear about the particular events of this meeting and I was involved on special duties at the time.
- Q. Is the Operations Room under your jurisdiction?
- A. Yes, it is.
- Q. Does Intelligence and Security both come under you?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Does No. 6 Security Section come under you?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Are you aware that Lieut. McCarthy, O.C. of this Section, on 8 May 45, authorized two patrols of his section to go into downtown Halifax carrying weapons and live ammunition, who he had instructed his personnel not to use.
- A. No.

- 46 A -

- Q. Did he have any authority to do this?
- A. Any patrols of the Security Section are entitled to be armed.
- Q. Is there any unified command of the three Services, Navy, Army and Air Force in Halifax, N.S.
- A. No. Each Command the Army Navy and Air Force is separate, but work together on a liaison co-operative basis. There is a Joint Services Committee which effects such liaison. Admiral Murray of the R.C.N. had been Chairman of this Committee for about 1 month prior to the 8th May 45 as he happened to be the Senior in rank of the officer commanding the respective services.

-47-

FIFTH  
WITNESS:

Major H.G. Wylde, DAAG H.Q. M.D. 6,  
having been duly sworn states:

- Q. How long have you been DAAG in M.D. No.6?
- A. Since 17th August 1943
- Q. Will you produce a map of the city of Halifax showing the Units, strength of Units, quarters.
- A. Yes. I produce same. This is filed as Exhibit "YX-3".
- Q. What do you know personally about the disturbances of 7th-8th May?
- A. I do not know anything about the 7th May. After the Thanksgiving Service on the Garrison Grounds on the 8th May, at about 1500 hrs, I with Lt.-Col. Clarke, DAPM M.D.6, Commander Chiles, RCNVR, and his immediate Staff Officer took a tour down town following the parade. I did not see any evidence of rioting among personnel. I did see windows broken on Hollis St., Granville St. and Barrington St.
- Q. What was the composition of the crowd?
- A. Mostly civilians and naval personnel.
- Q. What precautions were taken prior to 7th May in order to insure maintenance of discipline on V-E Day?
- A. My understanding is that discussions had taken place between the Heads of the three Provost Services and City Police, but what measures they decided upon, I do not know.
- Q. Do you know of any other measures other than those just referred to?
- A. No Sir.
- Q. When did you first hear that hostilities in Europe had ceased?
- A. On the radio, the morning of the 7th May.
- Q. What did you do after hearing this announcement?
- A. It was during my breakfast hour that I heard this announcement. I went to my office. I listened to the radio in the Operations Room. We endeavoured to carry on regular office routine as best as possible. Previous instructions from Ottawa on the 29 April stated that a holiday would be declared if the announcement came before 1000 hrs or if after that time, the remainder of the day and the following day. A number of the staff were let go at noon on the 7th May.
- Q. On whose orders?



-48-

A. I do not know. Col. North told me they were letting most of the staff go.

Q. When did you understand that V-E Day was to commence officially?

A. At 1600 hrs on the day it was declared.

Q. Had any announcement been made by Ottawa before the holiday was declared by M.D. 6?

A. No Sir.

Q. Will you produce a map showing the situation of the various Units under M.D. 6 in the Halifax Area, with indication of their total strength and indication of the number of personnel in quarters and on subsistence the map to be accompanied by a detailed statement showing these details in graphic form.

A. Yes. I produce this statement and map, which is examined by the Court and filed as part of Exhibit "yy".

-49-

SIXTH

WITNESS:

Capt. J. W. Bell, Camp Commandant, H.Q.  
M.D. No.6, having been duly sworn states:

Q. How long have you been Camp Commandant, H.Q.  
M.D. No.6?

A. Since 12th Feb. 1945.

Q. What instructions or orders did you receive from  
higher authority relating to V-E Day, prior to  
7th May 45.

A. Only to check maintenance and order around H.Q.  
and Bellevue, and the necessary arrangements in  
erecting the marquee on the H.Q. grounds to take  
care of any casualties that might occur.

Q. Who gave you these instructions?

A. Col. North, Sir.

Q. Were they written or verbal?

A. Verbal

Q. What precautions did you take prior to 7th May in  
order to insure maintenance of discipline on V-E Day?

A. Nothing, any more than I had my usual guards posted  
in their places. Nothing unusual.

Q. When did you first hear of cessation of hostilities  
in Europe?

A. About 1400 hrs on Monday the 7th May, but this was  
not official.

Q. What did you do immediately receiving that information?

A. Nothing any more than the erection of the marquee  
at H.Q. and to see that personnel were on duty that  
night.

Q. Was a holiday declared that day?

A. Not that I recall.

Q. Did you and your staff work the rest of the day,  
7th May?

A. Yes Sir.

Q. You do not remember instructions with regard to the  
staff taking the rest of the day off?

A. No Sir.

Q. When was the holiday of the 8th May declared?

A. I am not sure Sir. It was my understanding around  
H.Q. that the 8th May would be a holiday.

Q. Did you receive any definite orders concerning V-E  
Day as a holiday?

-50-

- A. Yes Sir. I produce copy of Pt. I Order dated 7 May 45 stating that the remainder of the 7th May and 8th May would be a holiday. This is filed as Exhibit "ZZ". I received this order Monday afternoon.
- Q. Do you issue any orders such as Part I or Part II ?
- A. No Sir.
- Q. Did you receive this order, exhibit "ZZ", prior to 1700 hrs. 7th May?
- A. Yes Sir, to the best of my recollection.
- Q. What did you do on receiving copy of this order?
- A. No action, only to see that my guards were ready that night.
- Q. Did you advise your staff that they could have a holiday the rest of the 7th and 8th May.
- A. Yes Sir, the order was posted up.
- Q. When did your staff actually start taking a holiday on the 7th May?
- A. The duty truck took them to their barracks at 1630 hrs, the usual time.
- Q. What are your duties and functions as Camp Commandant?
- A. Maintenance of buildings, allocation of motor transport, hotel accommodation and reservations, administration of No. 8 Special Employment Platoon. This platoon is used for fatigues and guard duties, composed of 4 N.C.O.'s and 27 men.
- Q. What special instructions, other than routine, did you give the staff relating to the holiday 7th-8th May?
- A. I gave them a brief talk as to their behaviour and that I would need them on duty at this time.
- Q. At what time did you give this talk?
- A. About 1600 hrs. 7th May.
- Q. What did you tell them in relation to their guard duties on 7th-8th May?
- A. To be at their post. Be careful not to let any unauthorized personnel enter and be careful of fires.
- Q. Have you any authority over the sub staff at H.Q.
- A. No Sir.
- Q. Have you any personal knowledge of disturbances on 7th-8th May?
- A. No Sir. I remained at H. Q. and Bellevue.

-51-

SEVENTH  
WITNESS:

Capt. E.F. Harrington, C.A.C.,  
G.S.O. III (I), M.D. No. 6, Halifax, N.S., having  
been duly sworn states:

- Q. What are your functions and duties?
- A. My functions are to assist the G.S.O. II (I & S), with special reference to Military Security or Counter-Intelligence duties. This includes training and measures to be taken against espionage and sabotage and military propaganda. I have been G.S.O. III (I) in this District since 4 Jan 44. Previous to that, I was employed in the same work in M.D. No. 7 for approximately one year.
- Q. What information have you with regard to the Security angle in connection with the evidence leading up to V-E Day?
- A. In spite of the fact that we received regular reports from the Security Officers of Units in the District, as well as from members of the District Security Section, maintaining close liaison with the R.C.M.P. Intelligence Branch, the Intelligence Officers of the Navy, Air Force, we received no information previous to the 8th May, which would lead to the belief that any organized disorder was planned or contemplated by civilians or Service personnel. The first indication which I received of any violence in connection with V-E Day celebrations was from the morning papers of the 8th May, which described the disorders which occurred on the night 7-8th May.
- Q. Will you tell us what you know concerning orders, arrangements made by M.D. No. 6 relating to V.E. Day prior?
- A. Nothing except the publication which appeared in District H. Q. Orders with regard to the method in which V-E Day was to be celebrated, that is, the hours of employment, parades, and so on.
- Q. What did you do and what did you observe on 7-8th May 1945?
- A. On 7th May, I carried on with routine duties. I was down town during the afternoon. The streets were crowded and noisy but orderly. On the morning of 7th May, routine work was going on as far as my office staff was concerned. About 11 o'clock or a little before, there was a rumour that Germany had capitulated. From then on, the work was rather disorganized. Practically all the radios in H. Q. were turned on which was very disturbing. Instructions

-53-

About 1420 hrs, we parked the jeep clear of the crowd and I left S/Sgt. Gerdson in charge and went forward to where the Provost vehicles were parked in front of the North gate of the brewery and climbed up on top of the vehicle to observe the situation. At this time the Provost personnel were inside the fence and appeared to be forcing the crowd out of the grounds. The crowd were leaving, not willingly, and holding on to the cases and bottles which they had. In my opinion these bottles contained beer. The crowd was composed of sailors and civilians, including a large proportion of women, some of whom were carrying bottles. With the exception of the Provost personnel, the only Army personnel I saw at this time were one Pte, who appeared to be drunk but not carrying anything, about four or five soldiers who were watching but taking no part in the activities, and two CWAC's who were leaving the area with a sailor. They did not appear to be carrying any liquor. I estimated the crowd to be well over 1000.

At about 1450 hrs I returned to Dist. H.Q. and reported to Major Linley, then Senior "GW" Offr. present, what I had seen. At this time the parade service was going on and Admiral Murray was speaking. I asked Major Linley for instructions as to where he wished the personnel of the Security Section employed. He instructed me to make myself and the Section, with such other personnel as were available and needed, responsible for the protection of the H.Q. building. There is a Navy League canteen directly across the street.

At 1500 hrs, Major Browne, G.S.O. II (I) returned to H.Q., having been at the parade service. I reported to him and he instructed me to carry on with protection plans. At 1510 hrs. I took steps to have weapons and ammunition belonging to M.D. No.6 S.I.S., made ready. About 1525 hrs I issued instructions to place piquets around various points of H.Q. building and to have fire hoses run out and ready either to deal with fire or with a crowd. These actions were taken in consultation with the Camp Commandant, Capt. Bell.

At 1530 hrs, I drove Lt.-Col. Bell, GSO I, around the North end of the city. We saw Naval Shore Patrol and Provost Dets. in the neighbourhood of Agricola St. Liquor store and Oland's Brewery, but no sign of any disorders.

At 1600 hrs, I returned to H.Q. and inspected arrangements with CSM Young; four men assigned to each wing, two to be on duty at all times; weapons in "A" clerks office under guard of an NCO, and three men on patrol assisting Provost outside the building.

About 1620 hrs, civilian, Naval and Air Force Officers together with RCMP and City Police Officials were arriving at H.Q. From then on, until 2100 hrs, I acted as Liaison Officer in assisting Police, Naval, Air Force and civilian officials regarding phone calls, transport, etc, and also, with Major Browne, kept in close touch

-54-

with Operations Room and "I" personnel receiving and forwarding reports.

At 2205 hrs, a report was received from a Security Patrol N.C.O., who had just returned from Cathedral Barracks, that the crowd was still looting and were moving south on Barrington St. toward the station and that there were few, if any, Army personnel in the crowd. Shortly afterwards, a heavy rain started to fall and the number of persons on the streets increased suddenly. The greater number of those observed were Navy personnel who were proceeding in an orderly manner. The rest of the evening of the 8-9th May I stayed on duty at H. Q.

About 0100 hrs. 9 May, I accompanied Col. Duncanson (Col. i/c Admin.) on a trip around the city. Heavy rain had fallen and the streets were practically deserted. Fire at Peoples Credit Jewellers, Barrington St. appeared to be under control. We met a party of one WO 1 and three Sgts. who stated that they had not heard the order to return to barracks. They were sober and started for their quarters immediately. The WO 1 was S.M. Crampton of this H.Q. No other Army personnel were seen except two soldiers who were being escorted by Provost on Gottingen St. A few civilians were moving around together with a very small number of Navy personnel. We returned to H.Q. and remained on duty in the Operations Room until relieved at 0815 hrs. CSM Young and S/Sgt. Gerdson also remained on duty in H.Q. building while Cpl. James stayed in the QM Stores.

At 0715 hrs, I made a trip around the city with CSM Young. I saw some civilians and three or four service personnel who were moving along. It was noted that no police patrols were seen during this trip. We returned to H.Q. at 0745 hrs. About 1000 hrs, I drove around the city. There were quite a number of civilians sightseeing but very few Service personnel were on the street and they seemed to be going about their business.

During the course of the afternoon, reports of rumours had reached me from various sources stating that Navy Personnel were threatening to break out or had broken out of Peregrine, Stadacona or the Dockyard, but the rumours were contradictory and totally lacked any confirmation. It was decided to employ S.I.S. personnel as picquets in the various Naval Establishments in order to provide a warning of any such breakout. At 2200 hrs, one jeep with two Security personnel was placed on patrol until 2300 hrs. The crews varied during the evening.

At 2130 hrs, I accompanied Col. Duncanson to inspect the civilian prisoners quartered in rifle range at Armouries. I understand they had been arrested by civilian police. We found R.C.E. workmen completing partitions and some

-55-

65 prisoners in charge of one City police officer and a dozen Provost. There were three or four prisoners who were lying down and appeared to need medical attention. Col. Duncanson telephoned to the Chief of Police from the office of the 36 (R) Bde. Gp., stating that more policemen and a civilian doctor were required at once. Col. Duncanson told the Chief that the military authorities were to provide the accommodation only but that it was up to the City authorities to provide protection and medical attention. At 2130 hrs, the Security Patrol on foot were relieved by jeep patrol as curfew limited the activity of man on foot.

At 2300 hrs, I checked conditions at the Armouries on instructions from Col. Duncanson; found four city police on duty. A doctor had been there and five civilians were "sleeping it off" in a separate bay of the rifle range and a large number of civilians being held in the rifle range. There was only one soldier there under arrest. He was an RCME man and presumably was drunk.

On 10th-11th May, Security Patrol of Intelligence Personnel were maintained during the evening up to midnight in order to observe behaviour of troops. All the Patrols which I have mentioned were Intelligence Patrols and are in no sense to be confused as guards. They were to secure information regarding the behaviour and possible future actions of Service personnel, particularly Army. I was on duty at H.Q. until 2345 hrs or 2350 hrs each night. Everything was quiet on the night of 11th May.

- Q. Are you aware of any specific instances against discipline of Army personnel?
- A. I find no specific instances with the exception of two or three men who were brought into H.Q. and relieved of various articles which they were carrying. I did not interview these men but I understand a report covering these instances are on file. I also saw, perhaps a doz. cases, of drunkenness among Army personnel during 7th-8th May. I saw what appeared to be an officer on Citadel Hill about 1600 hrs 8 May. He appeared to be drunk. I was approximately 50 yds away from him, driving a jeep and could not identify him.
- Q. Were the restaurants closed or opened on V-E Day?
- A. I was told they were closed. As for reason, I produce clipping from the Halifax Mail of 18 May 1945. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "R".

-56-

Q. In connection with your Intelligence work, particularly in that of Liaison with RCMP, Navy and Air Force, was there any information given or discussed previous to V-E Day which might indicate a bad feeling existed between Service personnel and citizens of Halifax and Dartmouth?

A. There was not

Q. What was the type of relationship generally between the personnel of the three fighting Services in M. D. No. 6?

A. The relationship between the troops of each Service is very good. We have found the Navy and Air Force very co-operative.



-5

EIGHTH  
WITNESS

Lieut. A. P. MacCarthy, General List, No. 6  
District Depot, having been duly sworn states:

Q. What are your functions and duties in M. D. No.6?

A. I have been the O. C. No.6 Dist. Security and Intelligence Section since 15 Apr 45. I, myself, left Halifax on 6th May and did not return until 1910 hrs 8th May. I therefore saw nothing of the disturbances. Capt. Harrington, G.S.O. III (I), took my place. As O. C. No.6 Dist. Security and Intelligence Section, the following is a description of the activities of my staff which includes twelve O.R.'s, one CWAC and myself, from 7th-12th May.

Monday, 7th May 1945

Between the hrs 0900-0930 usual office routine was carried out. From 0930-1000 hrs, CSM Young and Cpl. James were on duty at the RCOC, returning our stores to Ord. Officer. From 1000-1200 hrs V-E. Day was announced. Complete staff, CSM Young, Cpl. James, Cpl. McPhee remained in the office awaiting instructions. From 1330-1355 hrs regular office routine. At 1400 hrs, a holiday was given full staff through Sgt.-Maj. Young on authority from Capt. Harrington, G.S.O. III (I).

Tuesday, 8th May 1945

At 1400 hrs, instructions were received from Capt. Harrington, G.S.O. III (I), M.D. No.6, to have all personnel in the Area stand by in the case of emergency. CSM Young gave instructions to S/Sgt. Gerdson, Debert Detachment, Sgt. Pritchard, Fortress Detachment, and Cpl. James to stand by. At 1510 hrs, CSM Young received instructions from GSO III (I) to prepare 6 Sten guns for action should they be needed, which was done. At 1535 hrs, the G.S.O. III (I) gave instructions that this Section would be held at District Headquarters for the protection of buildings and records, which was our main duty for that day. At 1700 hrs, half strength were dismissed for meals. At 1800 hrs, lists were made of all military personnel on duty at District Headquarters and duties allotted to same. At 1910 hrs, Sgt. Rogers and I reported in from Yarmouth. The Section now composed of Officer Commanding, CSM Young, S/Sgt. Gerdson, Sgt. Pritchard and Cpl. James who remained in the close vicinity of District Headquarters. Duty consisted of checking guards posted outside buildings, inside buildings and supplying whatever help needed.

Wednesday, 9th May 1945

At 0030 hrs the personnel dismissed with the exception of CSM Young and S/Sgt. Gerdson who remained on duty at District Headquarters until relieved at 0800 hrs by myself, Sgt. Rogers and Cpl. James. CSM Young accompanied the GSO III (I) on a tour of Barrington and Gottington Streets at 0715 hrs. At 0800 hrs,

-58-

I, with Sgt. Rogers and Sgt. Pritchard, carried out routine duties but held ourselves in readiness should trouble occur. S/Sgt. Gerdson proceeded to Debert, N.S. At 1700 hrs, all Section personnel proceeded to meals with the exception of Sgt. Rogers who remained at District Headquarters on phone duty. At 1730 hrs, CSM Young received instructions from the GSO II (I) to dress in civilian clothes and to patrol the Area of Stadacona Barracks and gather whatever information which would give an indication of whether or not further rioting would take place and to give early warning of any out-breaks. He reported that everything was quiet. At 1800 hrs Sgt. Rogers was relieved by Cpl. James. At 2015 hrs, CSM Young reported to me at 330 Gottington Street and I relayed information on situation to the G.S.O. II. At 2100 hrs, CSM Young was relieved by Sgt. Rogers, also in civilian clothes. Sgt. Rogers reported everything quiet. I and CSM Young patrolled the city area by DND vehicle until 0010 hrs. At 2300 hrs, Sgt. Rogers was relieved at end of duty.

Thursday, 10th May 1945

At 0830 hrs, routine duties for complete Section carried out. At 1830 hrs, patrols consisting of two cars, 5 cwt, both containing two men toured city area until 2330 hrs, reporting to the Section member who remained on phone duty, once every hour. All members were dismissed at 2330 hrs. Arrangements were made to have all phone calls relayed to one member of the Section who in turn would inform all members of the Section. Everything was then quiet.

Friday, 11 May 1945

From 0830 hrs, routine duties were carried on. At 1730 hrs, patrols consisting of two cars, 5 cwt, with two men per vehicle, toured the city area until 2330 hrs. These patrols reported hourly to member on phone duty at office.

Saturday, 12 May 1945

From 0830 hrs, routine duties were carried on. At 2200 hrs, patrols of one vehicle containing two men toured the city until 2200 hrs.

- Q. Are you on the strength of No. 6 D. D. and paid by them?
- A. No Sir, I am attached to No. 6 District Security & Intelligence Section and paid by the Paymaster, District Headquarters, M.D. No.6.
- Q. Were the patrols sent out by your Security Section armed and with ammunition while in the city of Halifax?
- A. Yes Sir. This was done on Tuesday, 8th May and Wednesday, 9th May, because of the danger of being attacked.
- Q. Under whose orders did the personnel of the Security Section carry arms and ammunition?
- A. On my authority only, Sir.

-59-

Q. What were the duties of these patrols?

A. To secure any information of disturbances and pass it back to Headquarters.

Q. What instructions did you give those in charge of patrols with regard to weapons and ammunition?

A. My instructions were not to use the weapons.

Q. Do you realize that it is sometimes more dangerous to be carrying a weapon that one cannot use than to have no weapon at all?

A. I fully realize that, Sir.

Q. Did your Security Section Patrols patrol streets of Dartmouth?

A. No Sir.

Q. Why did you send your Security personnel in mufti in the area of Stadacona Barracks?

A. On orders from Major Browne, the G.S.O. II (I).- I do not know the reason for this order.

Q. Did any of your personnel see any disturbances on 7th-8th May?

A. Since the personnel under my Command were on duty at District Headquarters on 7th-8th May, they did not see any disturbances.

460-

NINTH  
WITNESS:

Col. F. E. Andrew, Officer Commanding, No. 6 District Depot, C. A. being duly sworn, states:

Q. How long have you been commanding No. 6 District Depot?

A. Since January 1st, 1943.

Q. What was the total strength under your command as of the 7th May 1945?

A. The total would be 3939, that is the total strength of the depot on that day.

Q. Could you divide that into Officers and Other Ranks?

A. 224 is the total strength of Officers. 189 Officers were present. For instance there were 40 Officers on duty 14 in hospital and 10 on command.

Q. But they are all on your strength?

A. Yes sir.

Q. What is your estimate of the number of All Ranks out of barracks and not on duty and in Halifax and Dartmouth on the 7th May 1945?

A. On the 7th of May in the morning nil. In the afternoon Nil. In the evening after 1800 hours approximately 370.

Q. And on the 8th of May?

A. On May the 8th in the morning approximately 100. In the afternoon approximately 750. After 1800 hours approximately 240.

Q. Will you give the time, place and nature of a disturbance involving personnel as a whole to your own personal knowledge?

A. There is none sir.

Q. Time, place and nature of all army personnel under your command involved in a disturbance which was advised or reported to you in connection with the disturbance of the 7th, 8th May 1945?

A. No report was received of any personnel of No. 6 District Depot being involved in any disturbance.

Q. Give the time, place and nature of all disturbances involving army personnel not under your command in connection with the disturbance of the 7th, 8th May 1945 which have been advised or reported to you?

A. No report was received that any personnel of No. 6 District Depot, C.A. were involved in the disturbances. Following is a list of No. 6 District Depot personnel who were found in possession of alleged improper possession of articles on V-E Day, 8th May 45, on being checked at the camp entrance H.500220 Pte. Iwaschuk, M., Appraisal Wing-- 6 prs. socks. F.59405 Pte. Wilson, M. Reinf.Wing--1 pr. shoes, 1 qt. Gordon's Wine.F.29555 RSM Benson, D.D., Appraisal Wing-- 1 qt. Emu Wine 444, 1 qt. Emu Wine 444. F.40250 Cpl. Nelson, J.H., HQ Wing,--1 qt. Red Ball Beer. F.49685 Pte. Rhodenizer, G.R., Appraisal Wing--1 qt. Red Ball beer. F.37226 Pte. Boudreau, J.W., Rehab.Wing--1 qt. Old King Whiskey D.105155 Cpl. Bigras, J.G., W.Force, Transit Camp--1 qt. Corby's Whiskey, 1 pr. shoes, 1 writing kit, 2 flashli

000385

A. (Cont'd) 3 pkgs. cigarettes, 2 electric cords, 2 watch straps. The above listed loot has been turned in to the police station in Halifax, N. S. Affidavits were prepared covering the case of Cpl. Bigras and forwarded to his Unit in "W" Force. All these men were charged under Sec. 40 A.A.

Pto. Iwaschuk and Pto. Wilson were each fined seven days pay and the charges against the remainder were dismissed for lack of sufficient evidence.

Following is a list of personnel of other units who were brought to No. 6 District Depot, C.A., on V-E Day, 8th May 1945. This list also showing the articles with which they were found in possession:

K.3650 Gnr. Barkhouse, T.A., 1st Halifax Coast Regiment, R.C.A., York Redoubt--18 boxes matches, 14 pkgs. Gillette Blades, 5 pkgs. Minora blades, 19 pkgs. Valet blades, 6 pkgs. Buntz cigars, 3 pkgs. Cigarettes, 5 rolls film, 37 pkgs. flint (Thorens), 1 pipe cleaner, 2 pipes, 1 Ronson repair kit, 14 combs, 6 Personna blades.

F.97726 Spr. Baron, F.T., Pioneer Coy., R.C.E.-- 12 Handkerchiefs.

F.55893 Spr. McLennon, R.P., Pioneer Coy., R.C.E.-- 1 pt. Gilby's Gin, 1 qt. South African Wine.

F.32896 Spr. Almond, F., Pioneer Coy., R.C.E., 1 qt. Stag Head ale.

F.86171 Pte. Murphy G.F., R.C.E.M.E., 1/2 qt. King's Plate Whiskey.

The above listed loot has been turned in to the Halifax Police Station. Affidavits covering Gnr. Barkhouse were prepared and forwarded to his unit, together with charge sheet. The remaining cases are to be dealt with by their respective Unit Commanders.

Q. What instructions or orders were received by you from higher authority relating to V-E Day?

A. I received Teletype HS/150-1-2, AQ 1445 P Hrs. 7 May 45 which is already filed as Exhibit "B". I think this was received about 1530 hours. I didn't declare any holiday that day, because I didn't receive the teletype referred to until I returned to my office, until after 1600 hours and it was then too late to declare a holiday. Col. Duncanson advised me about 1130 that morning that the rest of the day wasn't to be a holiday.

Q. What was your understanding as to when the V-E Day celebrations would start and what was the signal for action?

A. My understanding was the official announcement would be simultaneous in all capitals. That is the official announcement would be when Churchill, Stalin and the President of the United States would speak. This impression I received from the general radio broadcast.

Q. Were instructions or orders received from Headquarters M.D. 6 relating to V-E Day?

A. To my knowledge yes.

Q. Did you receive instructions or any information as to any special enforcement or relaxation of discipline relating to V-E Day for troops under your command?

-62-

- A. I have no recollection of it. I was however quite conscious of my responsibility during that period.
- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you relating to V-E Day prior to midnight May 6th, 7th, 1945?
- A. At a rally of all ranks in the drill hall on April 17, 1945, called for the purpose of presenting a Victory Loan Pennant I advised all present that if, and when V-E Day was proclaimed, all personnel were to immediately report to the Drill Hall for a special thanksgiving program. At that time I emphasized the fact that it would be expected of all ranks that they would observe the day in an orderly manner and that they were to remember that while such declaration would signify the end of the war in Europe, there still remained the Japanese War to be fought.
- At the Officers' Mess meeting on April 19th, I spoke to the officers of the anticipated victory in Europe and instructed that there would be no celebration in the mess on that day, that all officers would be required to remain on duty and to assist in supervising conditions in camp.
- Another conference of officers was held on 30th April 1945, at which meeting and at other meetings held during the interval preceeding V-E Day, the importance of maintaining discipline, observing law and order and protecting public property was emphasized. Their responsibility in this connection was emphasized and impressed on the officers and they were warned to stand by in the event of any emergency arising. During the week prior to V-E day, all officers, W.O.'s and senior N.C.O.'s were required to remain in barracks in anticipation of an early victory announcement.
- I arranged with the 2 i/c, the Messing Officer, and the Accounts Officer, that there would be a free issue of beer to all other ranks on the morning of the declaration of V-E Day, but it so happened that on the 7th May our stock of beer was about completely exhausted and we were unable to make the free issue as planned.
- Q. What orders and arrangements were made by you on the 7th May 1945 relating to V-E Day?
- A. In accordance with previous instructions all personnel of the depot gathered in the Drill Hall at approximately 1100 hours on May 7th, 1945, following the radio announcement that Germany had collapsed. I called for three cheers for the victory, after which the band led in a sing-song of popular numbers. I then impressed upon all present the necessity for maintaining law and order and appealed to them to celebrate the victory in a fitting manner. After this the Depot Padre conducted a short service of thanksgiving, during which a two minute period of silence was observed for those who had made the supreme sacrifice. The National Anthem was played and all returned quietly to their duties.
- I gave instructions for strengthening of guards and picquets in the camp area and had an officer detailed at each of the three entrances in addition to the regular guard.
- I made arrangements for a parade of all overseas personnel at the Garrison Grounds in connection with the Mass Thanksgiving Services to be held there on May 8th, 1945. I announced at this service that the afternoon would not be a holiday and normal work was carried on until 1630 hours.
- Q. What orders or arrangements were issued by you on the 8th May 1945?

4

A. I ordered a gathering of All Ranks in the drill hall to witness the forming up of the overseas veterans for their parade to the Garrison Grounds. When the parade was formed up I requested that all personnel on parade or otherwise return to the barracks as soon as possible after the thanksgiving ceremonies.

Arrangements were made for an evening of special entertainment, including motion pictures in the drill hall.

Although the great majority of Depot personnel returned to barracks during the afternoon in accordance with my request, instructions were issued in the early evening authorizing all depot vehicles to patrol the City streets to pick up any stray personnel. 237 all ranks were checked in by 0400 hrs. 9th May 1945, only 13 of whom were found to have any goods improperly in their possession and I have already listed these to the Court.

On telephoned instructions from D.H.Q., I rallied 18 Officers and 58 W.O.'s and Senior N.C.O.'s for emergency duties. Under command of Major Baxter the party was despatched to the D.A.P.M. for orders. One party of 3 Officers and 37 N.C.O.'s was detailed to Oland's Brewery; another of 3 Officers and 20 N.C.O.'s was detailed to the Bonded Warehouse at Pier 27; 12 Officers patrolled the streets in pairs. All of these personnel remained on duty early morning, 9th May 1945.

In addition to the regular sentries at the three entrances, I instructed that an Officer and a Senior N.C.O. be detailed also, from 1400 hrs. on 8th May, with instructions that they permit all soldiers to return to camp and enter, but that no one be permitted to leave camp; without a pass signed personally by myself or my 2 i/c. Later I instructed that all personnel entering the camp from 1800 hours on be listed, searched and any loot found on them to be seized and checked.

Q. What orders were issued by you on May 9th other than routine duties?

A. At 1600 hours I had a parade of all personnel and after returning to duty those required for essential service, I divided the remainder into 15 platoons. 39 Officers and 459 Other Ranks were so detailed. Nominal rolls of each platoon were prepared. I ordered these platoons to stand by from the hour of the parade until further notice and to be prepared to give any assistance required by the D.A.P.M.

Thursday, May 10th, at 1830 hours a special guard of Depot personnel detailed from the platoons formed on the previous day of 5 Officers and 103 other ranks at the request of the D.A.P.M. proceeded to the Bonded Warehouse in trucks supplied by the Provost. Their duty was to assist the Provost and R.C.M.P.'s on guard, to guard the liquor stored there. At 0100 hours, 11th May this party returned to the depot with the exception of 1 officer and 20 other ranks who were left to assist the Provost. The latter returned at 0700 hours.

Friday 11th May, at 1845 hours, 5 officers and 104 other ranks proceeded to the Bonded Warehouse to assist the provost and the R.C.M.P. They returned at 0300 hours 12th May 1945.

Saturday 12th May, at 1845 hours, 5 officers and 92 other ranks proceeded to the Bonded Warehouse and returned at 0200 hours, 13th May 1945.

Sunday 13th May, at 1845 hours, 1 Officer and 22 other ranks proceeded to the Bonded Warehouse.



- Q. Describe all personal movements on the 7th, 8th May?
- A. After the Thanksgiving Service at the Garrison Grounds I proceeded to the North Commons where I addressed the No. 6 District Depot Detachment, advising them of the reported disturbances in town and appealing to them not to participate and for them to return to the depot in the trucks provided. I stressed that as they were all veterans of long experience they should do all in their power to keep other soldiers out of trouble. They embussed in the trucks and returned to camp.
- In company with Lieut-Col. Bell and Capt. Harrington I proceeded from D.H.Q. in a jeep along North Park and Agricola Streets and passed Oland's Brewery, where rumour stated there was trouble. At that time I noticed a strong Naval patrol on duty and there was no disturbance. We then proceeded along Göttingen Street down to and along Harrington Street, up Duke Street to Brunswick Street, where I saw a large gathering of people on Citadel Hill, composed mainly of Naval personnel. I saw evidence of a number of cartons which I presumed contained liquor or beer. These were in possession of a mixed group of people, sitting around in groups. I saw this as I passed quickly in the jeep. This crowd appeared to be in a jovial condition. I returned to D.H.Q. and from there to District Depot.
- Q. How do you know they were in a jovial mood?
- A. Well they were not more than 30 or 40 feet from us and they were holding up bottles and waving at us, bidding us the time of day.
- Q. Did you notice any soldiers among them?
- A. Strangely enough I didn't see a soldier there. The people next to the street were Naval personnel.
- Q. Did you see any disturbance that day?
- A. No I didn't anything that I might class as a disturbance, this was about 1530 hours.
- Q. Have you had any complaints that any of your men have been arrested by the City Police?
- A. No.
- Q. In acting in connection with charges arising from the V-E Day celebration what was your guiding policy?
- A. I think perhaps on account of the day itself I suppose I was inclined to be a little more lenient than I would be today for instance, I understood that anyone found to be in possession of goods under the value of \$25.00 were fined \$10.00 in the Magistrate's Court and I roughly guided myself by this example.

---

(F.I. ANDREW) Colonel,  
O.C. No. 6 District Depot, C. A.



-65-

TENTH  
WITNESS:

Lt.-Col. E.P. Flowers, A/Commander,  
Halifax Fortress, having been duly sworn states:

- Q. What are your functions and duties in H.D. No.6?
- A. I was appointed A/Commander, Halifax Fortress, on 30 Apr 45 during the absence of Col. C.S. Craig. Prior to that time, I was O.C., 1st (Hfx.) Coast Regt. R.C.A., a Unit under Halifax Fortress Command.
- Q. What was the strength of the Halifax Fortress and Units under that Command on 7th-8th May?
- A. Approximately 2700 in all, of whom 130 are officers. This information is filed as Exhibit "V".
- Q. What personal knowledge have you of the disturbances and breaches of discipline in Halifax on 7th-8th May?
- A. I have no personal knowledge.
- Q. Will you give us the details of all breaches of discipline of personnel advised or reported to you with regard to disturbances on 7th-8th May?
- A. To my knowledge, there were only 8 soldiers involved in breaches of discipline. The complete details concerning these soldiers is filed as Exhibit "WW".
- Q. What instructions and orders were received by you from higher authority relating to V-E Day?
- A. All we received were the orders for the V-E Day parade and Thanksgiving Service, and copies of which are filed as "Exhibit S". These were the only written instructions.
- Q. Were there any verbal instructions and agreements with regard to V-E Day?
- A. There was the agreement that canteens could be left open at the discretion of the Officer Commanding the Units. This agreement was made at a meeting at H. Q., M.D. 6 at 1000 hrs on 13 Apr 45, presided over by Lt.-Col. Fielding, DAAG 1. No confirmation was received as far as I know.
- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you prior to midnight 6th-7th May?
- A. There were no written orders. As O.C., 1st Halifax (6at) Regt. R.C.A., instructions were issued by me that canteens could be kept open during the day.
- Q. What previous arrangements had been made with you by Col. Craig, Fortress Commander?
- A. Col. Craig ordered that the troops should be kept in the Fortress as much as possible and sports arranged, and Thanksgiving Services where possible.
- Q. What orders were issued by you on the 7th May relating to V-E Day?

-66-

- A. No written orders on the 7th May regarding V-E Day. Everything carried on in the routine way until about 1000 hrs on 7th May, we went on Sunday schedule.
- Q. Why did you go on Sunday schedule at that time?
- A. I took for granted that V-E Day was ascertained. Received verbal instructions around 1130 hrs. from District Headquarters, M.D. 6, that a Thanksgiving Service would be held at 1400 hrs. 7th May. Later, Col. Duncanson, Col. 1/c Admin. M.D. 6, called about 1200 hrs cancelling the order. We advised the three Units that were taking part in it.
- Q. What instructions had you received prior to V-E Day as to when V-E Day would become official?
- A. I do not remember any.
- Q. When did you consider V-E Day would start or upon what type of signal would they start?
- A. No signals were received.
- Q. Did you understand that at any time the troops would have a "special handling", after Mr. Illsley or other government officials had spoken over the radio?
- A. No, I didn't hear anything about that.
- Q. What did you mean when you stated that after the announcement on the radio of Victory, the troops were placed on Sunday routine?
- A. The Administrative Staff was reduced. Gun drill and training stopped. Recreation was carried on.
- Q. Were any men allowed out on pass?
- A. There were no passes issued during the 7th-8th May. The Administrative staff did not go out on pass but used the recreational facilities available. With the operational duties performed at the Fortress, it is impossible at any time to let more than 10% out on pass. This includes those on furlough.
- Q. When did you first become aware that 8th May was officially V-E Day?
- A. I never had any official notice about it.
- Q. Did you receive a teletype message issued by H.Q. M.D. 6 at 1445 hrs on the 7th May 45, which is filed as Exhibit "B"?
- A. I do not remember seeing it.
- Q. When did you first become aware of disturbances of down town Halifax on evening 7th-8th May?
- A. I never heard anything about the disturbances on the evening 7th-8th May.

-67-

- Q. What orders and arrangements were made by you on 8th May 45, other than routine and other than arrangements for Thanksgiving Service?
- A. None. At approximately 1800 hrs, all officers were called to assist in getting troops off the street. This was handled by Capt. Butts, Staff Captain, who had received word of the riot down town. He called me at my home and advised me. He told me that he had received word from District Headquarters to get all troops off the streets, and he ordered all officers to assist. I remained at my home. Capt. Butts was Duty Officer that night.
- Q. How far is your residence from Fortress Headquarters?
- A. About a mile. It would take me about 5 minutes in a car.
- Capt. Butts also received instructions from H.Q. M.D. 6 that all available officers and Other Ranks report to the DAPM, and action was taken accordingly. Approximately 185 Other Ranks and 25 Officers reported to the DAPM at 1730 hrs on 8th May. These were used by the Provost for Guards at Olands Brewery; the Cold Storage Plant; Halifax Liquor Commission at the corner of Buckingham and Hollis Streets, Halifax. Troops were increased the next night up to 350 in number until 12th May. An armed guard of 25 Other Ranks and one Officer were placed on Melville Island on the 9th-12th May.
- Q. Were any of your personnel confined to barracks on 8th-9th May?
- A. A message was received from District Headquarters at 2345 hrs. A 0004 hrs, 9th May, a message was sent by Fortress Headquarters to all Units under its Command that no leave would be granted stop All troops to be confined to barracks until further notice. Copy of this message received from District Headquarters is filed as Exhibit "XX".
- Q. What do you know personally concerning disturbances in Halifax on 8th May?
- A. The only thing I saw was at about 1530 hrs on 8th May as I was proceeding from the Garrison Grounds to H.Q. Halifax Fortress a few Navy personnel and civilians carrying what I took to be beer. They were not carrying anything else. I did not see anyone with merchandise. I did not see any Army personnel drinking them or any other time.
- Q. What orders and arrangements did you make on 9th May to guard against recurrences of disturbances of the 8th May?
- A. Nothing. All troops were confined to barracks.
- Q. Were there any special orders or instructions received or issued by your H. Q. relative to the Army discipline for the V-E period?
- A. No Sir.
- Q. Were there any special orders or instructions issued by your H.Q. relative to protection of

-68-

motor transport or fire protection for the V-E period ?

- A. At Fortress Headquarters, I took the precaution to see that all transport was put under cover the night 7th-8th May. The engines of all vehicles, except one, were demobilized by taking out distributors.
- Q. Have you any reports from your Unit Commanders relative to the events on 7 and 8 May, 1945?
- A. Yes. I produce same. Copy of these reports are filed as Exhibit "XXI".
- Q. What were the numbers of your personnel out of barracks not on duty in Halifax and Dartmouth on 7 and 8 May?
- A. I have a list of these details. It is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "WW1".

-69-

ELEVENTH  
WITNESS

Capt. R.J. BUTTS, RCA, Staff Capt. "A",  
Halifax Fortress, Halifax, N.S., being  
duly sworn, states:

WITNESS

- Q. How long have you been Staff Captain "A" of the  
Halifax Fortress?
- A. I was appointed on 15 Sep 44.
- Q. Would you briefly describe your duties?
- A. Administrative duties of the Fortress Headquarters  
as involving the various units within the Fortress  
Area.
- Q. What do you know about the events leading up to and  
including V-E Day?
- A. I was in Halifax until 1930 hours, 3 May 45, when  
I left for Sydney Mines on leave. I returned to  
Halifax at approximately 1100 hours, 8 May 45.
- Q. What instructions did you receive from higher authority  
with regard to the preparation for V-E Day prior to  
your leaving Halifax on 3 May 45.
- A. I received no instructions.
- Q. Were any plans made that you/<sup>know</sup>of for the Halifax Fort-  
ress personnel?
- A. H.Q., M.D. No. 6 had asked us for the approximate  
numbers we could supply for the Thanksgiving Service  
to be held on V-E Day?
- Q. When did they ask you that?
- A. I am not sure. It may have been the 2nd or 3rd May 45.
- Q. Were there any other preparations or arrangements made  
with regard to personnel under Halifax Fortress other  
than with regard to the Thanksgiving Service on 8 May  
45.
- A. The only question, to my knowledge, that was raised was  
raised was the question of operation of canteens on  
that day, and it was agreed at a Conference at M.D. 6  
on about 20 Apr 45 that canteens within the Fortress  
units would be opened on V-E Day at the discretion of  
the various unit commanders. They would determine  
the hours that the canteens would be open and the  
quantities that would be dispensed with.
- Q. Were there any other preparations or arrangements that  
you are aware of?
- A. Not that I am aware of.

-70-

Q. What did you do after your arrival in Halifax at 1100 hours, 8 May 45?

A. I reported directly to my office at H.Q., Halifax Fortress and found that instructions had been issued by H.Q., M.D. No. 6, that the Fortress would work on the same basis as on a Sunday. I remained at Fortress H.Q. during the day, with the exception of the time of the Thanksgiving Service on Citadel Hill, which I attended. I returned to Fortress H.Q. at about 1530 hours.

Q. When did you first hear of any disturbances downtown?

A. At approximately 1630 hours, a Mrs. W.G. Evans, who was accompanied by Capt. G.F. Harris, H.Q., M.D. No. 6 and a Major, whose name I do not know, came to the office and reported that very severe rioting was going on downtown. They had heard that the Mayor had read the Riot Act and asked if we were going to do anything about it.

Q. What did you do?

A. I phoned H.Q., M.D. No. 6, and spoke to Capt. Chapman, one of the G 3 Operations Officers and asked him if he knew of any instructions. He told me that there was a meeting being held. Almost immediately afterwards, Major Wylde, D.A.A.G. 2, of H.Q., M.D. 6, phoned and instructed me to call all the Fortress Officer and to have them go out and get all Army personnel off the streets and to get them to return to their barracks.

Q. What did you do then?

A. I phoned the Officers Commanding of the Coast Regiment, 21 AA Regt. and the Regt. de St. Hyacinthe and passed the instructions on to them. I also notified all our Fortress H.Q. officers. The Acting Fortress Commander was not in the Office at the time, as he was attending a Thanksgiving Service. Within approximately an hour some of the Officers--- Capt. G.R. Morrison, O.C., Fort. Det., No. 6 ES&W Coy.; Major F.J. Erwin, O.C., 146 LAA Bty., RCA, 21 AA Regt.; and Capt. C.S. Smith, Adjutant, 21 AA Regt., RCA--reported back to the office and said that they had taken about 500 men off the streets and that the men came quite willingly. I am not certain whether these 500 men were Fortress personnel or not. They were all personnel from various units in the Halifax Area.

About forty to fifty men of the Regt. de St. Hyacinthe came into R.A. Park, and I phoned the O.C. of that Unit and told him the men were there and asked him if he could send transportation to take them back to their unit. This was done shortly afterwards.

Q. Did you see a lot of these chaps who were brought?

A. Only those people of the Regt. de St. Hyacinthe. There was evidence of drinking among the troops of this Regiment, but there was no disorderly conduct on their part and they were amenable to discipline.

Q. Did you see any of them carrying loot?

-71-

A. I did not see any of the soldiers carrying any articles, except one soldier who appeared to have a box of chocolates in his battledress blouse. Some were carrying bottles of beer in their hands.

Q. What was done concerning those soldiers seen carrying bottles of beer?

A. The men, together with the articles they carried, were handed over to their Unit Officer, who arrived with transport almost immediately. I also saw two men of the 14 AA Bty. who were brought to R.A. Park. These men were sober and were not carrying anything. I did not see any other soldiers reporting in; and I did not see anyone brought in under arrest.

I did not go downtown in Halifax on 8 May 45. I was on duty at Fortress H.Q. all night 8 - 9 May 45 until 1830 hours 9 May 45.

At about 0800 hours an N.C.O., L/Bdr. Gadio, brought two men to the office, who had been seen by him going out through the gate of R.A. Park with a kit bag containing what appeared to him to be loot. I told him to put the two of them under arrest and to confine them to the Guard Room. I then opened this kit bag of clothing in the office in the presence of the N.C.O. and the R.S.M. The men were later released to their O.C., Major R.J. Kelly of the 14 AA Bty., R.C.A. The names and numbers and unit of these two soldiers have been furnished to Lt.-Col. Flowers, A/Fortress Commander.

The kit bag, when opened, contained:

- 4 suits of men's clothing - 2 brown and 2 blue
- 4 men's shirts - blue and brown
- 1 new man's bathrobe
- 1 new pair of braces
- 2 new pair of men's garters
- 2 new pair of ladies' shoes
- 2 packages of cigars - containing 5 cigars each
- a box containing 21 packages of Minora Razor Blades
- 1 new white handkerchief
- 2 twenty-six ounce bottles of hard liquor (unopened)
- 2 thirteen ounce bottles of hard liquor (unopened)
- 2 new black leather tobacco pouches.

I still have this kit bag and contents in my office. I provided the A/Adjutant, Lt. H.A. MacDonald with an inventory of these articles. I have kept these articles in a box under lock. I have been advised that these two soldiers have been remanded for Court Martial, and I am holding the goods in safe keeping pending call by the Court Martial.

On 9 May 45, Capt. Meyer reported to me that certain articles of clothing had been picked up on Sackville St., outside of R.A. Park, and he handed these to me. A list of these articles appears in a copy of a letter written by me for the Fortress Commander to the Chief of Police,

-72-

Halifax, dated 9 May 45. Slips on certain articles indicated the stores from which they apparently came. (Copy of this letter is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "TT")

On 10 May 45, certain other articles were left in my office by one of our NCO's after a kit inspection in the barracks. I don't remember who this N.C.O. was. A list of these articles appears in a letter of 15 May 45, from me on behalf of the Acting Fortress Commander, Halifax Fortress to the Chief of Police, Halifax. Some of these articles bore tags which indicated that they apparently came from certain stores mentioned on the said list. (Copy of this letter is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "UU")

The articles mentioned in Exhibits "TT" and "UU" were handed over to the Police Department of the city of Halifax on the dates of these letters, and receipt was acknowledged thereon.

- Q. What do you know concerning the finding of these articles?
- A. One of our N.C.O.'s brought them to my office and said that they had been found in the barracks.
- Q. Will you make an inquiry and furnish the Court with information as to when the kit inspection referred to was held, by whom, what articles were found in possession of soldiers, names of such soldiers and action taken with the result thereof? Will you also advise the Court where other articles on the list, which were not found on such kit inspection, were obtained, and by whom, in whose possession they were found, and what action was taken, also the result thereof?
- A. I will prepare a report on this matter and file it as Exhibit "VV".
- Q. What other disturbances did you see during the 8 May 45?
- A. The only other instances I saw was the case of two or three civilians and three sailors, who were passing by our H.Q. building on Queen St., carrying what appeared to be loot. I saw one Rating wearing an oversized Navy Lieutenant's jacket. The other two sailors went by with their arms loaded with clothing and merchandise, each one wearing a civilian top coat and carrying pillows. These sailors were not carrying any beer or liquor.
- I saw one civilian carrying a very nice table lamp in one hand and a large carton in the other. That is the only one I recall.
- Q. Apart from the instances to which you have referred, did you see any service personnel carrying what appeared to be cases of beer or hard liquor, or bottles of the during 8 May 45?
- A. I saw three Naval Ratings with bottles of hard liquor which they had opened and which they were drinking from on top of Citadel Hill during the Thanksgiving Service. Following the service, as I was coming down off the Hill, quite a large number of Navy personnel (approx. 100) came up onto



-73-

Q

the Hill from the direction of downtown. They were carrying cases or cartons, which I think were beer cartons, and I saw one who had a bottle of what appeared to be a 26 ounce bottle of Gin.

I saw three other Naval Ratings outside our Office on Queen St., who had beer and liquor and were drinking it there. At this time I did not see any Army personnel or Civilians carrying cases or cartons or drinking.

There were three civilian girls with these Naval Ratings and one in particular was drinking from what I think was a 26 ounce bottle of Gin.

Q. What did you do when you were on Citadel Hill and saw the crowd of Naval personnel carrying cartons and cases of beer and bottles of liquor, some of whom were drinking from the bottles of same?

A. I took no action; I was on my way back to H.Q.

There was one city policeman standing there at the time. he was just standing there doing nothing and taking notice. I did not hear him say anything to these sailors.

Q. Were there any special orders of instructions received or issued by your H.Q. relative to the enforcement of Army discipline for the V-E Day parade?

A. No, sir, not that I know of.

-74-

TWELETH  
WITNESS:

Lieut.-Col. H.D. Rice, District Signals  
Officer, M. D. No.6, having been duly sworn states:

- Q. How long have you been District Signals Officer, M.D. No.6?
- A. Since January, 1945.
- Q. What was your total strength as of 7th May 1945?
- A. The total strength of my Unit was 19 officers and 387 O.R.'s, of those, 12 officers and 202 O.R.'s were on the strength of my Unit H.Q. and 2 sections located in the city of Halifax.
- Q. What was the approximate number of all ranks out of barracks, not on duty, in Halifax and Dartmouth on the 7th-8th May 1945?
- A. None on the morning 7th May; afternoon none. After 1800 hrs, there was a total of 11 CWAC I could not account for, but I do not know whether or not they were in CWAC barracks. They are covering vacancies on the Establishment of my Unit. Of the 202 O.R.'s of my strength in Halifax, 43 are CWAC. On the morning of the 8th May - nil. In the afternoon - nil. In the evening - nil. Except for CWAC personnel.
- Q. What personal knowledge have you of any personnel under your command involved in disturbances on the 7th-8th May?
- A. I have no knowledge of any of my personnel.
- Q. Have you received any advice or reports of any of your personnel having been involved in disturbances on 7th-8th May?
- A. It was reported to me by one of my Section Commanders that one man was placed under arrest for having a part of a quart of Army-Navy rum in barracks. He could not prove to me that the bottle of rum he had in his possession was legally obtained. This man's name is L.604095 Sgmn. Scheller, H. I awarded this man 28 days detention.
- Q. What instructions or orders did you receive from higher authority relating to V-E Day?
- A. Prior to V-E Day, the only instructions I received was by way of an announcement from the Col. 1/c Admin. H.Q. M.D.6, that it was decided at the DOC's Conference on 30 Apr., that a Warning Order concerning V-E Day was to be issued, which I believe was to go to all Unit Commanders. I have not yet received any such Order. On the 7th May, I received a circular from the Jewish Chaplain with regard to Services on V-E Day. About 1930 hrs, 7th May 45, I received a teletype from the Dr. of Sigs. that my personnel could be reduced for the balance of the day and that 8th May would be a holiday. In the late mail on the 7th or morning of the 8th, I received a teletype message from Commanding Six, which has already been filed as exhibit "B". At 1445 hrs on the 9th May, a circular from Commanding Six was received that

-75-

no leave was to be granted troops and all troops were to be on duty until further notice.

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you prior to midnight 6th-7th May relating to V-E Day?

A. On 2nd May when I had received the Warning Order, which had been mentioned at the DOC's Conference on 30 Apr 45, I called a meeting of my officers and laid out verbally a procedure to be followed if an when V-E Day should be announced. I stressed the point that all male personnel were to be kept employed and that special guards were to be placed at our locations. Following that conference, I issued to 4 of my Sections on 4th May this letter as a guide as to action to be taken. This letter is produced, examined by the Court and filed as exhibit "FFF". On 5th May, I issued a Operational Instruction to H.Q. No.1 Section in relation to V-E Day. This is examined by the Court and filed as exhibit "FFF1".

Q. What orders and instructions did you issue in order to insure the maintenance of discipline on V-E Day?

A. The instructions which I have just read insured that all male personnel would be employed and as all officers were on duty all day, both 7th and 8th May, it was not necessary for me to issue any special orders.

Q. What orders and arrangements were made by you on 7th May 1945 relating to V-E Day?

A. On 7th May, I issued a verbal order at about 1030 hrs, after I had heard the announcement of V-E Day, that the instruction filed as exhibit "FFF1" was to be put into effect immediately and was ~~not~~ to be relaxed until my further orders. I had no other orders to issue except technical orders concerning public address systems.

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on 8th May, other than routine.

A. No special orders. Any order of the 7th May was still in effect.

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on 9th May and thereafter, other than routine?

A. On the morning 9th May, I cancelled the instructions filed as exhibit "FFF 1" and issued an instruction that all personnel were to be C.B.'d. I ordered the Sports Officer to arrange a series of volley ball on that day.

Q. What were your personal movements with regard to the disturbances on 7th and 8th May 1945 and what did you see?

-76-

A. On 7th May I was in my office at District H.Q. for the entire day, even through the noon hour. I did not leave. I went home for supper. In the evening, accompanied by my wife, I went to the top of Citadel Hill where a number of officers and their wives, among whom were the D.O.C., his wife and daughter, Maj.-Gen. Gagnon, were present in my wireless transmitting station. It was probably the best position to view the fireworks. At the end of the fireworks display, all officers proceeded to my home on foot. We saw no disturbances that evening or heard anything about them.

Q. What did you do on the 8th May?

A. I was at my office from 0900 hrs until 1050 hrs. I went to church with my wife and went home. I went back to my office at approximately 1415 hrs. I then went to the Garrison Grounds to see that the public address systems were in order; visited the Signals office to make sure that all my personnel were on duty. Then I went to my office and stayed there until after His Majesty had finished his broadcast at about 1620 hrs.

At about 1645 hrs, in company with my wife, I walked down Sackville St. to Barrington St. and was terribly shocked by what I saw. I walked along Barrington St. to see, if by any chance, I could see any of my personnel. I saw none. On the grounds by St. Pauls Church where I stood for a few minutes, I saw a group of soldiers mingling with sailors. There were two cases of beer in the process of being consumed there. I spoke to two or three of the men and suggested to them they would be much better off if they got out of the crowd, although they were not taking any part in causing any damage. The reaction was very negative. They were all under the influence of liquor.

The composition of the crowd that I saw on the street at that time was very predominantly Navy. Then I would say that civilians made up the next largest per centage. Apart from this one group of about 12 soldiers, there was a very small sprinkling of soldiers. The crowd were breaking windows and entering buildings and were looting. I saw the boards pulled down off Eatons, and I saw one sailor throw, which appeared to be a beer bottle, through the largest plate window. He was all alone. The boards which I mention were pulled off by a group of Naval personnel.

Q. Did you see any soldiers engaged in breaking windows and looting the stores?

A. No, I did not. I saw a sailor, I think, break into a store called Connelly's. The window in the front of the store was kicked in and he stepped into the store through this window and came out with a box of gig-saw puzzles in each hand and scattered them over the heads of the crowd and said "Come on boys". A group of civilians and sailors then went in and looted the store and passed out books, etc. My wife and I left as soon as we saw what was happening there. On the way back home, we saw a mixed crowd of civilians,

-77-

Naval personnel, and I believe there were a few Air Force, no Army, breaking into a men's clothing store on the West side of Barrington St., between Prince and Sackville Sts. at about 1715 hrs. I followed the crowd on Barrington St. to Spring Garden Road but there was a very small sprinkling of Army personnel among the crowd, and at no time did I see any Army personnel break any windows or carry any loot. I did see some with beer bottles. I returned to my home with my wife. I intended to go back to my office at District H.Q., but on hearing the announcement of the curfew, I telephoned the Orderly Room of the Signals Office at District H.Q. and the Signals Office at Fortres Headquarters, and I was assured that all my personnel were accounted for. I issued orders over the telephone that all personnel were to remain on their duties. Very shortly after that, I received a call from my Orderly Officer stating that we would be requested to furnish as many men as possible to assist the Provost Corps. We recalled some of the men from their other duties and sent a S/Sgt. and 17 men under Lieut. Allan to H.Q. of the Provost Corps. Lieut. Allan then returned and continued with his duties in the Signals Office.

- 78 -

**WITNESS:**

Lieut-Colonel D.G. Ketcheson,  
District Ordnance Officer, M.D. 6, Halifax, N.S.  
having been duly sworn, states:

- Q. How long have you occupied this appointment?
- A. Since 23 October 1943.
- Q. What strength did you have under your command 7 May 45?
- A. I had 38 officers, 1040 other ranks. In Halifax, 30 officers, 530 other ranks of whom 95 are CWAC. These figures would be duplicated by the figures submitted by the O.C. CWAC units.
- Q. How many of your personnel out of barracks not on duty did you have 7th and 8th May?
- A. On 7th May in morning, none; in the afternoon 375; in the evening after 1800 hrs, 375.
- On 8th May in morning, 375; in the afternoon 295; in the evening after 1800 hrs, 345, but by 2030 hrs there were only 13 out which I couldn't account for.
- Q. What personal knowledge have you regarding disturbances in which army personnel under your command were involved 7th and 8th May?
- A. I have no personal knowledge?
- Q. Can you tell us what personnel under your command were involved in disturbances 7th and 8th May as reported or advised to you?
- A. On the night of 7th May one of my Security Guard NCOs, Sgt Wells, was proceeding by jeep to one of our buildings near Pier 9 when he was set upon by about 50 sailors who mistook him, I think, for a member of the Provost Corps. They tore off his rank badges and stripes and also tore the top of the jeep, and left him to proceed on his way. This happened between 2330 hrs 7 May and 0100 hrs on the 8th May, and was reported to me at about 0830 hrs on the 8th.
- Q. What did you do concerning this incident?
- A. Since there was no worthwhile damage done, I took no action.
- Q. What did the damage to the jeep amount to?
- A. They tore the top of the jeep, which didn't amount to much.
- Q. Have you had any other reports concerning your personnel?
- A. I have had no report of any other incidents where my personnel were involved on the 7th or 8th May.

- 79 -

Q. Have you had reported to you any incidents concerning disturbances in which other army personnel were involved during these days?

A. Yes. It was reported that on the evening of 8 May there were a few personnel of the Ordnance Depot who were involved at the Agricola St. liquor store, but I don't know whether these men were under my command or not.

One Sgt wearing Ordnance badges was reported. I have no definite details on this. I investigated but could not get any details. This was reported to me by Major A.N. Harris, O.C. No. 6 Company, RCENE, but he could not give me any definite details. These are the only incidents which have been reported to me.

We searched the men's quarters, my men's quarters, on May 8th and twice on 9th May. We found a quantity of beer and liquor in the quarters. These were confiscated and locked up and subsequently were returned to Mr. Mahone, Nova Scotia Liquor Commissioner and a receipt obtained for them. This liquor was not found in the possession of any particular soldier but was found in the quarters and in the lumber yard beside the barracks. Instructions in New Wellington Barracks are that no liquor is allowed in the barracks. None of the liquor found was retained, all of it was returned. We got in touch with Mr Mahon who said to turn it in to him. This included 255 bottles, of which 100 bottles were spirits and the balance beer.

I am told that other people and soldiers tossed bottles in the lumber yard to get rid of them.

Q. Have you any knowledge of the Army retaining any of this liquor and paying for it?

A. No.

Q. What instructions did you received from higher authority prior to V.E. Day?

A. An order dated 7 May, which is already produced as Exhibit "B", which I received verbally at approximately 1130-1200 hrs 7th May.

Q. What orders did you issue and arrangements did you make relating to V.E. Day prior to 7th May?

A. First of all I published on the 5th May a Part I Order I had previously made concerning arrangements, (this was examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "GGG") that on the announcement of the cessation of hostilities all personnel would be paraded in the Ordnance compound where a short church service would be held. That was done.

- 80 -

Orders had further been made to have all Security Guards report for duty immediately the announcement of victory had been made. All Security Guards on Ordnance buildings and areas were doubled. A special platoon of 2 NCOs and 23 ORs was set up to reinforce the Depot Security Guards. This platoon was directly under the command of the Orderly Officer.

Two Orderly Officers were ordered to be on duty at all times during 7 and 8th May.

All unit vehicles were ordered transferred from the unit garage vehicle park in New Wellington Barracks compound to the main Ordnance compound. No unit vehicle was to be used unless approved by the Orderly Officer.

After the announcement of victory had been made and personnel dismissed for the day, except those detailed for duty, one bottle of beer per man was issued at supper time at New Wellington Barracks.

A detachment of 75 men from under my command had already been detailed to attend the V.E. Day service on V.E. Day.

Q. What orders and arrangements were made by you on 7th-8th May other than those already mentioned by you?

A. On the 7th May at approx 1100 hrs I was informed by the switchboard operator that victory had been declared. I contacted District H.Q. and was informed that it was official by Col Duncanson at approx 1100-1130 hrs.

I immediately paraded all personnel to the Depot and proceeded with the religious service that I had arranged previously. After the religious service, I spoke to the parade, informing them that they would be dismissed for the balance of the day as well as the next day warning them that there must be no relaxation of discipline, and then dismissed them for the day.

Q. Did you take any other precaution to maintain discipline on 7th and 8th May?

A. None, other than doubling the Security Guards and those mentioned previously.

Q. When did you first hear that there had been disturbances in downtown Halifax on the evening of 7th May?

A. At 0830 hrs on the morning of the 8th May. Personnel of the Depot had informed me.

One Orderly Officer with the Orderly NCO immediately proceeded to New Wellington Barracks where certain other rank personnel were quartered to make sure that there were no disorders. He found everything in order.



- 81 -

At 1300 hrs the 75 personnel of the Depot, under one Captain and one Lieutenant, were paraded to take part in the Thanksgiving Service.

Q. What other precautions did you take that day to ensure the maintenance of discipline?

A. At 1630 hrs after having been advised that disturbances were taking place in the city and after receiving instructions from District H.Q. that all personnel were to be confined to Barracks at about 1600 hrs, I summoned all officers of the unit that were available and despatched them in pairs to the business section of the city with instructions that all soldiers, especially those of their own unit, were to be ordered back to barracks immediately.

By 2030 hrs that evening all but 13 other ranks under my command normally quartered in New Wellington Barracks had been accounted for in the barracks.

Patrols were maintained until approximately 2300 hrs that evening in the business section of the city and no further Ordnance personnel or soldiers were observed.

At approximately 2030 hrs a detail of 30 men in battle order unarmed was dispatched on the instructions of District H.Q. to Cathedral Barracks, CWAC, under the command of Lt. M. Talbot accompanied by Lt. Bay, to report to Major Grant, Staff Officer CWAC, to assist in guarding Cathedral Barracks. No unusual occurrence took place.

Q. What orders did you issue on the 9th and subsequently other than routine?

A. On 9th May, special instructions were issued to parade all personnel to and from work. Special passes were given to those on subsistence. I issued special Part I Order, which is included in Exhibit "GGG", which confined my personnel to barracks.

An additional Security Guard and a detail of 2 NCOs and 22 ORs were held on call all of 9 and 10 May. In addition, a platoon of 75 men were held ready at New Wellington Barracks, in battle order but unarmed, in case of any further disturbances during the night 9-10 May.

An additional piquet of 10 men was supplied the Barrack Master of New Wellington Barracks, to assist in guarding the barrack area during the night 9-10 May.

Q. What did you see personally of the disturbances downtown 7-8th May?

A. I saw none 7th May.  
On 8th May, while leaving the Nova Scotian Hotel at about 1430 hrs, I saw a considerable number of sailors and civilians on Hollis Street in front of the Hotel, but no soldiers or airmen were seen. They were proceeding south on Hollis Street with cases of beer under their arms, some sitting down in the park in

- 82 -

front of the Hotel consuming it. I then went to District H.Q. along with Colonel Ross, DOSTS, of NDHQ to see the D.O.C. and reported to him what I had seen.

I left District H.Q. at approximately 1530 hrs and returned to the Ordnance Depot where at 1600 hrs I received instructions that all men were confined to barracks, and took the necessary steps to see that it was being done.

I remained there until approximately 2230 hrs when I made a tour of the business sections of Halifax. The Hollis St, Granville St and Barrington St areas were littered with broken glass. There were few people on the streets, aside from Army Provost and Navy Shore patrol men at that hour, and these few were being rounded up by the Shore Patrol.

I only saw one soldier and his wife, who were trying to get to Dartmouth and were afraid to proceed to the Ferry. I took them there in my jeep. I saw no disturbances whatsoever.

I inspected the Ordnance huts at New Wellington Barracks where everything was found in order and under control. I remained on duty until about 2359 hrs. 8 May.

WITNESS

Lt. Col. F.C. Andreas, O.C. Embarkation Transit Unit, Halifax, N.S., being duly sworn, states:

- Q. How long have you held this position?
- A. Since August, 1940.
- Q. How many all ranks did you have under your command 7 May?
- A. Sixty-five Officers, including 25 Nursing Sisters, and 133 other ranks, all in Halifax.
- Q. What is the approximate number of all ranks out of barracks not on duty in Halifax or Dartmouth, on 7th and 8th May?
- A. On 7 May, in the morning, 10 Officers and 10 other ranks. In the afternoon, 18 officers and 35 other ranks. In the evening, 65 officers and 83 other ranks.
- Q. On the 8th May, in the morning?
- A. Nil.
- Q. In the afternoon?
- A. 57 officers and 98 other ranks.
- Q. In the evening, after 1800 hours?
- A. Sixty-five officers and 133 other ranks. I might explain that all our Officers, including Nursing Sisters, are out on subsistence. Our other ranks, or rather 103 of them, are quartered in Alexander Barracks, and the rest are out on subsistence. Many of my officers are on Ship duty, and when not on ship duty they have no other duty, unless there is a troop movement, and there were none on those two days.
- I would say that all my other ranks were back in barracks by 2000 hours on the 8th. I don't know about those who are out on subsistence.
- Q. What personal knowledge have you of any personnel under your command being engaged in disturbances of the peace in Halifax on 7 and 8 May?
- A. None.
- Q. What incidents have been reported or advised to you concerning personnel under your command being involved in disturbances on 7 and 8 May?
- A. None.
- Q. Have any reports been made to you concerning Army personnel not under your command being involved in disturbances?
- A. No. I might add that after the curfew, when the men were back in barracks, a search of the barracks was made and

- 84 -

some liquor was confiscated, but no liquor was found in the possession of one particular person. There were four quarts of rye whiskey, one pint of rum and one quart of beer confiscated. This was placed in the vault in the Paymaster's Office and later it was returned to the Liquor Commission and receipt obtained.

Q. What instructions did you receive from higher authority prior to V-E Day, relating to V-E Day?

A. No instructions at all. We were asked by Dist H.Q. if we could have any men on parade for V-E Day, but because of the uncertainty of the date of V-E Day, we could not, as we might have had a troop movement at that date.

Q. What do you know personally concerning the disturbances on 7 and 8 May, 1945?

A. Nothing, except that on the 8th of May my brother came to the City to see a Specialist and I was with him from 1530 hours until 1630 hours. Previously to 1430 hours I was in front of the Nova Scotian Hotel and there were no disturbances. We left the Nova Scotian Hotel at approximately 1530 hours and I noticed a large number of people carrying cartons of beer on Hollis Street. This crowd was composed of many civilians, some navy, some airforce, but no Army that I recall.

From there we proceeded up North Street to Robie in a car, and I was with my brother at the Doctor's Office for about 1 hour. We arrived back at the Nova Scotian at approximately 1630 hours and I noticed a lot of civilians, some navy, a few Army, some airforce, some CWACs and WRCNS personnel, apparently having quite a picnic in the park across from the Nova Scotian Hotel. They were drinking from bottles of beer, but I saw no drunkenness to speak of.

I saw nothing else of the disturbances until approximately 1900 hours. I was listening to the radio in a private home and information came over the radio that all personnel was to return to barracks. I immediately called my Orderly Officer and had him call all Officer personnel by telephone to return to duty. Other officers and I proceeded to our Headquarters in the Embarkation Area. There were no disturbances in that area.

We were called by the Orderly Sgt from Alexander Bks, which is where my men are quartered, and told that some of the lads were getting pretty noisy. So we proceeded to Alexander Barracks and the boys were told to remain in barracks and to be quiet. I placed an Officer and three N.C.O.'s on duty for the rest of the night; the Officer in charge and one N.C.O. on each floor of the building. I saw no other disturbances that evening.

I saw no actual breaking of windows or looting that day. I did see a number of merchant seamen proceeding to their

- 85 -

ships at about 2000 hours, carrying clothing, boots and shoes.

All my personnel were confined to barracks for the next three days with one officer and three N.C.O.'s on duty from 1800 hours until 0700 hours the next morning.

- Q. As a result of V-E Day disturbances, were there any soldiers under your command, against whom you proceeded to take disciplinary action?
- A. No, sir. I might say that I had a kit inspection on the morning of May 9th and no clothing or articles of loot were found, at all.

(F. C. ANDREAS) Lt. Col.,  
O.C., Embarkation Transit Unit.

**FIFTEENTH  
WITNESS:**

[REDACTED] District Auxiliary Officer, M.D. 6, Halifax, N.S., having been duly sworn, states:

- Q. How long have you occupied this appointment?
- A. Since September 1939.
- Q. What instructions or orders did you receive from higher authority relating to V.E. Day, prior to V.E. Day?
- A. The only order I got was District Part I Order of 7th May, which has already been filed as Exhibit "ZZ", which I received at 0830 hrs on 8 May.
- Q. What entertainment did you plan for V.E. Day?
- A. No special entertainment at all, sir.
- Q. What plans did you make after receiving this District Order?
- A. Nothing special, except to let my clerk off for the day.
- Q. What did you do yourself on the 7th May?
- A. I remained on duty until lunch time 1230 hrs. Had lunch and returned at the office at 1400 hrs, leaving there at 1730 hrs.
- Q. What are your duties as District Auxiliary Officer?
- A. Supervision of the work of the national organizations, hostels and recreational centres.
- Q. Is your work the supervising of unit entertainment?
- A. No, sir.
- Q. But you do assist units in providing entertainment on request?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Was any direction or instructions given to you to endeavour to co-ordinate the entertainment in the Halifax area on V.E. Day?
- A. No, sir.
- Q. Did you do anything about it?
- A. No, sir.
- Q. What recreational facilities and centres were open and available to Army personnel on the 7th and 8th May 1945 in Halifax?
- A. The YMCA hostel on Barrington St; the K. of C. Hostel and recreational centre, Hollis St; The K. of C. on Almon St; Salvation Army on Argyle St; Salvation Army on Hollis St; Canadian Club cafeteria on Barrington St and the YMCA women's leave centre on Barrington St. All these come under Auxiliary Services.

- 87 -

There is also the United Services Forum on Windsor Street which is operated by the Navy League and is open to all Services, where dances are held in the summertime. No dances were held on the 7-8th May.

- Q. Are the hostels which you have mentioned, able to furnish entertainment?
- A. Yes, as they are combined Hostels and Recreation Centres.
- Q. Can you tell us what special facilities or entertainments were put on at these various places on the 7th and 8th May, other than their regular services?
- A. None to my knowledge, other than they had to increase their stocks of food.
- Q. They didn't have any additional form of entertainment, motion pictures, etc?
- A. Nothing additional. One place on Tuesday 8th May, put on an extra movie on the evening, which was a 4-hour program.
- Q. Why did you not as District Auxiliary Officer, plan special recreational activities for V.E. Day?
- A. I never gave it a thought, sir, for anything special.
- Q. What did you see personally of the disturbances in downtown Halifax on 7-8th May 45?
- A. I saw nothing on the 7th.  
On the 8th the only incident of the nature of a disturbance was when I saw from my office window in Bellevue Annex between 1530-1600 hrs, the parade come by from the Garrison Grounds. At the same time a group of approximately 6 sailors passed beer to Naval personnel in the parade, who tucked them in their blouses.

- 88 -

**SIXTEENTH  
WITNESS**

Major A. Norman Harris, Acting O.C. No. 6 Coy, R.C.E.M.E., M.D. 6 being duly sworn states:

Q. How long have you been O.C. No. 6 Coy, R.C.E.M.E.?

A. Col. Agnew, the D.E.M.E., M.D. 6 and O.C. 6 Coy, R.C.E.M.E. was called to Ottawa on duty 12 May 45, and I am now acting D.E.M.E. and Acting O.C. No. 6 Coy, R.C.E.M.E., during his absence.

Q. In what capacity were you acting prior to 7 May 45.

A. I am 2 i/c No. 6 Coy, R.C.E.M.E. and I am Officer Commanding Halifax Workshop.

Q. What was the total strength of all ranks under your command as of 7 May?

A. Fifteen Officers and 359 other ranks. These figures are taken from my Strength Return Parade State of that morning.

Q. What is your estimate of the approximate number of all ranks out of barracks not on duty in Halifax and Dartmouth on 7 and 8 May, 1945.

A. In the morning, nil. In the afternoon I would say about 320 not on duty. In the evening after 1800 hours about 320.

Q. On the 8th of May in the morning, how many?

A. In the morning, nil. In the afternoon approximately 150 were off work. After 1800 hours about 200.

Q. Have you any personal knowledge of any soldiers under your command being involved in disturbances on the 7 or 8 May?

A. No.

Q. Have you been advised or received any reports concerning men under your command as having been involved in disturbances of the peace on 7 or 8 May 1945?

A. None.

Q. Have you received any advice or reports concerning soldiers not under your command as having been involved in disturbances of 7, 8 May?

A. No, I have not.

Q. What instructions or orders did you receive prior to V-E Day relating to V-E day?



- 89 -

A. Prior to the first of May it was discussed at the D.O.C.'s Monday morning conference of Staff Officers which I attended in the absence of the O.C. No. 6 Coy, R.C.E.M.E., that necessary precautions should be taken for the maintenance of discipline and to provide if possible a recreation for the men in order to hold them as much as possible in barracks.

Q. Were any written orders given you?

A. No.

Q. Were any detailed verbal orders given you from higher authority?

A. No.

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you prior to midnight 6-7 May 45 relating to V-E Day?

A. I produce a copy of Orders issued by Lt. Col Agnew, O.C. No. 6 Coy, R.C.E.M.E. dated 1 May 45, addressed to the Regimental Officer of the Company, copies of which were forwarded to the following on 2 May 45:

O.C. Halifax Workshop  
O.C. Debert Detachment, R.C.E.M.E.  
O.C. Sydney Detachment, R.C.E.M.E.  
O.C. Goose Bay Detachment, R.C.E.M.E.  
O.C. No. 6 Coy, R.C.E.M.E.

This order is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "AAA".

Q. Were these the only orders issued by you prior to 7 May 45 relating to V-E Day?

A. Yes.

Q. What other precaution did you take prior to 7 May in order to ensure the maintenance of discipline on V-E Day?

A. I couldn't say that I took any. I know the men under my command, and I am satisfied that they are disciplined and understand that I wish them to behave as gentlemen at all times.

Q. Will you explain what you meant in the Warning Order of 1st May when you used the words "on the receipt of the information that V-E Day is a certain day" ?

A. It was understood by us that V-E Day would not be just announced without any warning to the Armed Forces. In other words, the O.C.'s and Staff would be given a warning that it was to be announced, in order that the necessary precautions would be taken. This was brought up at the D.O.C.'s Monday morning Conference.

Q. How much warning did you expect?

A. Twenty-four hours.

Q. Prior to 7 May what instructions did you receive from Dist H.Q. as to the method which would be adopted or determined when V-E Day became official?

A. I don't remember that I received any.

Q. When did you first hear of the announcement on the radio that hostilities had ceased?

A. The first I heard was about 1030 on 7 May, when I heard the whistles blowing. I didn't pay any attention to these whistles, as we had heard a stuck locomotive whistle a week before. Then, since I was not satisfied that it was V-E Day, I telephoned the Officers in each of my shops and gave them instructions to carry on work and keep the men busy until such time as Col. Agnew and myself were notified officially that it was V-E Day. Col. Agnew endeavoured to get in touch with Dist H.Q. but all lines were busy. Twenty minutes later a runner arrived with a verbal message from Lt. Col North stating that that day was V-E Day and that the church service that had been planned would be carried out at 1400 hours, as planned.

Q. Had you previously received any written instructions with regard to this thanksgiving service which had been planned?

A. I don't recall having seen any written information on that at all.

Q. I show you Exhibit "S", Orders for V-E Day Parade. Have you seen it before?

A. Yes, I'm sure I saw it before 7 May 1945.

Q. What did you do on receiving this verbal message from Lt. Col. North on 7 May 45?

A. I reported to Col. Agnew immediately and at that time was given instructions by him to telephone to the Officers of all the workshops and call a parade on the Square in front of the office building immediately. This was carried out at once and all ranks were formed up at approximately 1130 hours.

Col. Agnew addressed the assembled troops. In this address he stated that he heard officially that today would be V-E Day. However, just as he made this statement, I received verbal instructions from Lt. Col. Ketcheson, D.O.O. M.D. 6 that he had had a telephone call from Dist H.Q. stating that V-E Day would be celebrated on 8 May, and that the church service arranged for the combined services on Citadel Hill would be held at 1400 hours 8 May. I informed Col. Agnew of this, who in turn informed the

- 91 -

assembled troops. He then went on to state that he expected everyone to carry on in a sober manner and conduct themselves in a manner that would be a credit to the RCME. He then stated that we would have a short service of thanksgiving by the Padre.

At approximately 1200 hours the Protestant Padre arrived from RCOC where he had just had a prayer service, and he conducted a prayer service for RCME. This had been previously arranged.

After this prayer service, Col Agnew asked me if I wanted to say anything to the troops; and I just said that I felt that Col Agnew had covered the situation very well, and that I expected them to carry on in a sober manner and treat the day as a day of thanksgiving rather than a day of jubilant celebration. The troops were then dismissed for lunch.

- Q. What orders or instructions were issued to the troops as to how they would observe the rest of the 7th and the 8th?
- A. The rest of the 7th was given to them as a holiday, that is, the afternoon. The Officers were instructed to be present at 1630 hours, when the men would have their supper; be served a free bottle of beer; and be served by the Officers as at Christmas time. This was done.
- Q. Was anyone permitted to leave camp before that time?
- A. No one, except men on subsistence.
- Q. What prevailed after supper?
- A. All the men were permitted to leave barracks, but were warned that it was expected that they would carry on, as had been requested before, in a sober manner. All other ranks below the rank of Sgt were required to be back in barracks at 2200 hours, and they were all in by that time. Nearly all those out on subsistence are living with their families. No special passes were issued. Nothing of any moment occurred that night.
- Q. What orders did you issue on the 7th of May with regard to whether your men were to be allowed out of barracks on the 8th of May?
- A. At the time of our service on the 7th I gave the order that a parade would be held at 0745 hours on the 8th which would include the Pipe Band, the same as was carried out regularly every Wednesday morning.

At 0745 hours 8 May, roll call was taken and all were present or accounted for. I then marched the troops, including CWAC attached to our Unit, in the usual manner that was carried out on Wednesday morning parade from Wellington Barracks Parade Square down to the workshop, about a thousand yards. Upon arriving at the yard, Lt.

- 92 -

Thompson was instructed to have the Sgt. Major fall out the 75 men who had previously been warned for the parade to be held at 1400 hour at Citadel Hill. Also at this time an extra 16 men were asked to volunteer for extra duty to relieve the 16 men who had been placed on duty at 1200 hours May 7 as a special guard for the workshops.

When these men had been fallen out I called all the ranks, including CWAC, around me and informed that I was permitting them to have the day off, but I was asking them to carry on as they had been previously asked to do, in a sober manner, in case any trouble might start in which we would be called upon for aid in some way. Also, that I trusted them to do the best they could to keep sober and keep the name of RCME clear of any trouble. I then dismissed them and told them that they would report at 0745 hours for duty on 9th May.

- Q. What entertainments did you plan for your men on V-E Day?
- A. We had planned on having baseball games, and such-like, if it was a clear day and provided we got 24 hours warning. We had no such warning, so we did not go ahead with these plans.
- Q. What duties were carried on by your men on V-E Day other than routine?
- A. Col. Agnew and I attended the thanksgiving service on the Garrison Grounds which ended about 1500 hours. At the end of this service we saw part of the parade move off down town; this included the detachment of our men. Col. Agnew and I then returned to the workshops. We received an emergency call from Dist H.Q. at 1630 hours to have all Officers warned to stand by for duty immediately. All R.C.E.M.E. personnel were formed up on Wellington Barracks parade square at 1745 hours. There were approximately 55 men available for duty at this time. At this time two patrols of Officers from No. 6 Coy, R.C.E.M.E., were formed by Lt. Col Agnew and all RCME and ROCOC personnel were taken from the streets and returned to barracks. We had received instructions from Lt. Col North to take all our own personnel from the streets, first. All our men were sober, and, in most cases, were already proceeding back to barracks. Later, from approximately 1900 hours, no discrimination as to Units was made and all members of the Canadian Army were picked up and returned to their barracks. From 1900 hours on, the officers were reinforced by approximately 20 hand-picked men. Six of these worked with the patrolling officers and the remaining group cleared the street in front of the CWAC quarters and then patrolled this area. The patrol concentrated on the area bounded by Windsor and Gottingen Sts north of the Armouries. By approximately 2200 hours there were no Army personnel on the streets in this area.

On Wednesday morning, 9 May 45, all personnel of this Company were formed up on Wellington Barracks parade square

- 93 -

and marched to the workshop. Work proceeded normally except that a Security Guard was placed around the workshop. All personnel were confined to Barracks and those living on subsistence were issued passes permitting them to travel between their places of residence and the workshop. At the completion of the days work a heavy Security Guard was placed on the Workshop, trucks and drivers were ordered to stand by in case of emergency and the remaining personnel were marched to their quarters. A moving picture was shown later in the evening in Wellington Barracks for personnel living there.

Q. Will you tell us what you saw personally during the 7th of May 45?

A. I didn't see anything of the disturbances.

Q. Will you tell the Court what you saw personally on the 8th of May 45?

A. All during the day of 8th May, I was on duty in the Workshops in my office. That was done in order to keep as close to the telephone information as possible. At 1630 hrs, the Orderly Officer reported to me that a call had come from Lt-Col North at Dist H.Q. requesting the O.C. No. 6 Coy, RCEME, to assemble all of the officers of the Unit to proceed on a patrol of the area and withdraw from the streets all of the Unit personnel and return them to their barracks. I called Lt-Col Agnew at Wellington Barracks Officers Mess and informed him of the instructions. I was instructed to wait at the office and get as many of the officers that were around the workshops assembled and that he would assemble the officers in Wellington Barracks and return to the workshop office.

At approximately 1700 hrs, I proceeded with Capt. Brown in a jeep to patrol all the streets in this area and warn all RCEME personnel to return to barracks. On starting with this patrol, it was previously arranged by Lt-Col Agnew that we would confiscate from Army personnel, all loot and liquor in their possession. While patrolling the streets, each soldier that we came to was stopped if he was carrying anything. We stopped several soldiers carrying liquor, confiscated it and ordered them back to barracks. We did not see any soldiers carrying loot in the form of clothes or merchandise. It might be stated here that it does not return to my memory that I saw any Army personnel under the influence of liquor and in each case when we stopped Army personnel and asked them to hand over any liquor that they had, they were not antagonistic in any way about it, and freely surrendered it. All were told to return to barracks immediately so that they would be out of any trouble. They came to attention, saluted, said "Yes sir" and immediately proceeded on their way in the direction of their barracks.

After clearing this area of all personnel that we could see walking around the streets, Capt. Brown and myself proceeded down to the centre of the city on to Barrington

- 94 -

Street and along Barrington Street returning by way of Cogswell Street. On this patrol we were particularly interested in finding out if we could see any RCEME personnel in that area. It was more or less completely covered by us and on that tour we did not see any RCEME personnel with the exception of one man, a Sgt. who had been sent down prior to tell any personnel of this Unit to return to barracks at once. This man was found absolutely sober and carrying out his duties as he had been instructed.

On returning to Barracks, we decided then as personnel were pretty well cleared from the streets to change our tactics and go in a larger vehicle and take with us another Officer and six picked personnel. We patrolled this area and during this patrol we picked up one CWAC which was not under the influence of liquor. A few minutes later after picking her up, we picked up another CWAC who was very very much under the influence of liquor and had with her a soldier. The CWAC resented the fact that she was being taken into protective custody but nevertheless was placed in the truck with the rest. We then proceeded to patrol further on in the same area and picked up several soldiers, slightly under the influence of liquor. There were also a number of soldiers picked up at the same time who were not under the influence of liquor and when the truck was filled we returned, first to the CWAC Barracks at Willow Park and turned over the two CWAC girls to the R.P. and from there took the rest of the men we had and placed them in the Mens Barracks in Willow Park.

We then proceeded out again with our truck and made a complete survey of all the area of the City. During this trip we picked up about 6 or 8 other Army personnel and 1 Naval personnel whose arm had been badly injured and it was thought broken. This man was very much under the influence of liquor and resented being taken into protective custody by us. We then returned first to H.M.C.S. Peregrine and turned the sailor over to the guard on the gate. Returning then to Wellington Barracks and placed the rest of the Army personnel in Barracks. I then changed over to a jeep at approximately 2200 hours and proceeded on a patrol with Lieut. Thomsen to an area where a call had been put in from, that a large fire was burning. This was on the Dutch Village Road. Lieut. Thomsen drove as close to the proximity of the fire as was possible and I proceeded on foot across the fields to investigate the large bon fire. On arrival at the scene I found a farmer and two boys with him, all perfectly sober, burning a large bunch of rubbish in the centre of a field keeping it well in hand. Satisfying myself that this was all in order, I returned to the jeep and proceeded with Lieut. Thomsen to continue our patrol on the Dutch Village Road and observe if there was any undue noise or trouble in any way. We continued on and came into the city by way of Mumford, Chebucto and Quinpool Roads. At Quinpool Road, we were hailed by a civilian Police Sergeant and another Police Officer who asked if we would take them immediately down town into the Barrington Street section at the scene of the fire on Barrington and Sackville Street. This we did and delivered the Sergeant and Policeman right at the scene of the fire.

- 95 -

We then turned south on Barrington Street and turned up Spring Garden Road. Arriving at South Park street we turned north again and proceeded up to Windsor. Turning up Windsor, we arrived at the junction of Windsor and Quinpool Road and observed a soldier who was so much under the influence of liquor that he required the safety zone to lean over, at the same time we observed one of the trucks of the Convoy coming in from Debert which had been lost. They hailed us and asked if we could direct them to No. 6 District Depot. We asked the Officer in Charge for two men to take this man we had found, in their charge and place him aboard their truck. This was done and we proceeded then up Quinpool Road returning the truck to District Depot. Arriving at District Depot the man which we had picked up was turned over to the guard house and we then proceeded back to Wellington Barracks.

Arriving at Wellington Barracks, Lt. Col Agnew joined us. We then proceeded to patrol this area once again to see if any Army personnel were left on the streets. Arriving at the corner of Cornwallis and North Park Streets we came across a CWAC in the company of a Naval Officer and a soldier. On finding them, they asked if we could direct them to No. 6 District Depot as they were taking the CWAC home there. We loaded all three of them into the jeep and proceeded with them to the Depot. Arriving at the Depot we found that the soldier we had picked up was from the Reserve Army and tried to get us to let him go, however, all three were turned over to the guard at District Depot. We then proceeded downtown once more to continue our tour of the centre part of the City, along Barrington Street to see if there were any more Army personnel that could be picked up. On finding none we returned to Barracks.

During all the patrols that I was in charge of, we in no way interfered with any civilians carrying loot as our instructions were only to take into custody and confiscate same from Army personnel. However I might state that I did not notice any Army personnel, except one soldier, during my tour to be in possession of any loot other than liquor, which was confiscated. This soldier was found by Lt. Col. Agnew, myself and Lieut. Thomsen as we proceeded into the gates of the Men's Wellington Barracks. We immediately placed him under arrest. Lt. Col. Agnew searched him and found in his possession a number of articles including one pair electric hair clippers. Lieut Thomsen and myself searched through a small kit bag he was carrying. In this kit bag was only personal belongings a number of which had been used. Lt. Col. Agnew took this man into the guard house and ordered the guard to place him under close arrest and to list the articles of loot which were found to be in his possession. Later on when he returned, Lt. Col. Agnew found that the guards at the Men's gate of Wellington Barracks had released the prisoner he had placed under close arrest and they could not account for where the loot had disappeared and as far as could be found out was not in their possession.

- 96 -

Q. What action was taken with regard to this occurrence?

A. I don't know. Lt. Col. Agnew will be in a better position to advise the Court on that.

We returned to barracks at 0030 hours on the 9th of May.

Q. Did you receive any reports from the principal Officers working under you?

A. Yes. I produce copies of reports from Capt H. Brown, Lieut F.L. Post, Lieut. J.R. Waldron, Lieut. J.B. McLean, Lieut. A.R. Thomsen, and Lieut. Shelson. These are examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "BBB".

(A. NORMAN HARRIS) MAJOR,  
A/O.C. No. 6 Coy, R.C.E.M.E.



-97-

F.83514 S.M.(W.O.1)J.R.Ross, No. 6 Detachment, C.M.S.C. was sworn in by the President of the Court as shorthand writer at 1206 hours, 21st May 1945 and proceeded to take the testimony.

SEVENTEENTH  
WITNESS:

Lieut. J. G. MacLean, No. 6 Company, R.C.E.M.E. being duly sworn, stages:

- Q. What were your functions and duties on the 7th May 1945?
- A. I was R.C.E.M.E. Communications Officer and I was on duty at the detachment in Willow Park, Halifax on the 7th May 1945. I am the Officer in charge of the Wireless Workshop at No. 6 Company, R.C.E.M.E.
- Q. What instructions or orders were received by you from higher authority, prior to the 7th May 1945 with regard to precautions and arrangements on V-E Day?
- A. The Officers of our unit had been instructed by Col. Agnew the D.E.M.E. that V-E day was to be quietly observed and was to be observed more as a day of prayer. He was quite serious about it and he felt quite strongly that there should not be any demonstrations of an uncontrolled nature. We were also instructed to detail extra guards for our workshops when V-E day was officially declared, which was done. These were all the instructions or orders I received prior to V-E day.
- Q. What do you know of the events of the 7th May 1945?
- A. On the 7th of May the routine work of the company was carried on until approximately 1045 hours. At that time the work was interrupted by numerous whistles and horns and Col. Agnew ordered the men to be formed up on the parade square. The detachment was formed up at approximately 1100 hours and Col. Agnew addressed the parade and said that his intention was that the day should be celebrated in a quiet manner. The detachment was then paraded to the M. T. Shop, due to the heavy raid, where the Padre led the detachment in a short prayer. At 1210 the men with the exception of the special guards, previously detailed were dismissed for the remainder of the day by order of Col. Agnew. Prior to issuing orders for the parade to form up, orders were issued by Col. Agnew that all transport was grounded, with the provision that necessary transport was to be authorized by Major Harris, Officer Commanding the workshop.
- Q. What did you do the rest of the day?
- A. Lieut. Waldron and I proceeded to the North West Arm and worked on a sail-boat for the remainder of the day until supper-time. Lieut. Waldron and I had been detailed by Col. Ketcheson to go to King's Wharf and to place in position two searchlights, to be used on the night of May 7th for the fire-works, which was done. After that we returned to the mess and stayed there until about 2200 hours when we returned to the searchlights to see if they were working. We went down to King's Wharf and the searchlights were alright and stayed there until 1145 hours. On returning to our quarters, via Spring Garden Road I saw a crowd. We were using a 500 weight jeep, authorized by Col. Agnew. While proceeding along Barrington Street I noticed a large crowd of people in front of the Capitol Theatre grouped about a stopped street car. There was a policeman on the corner of Spring Garden Road and Barrington Street directing the traffic. Barrington Street was completely packed about 000422

150 feet from where the policeman was directing the traffic. As I was driving I cannot give you any information as to the composition of the crowd. The street car was stopped and as far as I could see wasn't on fire. I saw no other disturbance that night.

- Q. Was the crowd which was 150 feet from the corner of Barrington Street and Spring Garden Road an uncontrolled crowd?
- A. The only people I could see were on the fringe of the crowd and appeared to be watching, I couldn't see the others.
- Q. What can you tell us of the events of the 8th May 1945?
- A. No. 6 Company, R.C.E.M.E. was formed up at 0745 hours in the morning and we were marched to the workshop at Willow Park and an address was given by Major Harris and 75 men were detailed to participate in the Combined Services parade on the afternoon of the 8th May. Lieut. Thompson and I were detailed to take this platoon on parade. At 1300 hours Lieut. Thompson and I fell in with the 75 men and proceeded to the South Commons as instructed. After the thanksgiving service on the Garrison Grounds, which ended about 1500 hours the Officers on parade were called to the front and were instructed by the Naval Commander about disturbances in the lower part of the town. We were informed by him that a portion of our parade was to proceed downtown in an attempt to distract the rioting crowd. The parade then proceeded down South Park Street, turned left on Spring Garden Road and proceeded to Barrington Street, turned north on Barrington Street and proceeded to Brunswick Street, turned up the hill and returned to the Commons. During the whole of that parade we saw no disturbances, but I noticed quite a few sailors carrying cases and bottles of beer, while we were proceeding North on Barrington Street. I didn't see any soldiers or civilians carrying any cases or articles. The parade was then turned over to the Unit Commanders on the Commons and we paraded our men back to New Wellington Barracks and broke the men off at approximately 1600 hours. On dismissing the parade I returned to my quarters. I had supper and went up to my room whereupon I was informed by Lieut. Waldron of Lieut-Col. Agnew's order for his Officers to join him. Waldron and myself went immediately to the Men's Quarters and participated in a search for stolen property. I arrived with Lieut. Waldron at approximately 1815 hours and they were just completing the search of the quarters. Col. Agnew had confiscated some liquor and it was taken to the unit orderly room and the next day an inventory was made. I don't know what became of it. Further details of the finding and disposition of this property can be given by Col. Agnew. On the completion of this search, Col. Agnew divided the Officers into two patrols. One under the command of Major Harris and the other under the command of himself. I accompanied Col. Agnew in a 1600 weight and we proceeded to the scene of a break at the Agricola Street Liquor Store. Arriving there at approximately 1845 hours. From the appearance of the store and the immediate vicinity the break had taken place sometime previous. There were many broken bottles on the street and a large crowd of civilians milling around on the street. There seemed to be a commotion in the small Men's Wear Store next to the Agricola Street Liquor Store. The windows of the Agricola Liquor Store were broken. There was no one at that time going in or coming out of it and I therefore assumed it to be empty.

-99-

Our truck was driven by Lieut. Thompson and in the front with him was Col. Agnew. In the back were myself, Lieut. Waldron and Lieut. Post. We parked the truck on Agricola Street about 200 feet north of the Agricola Liquor Store. Col. Agnew got out of the truck and accompanied by Lieut. Thompson proceeded to the small dry-goods store next to the Liquor Store. I got down from the back of the truck and took up a position by the front of the truck. I stood at the front of the truck because two civilians were throwing bottles at it and they stopped. Col. Agnew and Lieut. Thompson proceeded into the clothing store and succeeded in persuading those in the store to leave it. I was in a good position to observe the crowd milling about, which was eighty per cent civilian and the remainder were sailors and soldiers. There were more soldiers than sailors but I didn't see anybody carrying any articles and the majority of the soldiers were passing along the street returning to barracks or their homes. Some of them were even with their families. We ordered six of these soldiers in the back of the truck, which they did after some argument from two of them. The two in question belonged to the Reserve Army. Then we proceeded south on Agricola Street to Cunard Street and then west to Robie Street and then north to New Wellington Barracks in the company of the C.O. Col. Agnew then instructed me to remain at New Wellington Barracks and he went on a further patrol with the Officers already mentioned. Until 2030 hours I was at the Officers Mess. I had the public address system at the window and it was pointed towards the Men's Quarters and we were playing records and when the Mayor's proclamation was made on the radio we relayed it over the public address system so that the men at New Wellington Barracks would know what was going on. At approximately 2030 hours there was a request from the C.W.A.C. at Cathedral Barracks for a guard to be formed for their protection. Major Smith formed a guard of 29 men under Lieut. Talbot, which proceeded to Cathedral Barracks. Lieut. J. Tod of the R.C.E. and I went to Cathedral Barracks with this detail and we remained there until approximately 2115 hours. There was nothing unusual to report except the following: A man wearing the uniform, rank and insignia of a Naval Lieut. including the O.B.E., apparently under the influence of liquor was trying to force an entrance to the C.W.A.C. compound through the guard house. He was stopped by Lieut. Tod. On returning to the guard house from the mess, where I had been checking with the C.W.A.C. Officer who was in charge I found Lieut. Tod in an argument with this same Naval Lieutenant. Lieut. Ramsay of the Provost Corps then entered the guard house and told Lieut. Tod and I he would look after the Naval Officer. Lieut. Tod and I then returned to New Wellington Barracks to check with Lieut. Waldron who had been detailed by Lieut-Col. Agnew to form a guard for the C.W.A.C. at New Wellington Barracks. On arrival we found that Lieut. Waldron's guard had not been utilized, but that the guard had been provided. We reported to Lieut. M. Downs, C.W.A.C. and found all in order. At approximately 2200 hours Capt. Brown and Lieut. Pose came to the C.W.A.C. compound and to the Officer's Mess and informed Lieut. Tod and I that Major Harris was looking for us at the Officers Quarters. We returned to the Officers Quarters and Major Harris and Lieut. Thompson departed from the mess. I stayed in my quarters until 2200 hours at which time I was called upon to go down to the Men's Quarters for a further search for stolen goods. This search was completed and no stolen property was located in the R.C.E.M.E. Quarters. Lieut. Waldron and I

4

-100-

were then asked to obtain six of our men and detail them as a reserve force for the then over-burdened New Wellington Barracks Security Police. We then patrolled the barracks fence to watch against the entry of liquor or other loot and no entry was observed. At approximately mid-night Lieut-Col. Ballie, who was at the main gate, told Lieut. Waldron and I we might return to our quarters and we did this.

Q. Did you see any service personnel or civilians pass or throw bottles over the fence to C.W.A.C. personnel in the C.W.A.C. area?

A. No I didn't sir.

Q. Apart from the Naval Lieutenant, did you see anyone else trying to force an entrance into the C.W.A.C. Barracks?

A. No I didn't.

Q. Did you have any company parades during the 7th, 8th and 9th of May 1945?

A. There was one on the 7th at 1045 hours, on the 8th at 0745 hours and on the 9th at 0800 hours and at all these parades all personnel were present or accounted for.

Q. What happened on the 9th of May apart from the parade?

A. An extra security guard was placed around the workshop. Special passes were issued to living out personnel and on the night of May 9th a complete L.A.D. was warned for duty and stayed on all night in case of emergency. A motion picture was shown for the men at New Wellington Barracks.

---

(J.G.MacLean) Lieut.

-101-

EIGHTEENTH  
WITNESS

Major H. S. Dunn, O.C. No. 6 E.S. & W. Coy, R.C.E.,  
being duly sworn, states:

- Q. How long have you occupied that appointment?
- A. Since January, 1942.
- Q. What was the total strength under your command 7 May?
- A. Twelve Officers, 11 of whom are in Halifax and 1 in Dartmouth; 442 other ranks - 362 in Halifax, 73 in Dartmouth and 7 in Bedford.
- Q. What is your estimate of the approximate number of all ranks out of barracks not on duty, in Halifax and Dartmouth on 7 May 1945?
- A. In the morning, nil; in the afternoon, 9 Officers and 300 other ranks; in the evening 12 Officers and 350 other ranks.
- Q. On 8 May 1945?
- A. In the morning of 8 May, 10 Officers and 350 other ranks and in the afternoon and evening, the same numbers were out of barracks, not on duty.
- Q. I notice that all your Officers were off duty in the evening of 7 May. Is that your usual practice?
- A. That is our usual practice. Our Fortress Detachment has a Night Duty Officer, and he acts for both.
- Q. Have you any personal knowledge of any soldiers under your command being involved in disturbances on the 7 or 8 May?
- A. No.
- Q. Have you any personal knowledge of any men not under your command being involved in disturbances?
- A. No.
- Q. Have you been advised or received any reports concerning men under your command as having been involved in the disturbances of the peace on 7 or 8 May, 1945?
- A. On 9th May it was reported to me at 0830 hours that D.640409 Spr. Leduc, Q, had been picked up the previous evening by Lt. Col. Agnew at Wellington Barracks with supposed loot in a truck belonging to our Fortress Detachment, of which he was the regular driver. Leduc was arrested and loot taken from him by Lt. Col. Agnew for safe-keeping. The truck and Spr. Leduc were released the following morning. Spr Leduc was brought up before his Detachment Commander, charged under Section 40 AA, remanded and released from close arrest, subject to re-arrest. A Summary of Evidence is now being taken.

-102-

On May 14th it was reported to me at 1000 hours that #E.621859 Cpl. Paulin, A. had been arrested by Provost, on 8th May, turned over to the City Police, confined in the City Jail, charged by the Civil Courts, pleaded guilty and after 2 days' delay, was fined \$100.00 and costs. S/M Landry, our R.S.M., was notified on 9th May that Cpl. Paulin was absent and he checked all hospitals and Provost but could not locate him. Paulin showed up the afternoon of 11th May and reported to the S/M.

Q. Have you received any advice or reports concerning soldiers not under your command as having been involved in disturbances of 7 or 8 May?

A. No.

Q. What instructions or orders did you receive prior to V-E Day, relating to V-E Day?

A. Instructions were received from Dist H.Q. by telephone about the 3rd or 4th May to report the number of personnel available for parade when V-E Day arrived. The number given was 50.

Q. What orders and arrangements were made by you prior to midnight May 6-7, relating to V-E Day?

A. None.

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on May 7th relating to V-E Day.

A. No written instructions were given by me except to pass on those as issued by District H.Q. under date of 7th May, copy of which has been filed as Exhibit "B". When I received the District instructions, I contacted my Chief Clerk and R.S.M. and arranged for skeleton crews to carry on the 7th and 8th, the same as on Sundays.

Q. What precautions did you take to ensure the maintenance of discipline on the 7th and 8th?

A. None.

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by on May 8th other than routine?

A. None.

Q. What time on the 7th did the skeleton crew program paralleling Sunday start?

A. About 1100 hours.

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on May 9th and thereafter, other than routine?

A. Passes were issued to personnel on duty between the hours of 0830 and 1800. All personnel were confined to barracks.

-103-

On the morning of May 9th all personnel reported for duty as usual. Passes were issued to personnel on duty between the hours of 0830 and 1800.

Q. Did you issue day passes?

A. No, only to allow the men to get back and forth for duty, so they wouldn't get picked up by the Provost.

Q. Did you have any entertainments planned for the 7th or 8th?

A. No. The reason is that my command includes scattered Units quartered in three different places in Halifax, and it was not considered feasible to plan such entertainments.

Q. Will you tell us what you did and saw personally of any disturbances on 7th or 8th May, 1945?

A. I was on duty all day of the 7th until 1630 hours, when I went home, got my wife and drove around town. I saw no disturbances. I had supper at Wellington Barracks and about 2000 hours went down to Headquarters Mess and about 2330 hours to District Depot, arriving back home about 0100 hours 8th May. I saw no disturbances.

I went to work as usual at 0830 hours on 8th May and stayed in the office until time to go to church at 1030 hours, when I went home and got my wife. We were back home about 1245 hours. About 1630 hours my wife and I went out in the car and stopped for about 10 minutes on Argyle St by St. Paul's Cathedral. I walked down towards Barrington St, but after seeing the milling around on Barrington St, I drove away and parked near Headquarters Mess. I saw a lot of civilians, navy personnel, an odd airman and maybe two or three soldiers. I didn't see any looting, but when I saw windows being broken by navy personnel I went away.

I stood on Spring Garden Road at the entrance to H.Q. Mess for about half an hour and then went home and did not come out again. As I stood on Spring Garden Road at the entrance to H.Q. Mess I saw navy personnel and Wrens, and civilians, I don't remember seeing a soldier, airman, or Cwac, milling around in Grafton Park. They were drinking from bottles and carrying on. I saw nothing of a riotous or immoral nature. As I was with my wife I went home immediately.

Q. I notice you stated that on the evening of 8th May after 1800 hours there were ten officers and 350 other ranks under your command out of barracks and not on duty. Did you not receive orders to have all personnel confined to barracks on that evening?

A. I did not get these orders personally. I only heard on the radio at about 1800 hours of these instructions. I



-104-

was home and did nothing as I assumed this would be taken care of by those who were out on patrol.

Q. Did you get information, subsequently, that the personnel out of barracks on 8th May were back in barracks as ordered either at, or shortly after, the curfew?

A. No.

(H. S. DUNN) Major,  
O.C. No. 6 E.S. & W.Coy, R.C.E.



-105-

NINETEENTH  
WITNESS:

Major A.D. Grayston, Officer Commanding  
No.6 Vocational Training School, Halifax, N.S., having  
been duly sworn states:

- Q. How long have you been Officer Commanding, No.6  
V.T.S. ?
- A. Since 11 Jan 44.
- Q. What was your overall strength as of 7th May 1945?
- A. My overall strength was 5 Officers and 194 O.R.'s,  
including 44 attached. My overall strength in  
Halifax was 4 officers and 101 O.R.'s, which  
includes 44 attached.
- Q. What were the number of your personnel out of  
barracks, not on duty, in Halifax and Dartmouth,  
N.S. on 7th and 8th May 45 ?
- A. On the 7th May 45:
- In the morning - none  
In the afternoon - 57  
In the evening - 58
- On the 8th May 45:
- In the morning - 57  
In the afternoon - 57  
In the evening - 52
- I might add, that by 0100 hrs. 9th May, all  
personnel were in barracks except 3 O.R.'s. One  
came back the next day. None of the three were  
involved in disturbances.
- Q. What personal knowledge have you of any of your  
personnel having been involved in disturbances  
on the 7th-8th May?
- A. None whatever. On the 9th May, a search was made  
in the barracks and vicinity which produced 30  
bottles of beer and spirits. They were not found  
in possession of any particular person. These  
were packed and turned over to the Provost. I  
have a receipt for same.
- Q. What instances have been advised or reported to  
you concerning personnel under your command being  
involved in disturbances on the 7th-8th May?
- A. None whatever, Sir.
- Q. On the 8th May, did you see anything that went on  
down town?
- A. I saw one window being broken.
- Q. Will you describe the disturbances you saw down  
town on the 8th May?
- A. On the 7th May, I did not see anything. On the  
8th at approximately 1500 hrs, I proceeded down town

-106-

on foot for a period of about 45 minutes. I saw one window broken. It was on Granville St. The place was Maders Restaurant. This was done by a Naval Rating. The instrument used was a bottle. This street was crowded and consisted mainly, in order of numbers, civilians, Navy, Army and Air Force, with a small percentage of of Army and Air Force. I did not see any Army personnel engaged in breaking windows. There was a general milling about, drinking from bottles on the same street, shouting and fairly riotous. There was a little breaking going on at that time. There was no traffic moving. It was reaching the mob stage.

As soon as I saw the windows being broken, I considered it was no place for an Army Officer and so I went back to barracks. It was no place for me, or any individual to use force or argument.

During the rest of the day, I saw no actual instances of breaking or looting. About 1600 hrs, I returned to the Mess and stayed there for the rest of the evening. I saw no later disturbances.

Q. Did you take any part in rounding up troops?

A. Not personally.

-107-

TWENTIETH  
WITNESS:

Capt. M. C. Cawsey, Officer Commanding, 106 Depot Company, C.W.A.C. and No. 17 Admin. Unit., C.W.A.C. being duly sworn, states:

- Q. How long have you been Officer Commanding, 106 Depot Company, C.W.A.C. and No. 17 Admin. Unit., C.W.A.C?
- A. No. 106 Depot Company since the 5th May 1945 and O. C. No. 17 Admin. Unit since it was inaugurated the 1st of March 1944.
- Q. What was the total strength under your command as of May 7th, 1945?
- A. 24 Officers and 602 Other Ranks. Of these there was 1 Officer and 50 Other Ranks in Dartmouth and 5 Officers and 115 Other Ranks outside Halifax and in 106 Depot Coy., 1 Officer and 4 Other Ranks outside Halifax.
- Q. How many all ranks did you have in Halifax on the 7th May 1945?
- A. 433.
- Q. How many Officers in Halifax?
- A. 17.
- Q. What is your estimate of the approximate number of all ranks out of barracks not on duty in Halifax and Dartmouth on the 7th May 1945?
- A. On the 7th May 1945 in the morning it was nil.
- Q. In the afternoon?
- A. In the afternoon of May 7th approximately 12 Officers and 200 Other ranks were out of camp. In the evening after 1800 hours 9 Officers and 425 Other Ranks.
- Q. And on the 8th May 1945?
- A. Not on duty in the morning--4 Officers and approximately 50 personnel and in the afternoon 15 Officers and all or almost all personnel, about 400.
- Q. In the evening?
- A. In the evening 3 Officers and 100 Other Ranks all of who except 8 were in by 2000 hours.
- Q. Have you any personal knowledge of the disturbances of the 7th, 8th May 1945?
- A. No I was hardly out at all myself.
- Q. What breaches of discipline of personnel under your command involving events of the 7th and 8th May 1945 have been advised or reported to you?
- A. Two were reported by the City Police and the others were reported to me by my own Officers. I produce a report prepared by me showing these details.

Report submitted by the witness is examined by the Court filed as Exhibit "CCC" and attached to the proceedings.

- Q. What instructions or orders were received by you from higher authority relating to V-E Day?

000432

-108e

- A. The only instructions or orders I received prior to V-E Day were to detail 50 personnel and one Officer to attend a parade. The rest of the personnel proceeding independently. This was received prior to the 5th May by me, verbally by telephone from Headquarters M.D.G.
- Q. Prior to the 7th May did you receive any instructions indicating how V-E Day was to be made official, on what facts it was to be based?
- A. The holiday would not start until official word came through from N.D.H.Q.
- Q. Who told you that?
- A. Major Grant.
- Q. When?
- A. May 5th, 1945.
- Q. What orders did you issue and arrangements did you make with regard to V/E Day before midnight of the 6th, 7th May.
- A. With our Padre we arranged a church parade immediately it became official, which church parade was held. A dance was planned at A-23 Training Centre to which the bulk of our personnel were invited and 6 Officers and over a 100 personnel attended. We also had an open evening in our recreation hall, under the direction of the Orderly Officer and a 1.30 pass was to be granted for the night of the celebration.
- Q. When did you first hear that hostilities had ceased?
- A. Over the radio about 10.30 on the 7th but it was very unofficial.
- Q. What did you do on hearing it?
- A. I contacted the Ordnance and was informed that a church parade as planned would be held at 1130 hours and the complete company was hustled out to the parade which was just around the corner. Then the day went on as planned and that is all the organizing we done about it.
- Q. What arrangements did you make with regard to any holiday after hearing the announcement on the radio or did you make any announcement?
- A. I make no announcement as it was still not official, as it had not come through our headquarters. No one was absent from duties at this time and the blackboard in the guard house carried the news--Nothing was official as yet and duties would go on as usual until further notice and to watch the blackboard.
- The C.W.A.C. personnel attached to Ordnance reported that they did not have to return to duty and a parade was called at 1345 hours before personnel proceeded out, taking the form of a talk on behaviour during the cessation of hostilities by the O.C. I told them they had been granted passes by other units, that the following day was V-E Day and that the dance at A-23 would be that night and that I expected them to behave as ladies and members of the C.W.A.C. while celebrating. Approximately 30 were detailed to visit the hospitals and names were taken of people who wished to attend the dance.

000433

-109-

- Q. Did you receive any official communication from Headquarters that afternoon?
- A. Yes sir it was official but I don't remember what time it was.
- Q. Verbal or written?
- A. The D.O.C. had lunch with us on the 7th and while he was having lunch he was on call from Headquarters and he received a call from there and said "Well I guess this is it." and later on in the afternoon somebody phoned me but I couldn't tell you who.
- Q. I show you Exhibit "B"--Teletype at 1445 hours on the 7th May 1945, did you receive a copy of that?
- A. Yes sir, but I don't know when I received it.
- Q. Did you make any other special arrangements on the 7th with regard to V-E Day other than those mentioned?
- A. No sir.
- Q. What arrangements did you make with regard to the 8th May 1945?
- A. Final arrangements for the parade and later in the day I completed arrangements for the C.B.
- Q. When were you instructed with regard to the C.B?
- A. I would say at approximately 1800 hours by phone from D.H.Q. I laid on the C. B. and then from Major Wilde through Major Grant I detailed my Officers to go out and pick up C.W.A.C. personnel.
- Q. What was the result of that?
- A. It was very successful and by 2000 hours all personnel were present in barracks with the exception of 5 whose names appear on Exhibit "CCC". All the sergeants patrolled the fence in case of trouble, they didn't run into any trouble, but we began to get apprehensive when the rioters were as near as Agricola and Almon Streets and I requested D.H.Q. for male help, which was furnished almost immediately in the form of 6 Officers and 40 men who remained on guard until 0230 hours on the 9th. They had no trouble.
- Q. Were there any other events the rest of that evening?
- A. No sir the rest of the evening passed without incident.
- Q. Have you received any complaints from any of your personnel as to any undue behaviour made towards them by anyone during the 7th, 8th May?
- A. None of my Other Ranks. One of my Officers ran into a bit of trouble with a drunken sailor downtown while collecting C.W.A.C. personnel. This sailor hit her on the hip with a bottle, she is quite small but she kicked him on the shins and he ran away crying--she kicked me! She kicked me!

-110-

- Q. Were any of the personnel under your command arrested by the City Police?
- A. No sir, two were almost but they were turned over to me.
- Q. Did you have any report of any of your girls breaking any windows downtown?
- A. No sir.
- Q. What is your system of passes, do all other ranks of the units under your command have a pass?
- A. Not until 2300 hours, they must have a pass after that.

(M. C. Cawsey) Capt.

-111-

TWENTY-FIRST  
WITNESS:

Capt. E. McGregor, Officer Commanding  
No. 10 Admin. Unit, GWAC, having been duly sworn  
states:

Q. How long have you been commanding this Unit?

A. Since 22nd April 1945.

Q. What was the strength of your command as of 7th May?

A. 6 officers and 85 Other Ranks on strength; 5 officers  
and 337 Other Ranks attached.

Q. What is your estimate of approximate number of all  
ranks under your command out of barracks not on  
duty, in Halifax and Dartmouth at following times:

(a) On May 7th 45

(i) Morning  
(ii) Afternoon  
(iii) Evening after 1800 hours

(b) On May 8th 45

(i) Morning  
(ii) Afternoon  
(iii) Evening after 1800 hours

A. (a) (i) 10  
(ii) 110  
(iii) 200

(b) (i) 65  
(ii) 180  
(iii) 100

Q. What was the time, place and nature of all disturbances  
involving Army personnel under your command to  
the best of your knowledge?

A. None

Q. Time, place and nature of all disturbances involving  
personnel under your command advised or reported  
to you?

A. Only one girl. W.60638 - L/Cpl. Swinamer, R.E.  
Her picture appeared in the Halifax Daily Star  
dated 9th May 45. This was investigated and referred  
to higher authority. Articles collected from her  
at camp were 2 small flags and a box containing  
three cigars. Summary of evidence taken reveals  
that a charge should not be laid.

Q. What instructions or orders were received by you  
from higher authority relating to V-E Day, giving  
dates and times received?

A. A printed program of service to be held at the  
Garrison Grounds was received 4 May 45. Parade  
Order was received 5 May 45. This was a circular  
letter filed as exhibit "S".

At 1200 hrs 7 May 45 a verbal message was received  
from District H.Q. Confirmation was received 9th  
May 45. This is filed as exhibit "B".

Message O.782. This message was received verbally

-112-

between 2330 and 2359 hrs 8th May. Confirmation was received 9th May. This is filed as exhibit "CCC".

Message A.9149. This message was received verbally 11 May 45 late in the morning regarding lifting of C.B. Confirmation was received 12th May.

Message A.9125. This message was received verbally 11 May in the morning regarding lifting restriction on leave. Confirmation was received the afternoon 11th May. This is filed as exhibit "DDD".

Message A.9650. This message was received 15 May regarding holding of personnel involved. This is filed as exhibit "EEE".

- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you prior to midnight 6th-7th May relating to V-E Day?
- A. There was to be a short service in Camp on the morning of V-E Day. Personnel so detailed would parade to the Garrison Grounds. All other personnel were to proceed to the Garrison Grounds independently. There would be a dance at A.23 T.C. the night of V-E Day. All officers and Sgts. were to remain on duty the night of V-E Day - some to proceed to A.23 T.C. and remainder in Camp.
- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on 7th May 45 relating to V-E Day?
- A. At noon, verbal orders were received that a parade would be held on the Garrison Grounds on the 8th May. There would be a muster parade of all personnel in camp. There would be a short service in Camp at 1000 hrs 8th May. The dance at A.23 T.C. would be the night of 7th May. Arrangements were made to have one supper parade at 1700 hours. A blanket 0100 hour pass granted all personnel. All personnel in camp, approximately 100, were assembled at 1300 hrs and given the above information. This information was then placed on Notice Boards.
- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on 8th May other than routine?
- A. Final arrangements and orders issued regarding service in camp and parade to Garrison Grounds. Arrangements and orders were issued for one meal parade at noon and at night.
- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on 9th May and thereafter, other than routine?
- A. The camp was placed under C.B. Only personnel proceeding on duty were allowed to leave camp. Partial Training night program was carried on, followed by usual Wednesday night movie.
- On 10th May the camp was under C.B. Only personnel proceeding on duty were allowed to leave camp. Bingo games were carried on in camp.
- On 11th May the curfew was lifted until 2200 hours and personnel permitted to leave camp until that time. There was a movie in camp and guests were allowed.



-113-

Q. Did you see any disturbances in down town Halifax on 7th and 8th May 45. If you saw any disturbances, what did you see?

A. During the 7th-8th May 45, I was on duty at Cathedral Barracks. I saw no disturbances.

V-E Day:

On receipt of orders from District Headquarters, all officers and Sergeants, except three, proceeded out of camp to round up all CWAC personnel they could find and return them to barracks. Three Sergeants and myself then informed the R.P.'s who were on duty of the situation; mustered additional R.P.'s who were in camp and locked the gate at the entrance to the camp.

The Sergeants then made the rounds of the camp, requesting all personnel to assemble in the Recreation Room. I went to the Recreation Room, cleared it of all visitors, and when all personnel were assembled, I explained to them what had happened and that all troops were confined to barracks..

All R.P.'s, the three Sergeants who were left in camp, some Corporals and Other Ranks were then detailed to patrol the camp area, to insure that no CWAC personnel left camp and that other service personnel were kept out of camp. Just at this time, about ten Naval personnel and one Army had gathered at the fence just outside the Recreation Room. This personnel were under the influence of liquor and were handing bottles of beer and liquor through the fence to CWAC personnel. A call was sent in to the Provost and the Naval Shore Patrol to have the men removed. The Naval Shore Patrol did not respond to our call. The Provost did come, but were unable to do anything with the Naval personnel. The Naval personnel left on their own accord. The CWAC detail endeavoured to get the men to move on, but with no success. The CWAC personnel involved were eventually quietened and sent inside the Recreation Room or to their own sleeping quarters. Some window panes and one screen in the Recreation Room were smashed. The CWAC personnel involved in the above disturbances have been charged and disciplined.

The canteen in the recreation room was opened as soon as possible; a sing-song was organized and the Wurlitzer kept in operation. Outside of the normal excitement occasioned by the whole situation, no other incidents occurred. By the time the guard of 2 officers and 30 men arrived, at approximately 2045 hrs, all CWAC personnel were in the sleeping quarters and getting ready for bed.

Only 2 CWAC personnel were unaccounted for when the officers and Sergeants returned from rounding up all CWAC personnel who were on the streets. These two girls returned to camp by themselves the following night. They were charged with A.W.L. and their cases were disposed of by the Station Commander.

Q. Have any complaints been made to you by any personnel under your command with regard to unseemingly behaviour towards or acts upon personnel under your command on the 7-8th May?

A. No Sir.

-114-

Q. Did you receive any special instructions as to relaxing the enforcement of discipline during the V-E Day celebration?

A. No Sir.

Q. Will you give your opinion of the behaviour of CWAC personnel under your command during the period 7-8th May 45?

A. My opinion of them generally is that they behaved very well. Most of them came back to camp by themselves and were accounted for approximately 2000 hrs. 8th May.

-115-

TWENTY-SECOND  
WITNESS

Lt.-Col. C. W. Clarke, D.A.P.M., M.D. 6, being duly sworn, states:

Q.1. What are your functions and duties at M.D. 6?

A. I was appointed D.A.P.M., M.D. 6 on the 5th June, 1940, and still occupy that position.

Q.2. Are you a member of the Bar of Nova Scotia?

A. Yes, since the fall of 1933.

Q.3. Will you tell the Court what you know concerning the events leading up to and including V-E Day, 8 May, 1945.

A. In September 1944 a meeting was called by the City of Halifax, in the Council Chambers, City Hall, to discuss arrangements for "V" Day. Mayor J. E. Lloyd presided and those present included members of the City Council, representatives of the Navy, Army, Airforce, Nova Scotia Light and Power Company, Chief of Police, Halifax, representatives of the Clergy and other citizens. Lt. Col. F.J. North, A.A. & Q.M.G., M.D. 6, attended on behalf of the D.O.C., M.D. 6, and I was also in attendance.

Much discussion took place as to what would constitute "V" Day and the form of celebration that "V" Day would take. The consensus of opinion was that emphasis should be placed on "V" Day as one of solemn thanksgiving with the celebration of church services. It was intimated that a Committee would be set up to discuss the question of parades, bands and fireworks. The question as to whether store windows should be boarded up was raised but no particular alarm in this regard seemed to be anticipated. Police arrangements were discussed and the representatives of the Navy, Army and Airforce each stated definitely that their police groups had authority over service personnel only and had no authority to arrest civilians or to protect private property. This Meeting expressed no views that serious property damage or looting would be encountered on "V" Day.

At 1500 hours on 21 Sept 44, shortly after the general meeting, referred to above, the Chief of Police called a meeting to discuss police arrangements on "V" Day. I produce a copy of the Minutes of this Meeting, prepared by the Halifax Chief of Police. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "II".

The Chief of Police, Halifax, at this meeting expressed the opinion that he did not anticipate any particular trouble on "V" Day except for the presence of large crowds and the possible congestion of traffic. He also stated that arrests should not be made for trivial offences in case this might incite others present.

-116-

S.O.S.P., D.A.P.M. 6 and A.P.M., Eastern Air Command, each undertook to have an Officer or responsible N.C.O. report to the Chief of Police on "V" Day to act as a liaison Officer Between the Chief of Police and his own service police. Each service pointed out that they could not directly deal with civilians or protect civilian property as their job was to deal with service personnel. Inspector Peacock stated that he would have to consult O.C., "H" Division, R.C.M.P. before giving a decision as to whether the R.C.M.P. would be able to participate.

The Chairman of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission stated unofficially that he would close all liquor stores as soon as an announcement of "V" Day was received and that he would also request the heads of the three armed services to ban the sale of beer and spirits in messes and canteens on that day and possibly for several days thereafter to conform with similar arrangements as far as civilians were concerned. He also requested that services have their police in the vicinity of each store so that if news was received while the store was open that they would clear personnel of their own service from the store so that the same could be closed without delay.

On 25 Sept. 44 I despatched a letter to O.C., 37-38 Provost Coys. Halifax, giving instructions as a result of this meeting. A copy of this letter is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "JJ". The explanation of para 8 of this letter to the effect that no jeep patrol was to be out on V-E Day was that it was thought that some prankster might try to tip over this light vehicle to see the service police spilled onto the street, and it was thought advisable to use heavier vehicles on that day. We actually did use heavier vehicles - 16 cwt and 30 cwt. As a matter of fact, the general plan of arrangements made in September 1944 were put into effect on V-E Day, with some modifications.

At 1500 hours, 5 April 45, the Chief of Police called a meeting to discuss police arrangements on V-E Day. I produce copy of the Minutes of this meeting. These are examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "KK". The minutes of this meeting were actually received by me from the Chief of Police, Halifax, on 16 May, 1945.

At this meeting the Chief of Police, Halifax, did not express any particular apprehension of trouble on V-E Day and apparently felt that large crowds, noise and flag waving would predominate.

My impressions of para 1 of the minutes of this meeting are not the same as that stated. I felt that it was understood at the meeting that Naval Shore Patrol, Army Provost, and Airforce Service Police, were only to be despatched to the liquor stores if they had opened on V-E

-117-

Day and then only to see that personnel of their own services left the premises quietly and without disorder when the stores were ordered closed. In regard to para 2 of the minutes. I understood that it was agreed at the meeting by Mr. Hayes that the street-cars would continue to operate so long as crowds would permit, and even then, that they would operate on a shuttle service from the outskirts of the City to the various residential districts. In regard to para 3 of the minutes. It was my understanding that a should have a Provost Liaison Officer only report to the Police Station, and that the city police would make requests of him, and he in turn would pass the message to Headquarters, 37-38 Provost Coys, who would then take action. There was never any question of a force of service police operating under the city police Sergeant. I do not remember the question of arming the men being discussed at this meeting at all.

On 9 April 45 a circular letter was distributed giving instructions to Provost Companies and Detachments as to their actions on V-E Day. Copies of this letter were also sent to O.C. "H" Division, R.C.M.P., S.O.S.P., and A.P.M., E.A.C. Copy of this letter is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "LL".

On 9 April 45 at the D.O.C.'s Conference of Staff Officers and Heads of Departments, the D.O.C. announced that irrespective of civilian plans and V-E Day celebrations that our chaplains would hold a memorial service with the troops.

There was also some discussion at this Conference as to whether wet canteens should be open on V-E Day. The general opinion of the meeting inclined towards the opening of the canteens at various intervals during the day and with limited supplies, on a control basis.

On 13 April 45 a meeting was held of O.C. Units in the Operation Room, H.Q., M.D. 6, to discuss the operation of messes and canteens in the Halifax area on V-E Day. Lt.Col. P.S. Fielding, D.A.A.G. I, M.D. 6, presided at this meeting. Copy of his memorandum has already been filed as Exhibit "HH".

On 30 April 45 at the D.O.C.'s Conference of Staff Officers and Heads of Departments, Col. A.E. Duncanson, Col. 1/c Admin, M.D. 6, speaking on V-E Day celebrations gave a verbal warning order by announcing that there would be a joint parade on that date at 1430 hours on the Garrison grounds outside H.Q. M.D. 6, with Admiral Murray in command of the parade. As far as I know no warning order was sent out to Units outside Halifax area. The last information I sent out to Provost Personnel outside Halifax area was my letter of 9 April which has been filed as Exhibit "LL".

After the D.O.C.'s conference Col. Duncanson, Lt.Col F.J. Norrh, AA & QMG, Lt. Col. P.C. Ahern, D.E.O. and I

-118-

conferred on the instructions for the thanksgiving service to be held at 1430 hours on V-E Day. I was advised that I would be responsible for traffic arrangements for this parade and thanksgiving service. The four officers then proceeded to the Garrison Sports Grounds and looked over the area where the service was to be held and Col. Duncanson outlined general plan of accommodating services, their guests and the public. At 1400 hours 30 April 45, I took Major E.E. Bannard, A/O.C., 37-38 Provost Coys., Lt. J.T. Brown, Lt. J.N. Ramsay, and C.S.M. E.W. Wright, all of 37-38 Provost Coys., to the Garrison Sports Ground and pointed out the location of the various groups and the traffic plan for the V-E Day parade and service.

At 1500 hours, 30 April 45 a Muster Parade of all available Provosts in Halifax was held at H.Q., 37-38 Provost Coys., when Major E.E. Bannard then A/O.C., instructed Provosts on their duties insofar as V-E Day was concerned. The principal points covered by Major Bannard were as follows:

- (a) All Provosts whether on duty, pass or on leave were to report to H.Q., 37-38 Provost Coys., or to the nearest Provost Company or Detachment on the first notification of the unconditional surrender of Germany and to stand by for instructions.
- (b) All messes and canteens in Provost lines were to be immediately closed and all Provosts were requested to refrain from taking any beer or spirits whatsoever until two or three days after the announcement when a Unit party would be held and free beer would be served to all.
- (c) Provosts were instructed that they would be confined to barracks until the celebrations had concluded.
- (d) Provosts were instructed to attempt to prevent by tact and firmness rather than force and were told not to interfere with celebrators unless they became violent or attempted to damage property.
- (e) Provosts were also told that they should avoid civilian disturbances and celebrations unless army personnel or property were involved or unless specifically requested by the civilian police.
- (f) Questions were asked as to people on train patrols and they were instructed to carry on and report to the nearest Provost Company or detachment as the case may be.
- (g) CWAC Provosts asked what their duties would be on V-E Day and they were instructed that should V-E Day be proclaimed during working hours they would immediately report to Company H.Q. If it was declared late at night they were to remain in Barracks until the following morning when they would report for duty at the usual time. They would be called for if required at night.

On 4 May 45, Col. A.E. Duncanson, Col i/c Admin, M.D. 6 advised by phone that the D.O.C. wished two or three Provosts to report to H.Q., M.D. 6, and to Bellevue to watch traffic and keep an eye on the place. O.C. 37-38 Provost

-119-

was advised to carry out this request. On the afternoon of 4 May 45, Mr. Wallace representing the Dartmouth Ferry Commission, interviewed me at my office and asked that Provosts be placed on the ferries during the daytime run. He was advised that the policy on V-E Day was that all Provosts would be concentrated and operate from H.Q. 37-38 Provost Coys and that should trouble develop, he was to contact the Chief of Police, Halifax, or the Chief of Police, Dartmouth, who would be co-ordinating police work on V-E Day and if Army personnel were involved Provosts would immediately be despatched to attend to the matter. Mr. Wallace said he would go back and report to the Commission and advise if this was satisfactory.

On the morning of 5 May 45, Mr. Wallace again interviewed me regarding Provost for the Dartmouth Ferry stating that the Commission felt that some Provost should be on all ferries so that troops would know that constituted authority was present. Mr. Wallace was told that the matter would be discussed with the Chief of Police for Halifax that morning and also with the Administrative Branch at M.D. 6 and their decision phoned to him.

In the morning mail of 5 May 45 orders for V-E Day parade and Thanksgiving Service were received from Col. A.E. Duncanson, Col i/c Amin, M.D. 6, which changed slightly the arrangements already made for the Thanksgiving service.

At 1100 hours, 5 May 45, a meeting was held at the Chief of Police, J.J. Conrad's Office, City Hall, at which Lt. Cdr. R.W. Wook, S.O.S.P., Wing Cdr. McCallum, A.P.M., Eastern Air Command, and myself were present. Traffic control for the V-E Day parade and thanksgiving service was discussed and the Chief of Police undertook to co-ordinate traffic control arrangements for the parade and each service except the Airforce, who were to provide eight, was to have between 25 and 50 Provosts report to an Inspector of the City Police at the Navy Dispatching Office at 1330 hours on V-E Day. The Chief of Police also gave information as to the blocking of roads around the Garrison Grounds and the blocking of roads for the street dances to be held V-E Day night.

The question of city police, naval shore patrol, Army Provost and R.C.A.F. service police being on the ferry on V-E Day was discussed with the result that it was decided by all services not to place any of their police on the ferries that day but that if trouble developed the Chief would advise the liaison officer for the service concerned and he would send men to either side of the ferry concerned. This decision was communicated to Col. A.E. Duncanson, Col i/c Admin, by phone who agreed that this would be all right unless I heard from him to the contrary. Mr. Wallace was advised by phone of this decision.

I produce copy of letter dated 7 May 45. It is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "MM".

At about 1030 hours, 7 May 45, information was received from Provost station patrols, the newspaper and the radio that Germany had unconditionally surrendered. The following action was taken immediately:

-120-

- (a) Captain M.E. Byers was despatched to report to the Chief of Police Halifax to act as Provost Liaison Officer.
- (b) 3 Provosts were despatched to H.Q., M.D. 6.
- (c) 3 Provosts were despatched to Bellevue.
- (d) 3 Provosts were sent to Citadel Hill to police area where it was expected guns might be fired.
- (e) All Provosts in barracks were ordered to stand by in duty dress.
- (f) All Provosts outside of barracks in the vicinity were contacted and ordered to return at once to the Barracks.
- (g) 17 jeeps, 7 station wagons and vans, 3 - 15 cwt, 1 staff car and 6 motorcycles were gassed and made ready to proceed at a moments' notice.
- (h) Motorcycles were despatched to patrol various parts of the City to ascertain the condition and conduct of the soldiers and to report any trouble or unusual occurrences that might be seen.

About 1050 hours on 7 May 45, a letter was received from the Chief of Police enclosing a proclamation from the Mayor of Halifax on the V-E Day program. Copy of this letter and copy of the Mayor's proclamation are examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "NN".

Reports received indicated that stores and offices were closing rapidly and that the number of soldiers on the streets were small. About 1130 hours 7 May 45, a heavy downpour of rain made everybody scurry for cover. About 1200 hours the rain stopped and the sun shone again.

During the morning of 7 May 45, I reported to the Col i/c Admin and was advised that no thanksgiving service would be held on the Garrison Sports Ground that day.

Periodic checks were made with the Chief of Police, S.O.S.P. and A.P.M., Eastern Air Command, all of whom reported conditions were good although large crowds were on the streets. Routine Provost patrols throughout the afternoon and early evening reported conditions continued good.

Advice was received from Dist H.Q. during the afternoon of 7 May 45 that the V-E Day parade and thanksgiving service would be held on the Garrison Grounds at 1430 hrs on 8 May 45.

Broadcasting stations throughout the afternoon announced that there would be fireworks at 2100 hours 7 May 45 on George's Island and they could be seen most advantageously on the east side of Citadel Hill.

At the request of the Chief of Police for the City of Halifax at 1800 hours 7 May 45, 2 Sgts and 22 Provosts were despatched for duty in assistance to the city police for the street dances on South St. and South Part St.



-121-

At 1930 hours 7 May 45, a patrol was despatched to All Saints Cathedral where a memorial service was being held.

At 1930 hours 7 May 45, large crowds began to assemble on Citadel Hill to view the fireworks despite the fact the night was raw and damp. About 2130 hours patrols reported that a group of navy and civilians were obtaining signs and flags on Barrington St from decorations which had been erected for the 8th Victory Loan. The crowd at this time was large, noisy, but in a happy frame of mind and no actual property damage was being committed. Street cars were continuing to operate. About 2200 hours crowds from Citadel Hill began to disperse.

A phone call was received at H.Q. 38-38 Provost Coys about 2200 hours 7 May 45, stating that many drunks were on the street, that street cars were being smashed left and right and that things were generally chaotic. Inspector Judge of the City Police and the Provost Liaison Officer were at once contacted at the police station to find that this report was incorrect and that conditions were in hand although large and noisy crowds were on the streets. No assistance was requested or required by the city police at this time.

Routine patrols continued to be made and reports were received that the street dances were being conducted in an orderly fashion. At about 2345 hours 7 May 45, patrols reported that the City Police wagon was on fire on Barrington Street just south of Blower Street surrounded by thousands of onlookers most of whom were civilian or navy. A street-car which had stopped beside the city police patrol car also caught on fire and three naval shore patrol wagons trying to push through the crowd behind the street-car were held up by the crowds which literally jammed Barrington Street.

At approximately 0015 hours 8 May 45, patrols reported that a naval rating had thrown a piece of wood through the window of the Nova Scotia Light, Heat and Power Co., Ltd. Later three other naval ratings smashed down the balance of the window and handed out lamps to civilians. Three city policemen came along, recovered the lamps and lamp shades, put them back in the window and stood on guard. More stones were thrown and another window was broken but the city police maintained control of the situation and the crowds were generally quiet and orderly.

At about 0010 hours Detective Inspector Langille of the City Police phoned Provost H.Q. and asked for 40 Provost to be sent to the Agricola St. Liquor Store as all other Liquor Stores had been broken into, that this was the only one left, and that the crowd were heading that way.

At about 0015 hours a call was received from Police Inspector Kinsman of the City Police advising that crowds were breaking into the Buckingham Street Liquor Store and requesting that Provost be sent there.

At about 0025 hours, 8 May 45, patrols reported that civilians and navy were seen carrying cases and bottles of liquor along the south end of Barrington St.

-122-

An Officer and about 30 Provost were despatched at once to the Buckingham St. Liquor Store and an Officer and a patrol of about ten Provost were sent to the Agricola St Liquor Store. Neither of these calls specified that soldiers were involved. On arrival at the Agricola St. Liquor Store at about 0035 hours, it was found that Detective Inspector Langille, the Manager of the store, and about 50 Naval shore patrol were in possession of and guarding this store. There were not crowds outside and the street remained empty except for the odd passer-by. Provost remained at the Agricola Street Store until about 0300 hours on 8 May 45 when same was left in charge of R.C.M.P. This store was not broken into on the night of 7-8 May.

At about 0035 hours 8 May 45, at arrival at the Buckingham St. Liquor Store there was a crowd of about two or three hundred people consisting mostly of naval ratings and civilians and a number were already inside the building, looting. Cases of liquor were being taken out of the store and drunk on the sidewalk. No soldiers or airforce were seen at this time. The Provosts were instructed at this time to assist the City Police and Naval Shore Patrol. By about 0120 hours, 8 May 45, the City Police, Naval Shore Patrol and Provosts were able to eject all persons from the store and disperse the crowd that had gathered.

At about 0145 hours, 8 May 45, a call was received from the Police that there was trouble at the Hollis Street Liquor Store. Six Provosts were left with the City Police at Buckingham Street Liquor Store and the remainder of the party proceeded to the Hollis St. Liquor Store. On arrival at the Hollis Street Store, it was found that the store had already been broken into and some stock taken and the store was in possession of the City Police and the Naval Shore Patrol. There were about two hundred people outside the store but they did not make any further attempt to enter the store and gradually broke up and went home, at about 0150 or 0155. There were no soldiers in evidence at the Hollis St. Liquor Store.

At about 0415 hours, 8 May 45, Provosts returned to Company Headquarters leaving six to assist the City Police for the remainder of the night. At 0145 hours 8 May 45, additional Provost were sent to the Hollis Street Liquor Store and on arrival a small fire was noticed in an alleyway off Salter Street. A Provost Officer with several other Provosts put out this fire.

These Provosts heard an explosion on Granville Street which was at once investigated and several naval men were seen running north on Granville Street from the Imperial Oil Service Station. On arrival at the gas station the Provost Officer found the gas pumps had been set afire which fire he extinguished with an issue raincoat before the arrival of the city fire department. Provost return-

-123-

ing from the fire noticed that a few windows on Barrington Street had been broken but no looting had taken place.

At about 0300 hours 8 May 45 the streets were practically empty. Routine Provost Patrols were maintained all night but no trouble was reported nor were any further requests received from any source for assistance.

The total number of Provosts employed on the night 7-8 May would be approximately 125. No arrests were made by Army Provost on the night 7-8 May 45.

At 0930 hours 8 May 45 crowds began to gather from various points in the city at the Garrison Sports Grounds and Citadel Hill where two or three bands were in attendance. A large Provost patrol in charge of an officer patrolled around and in the vicinity of the Garrison Sports Grounds. Everyone was quiet and well-behaved. Indications were that the demonstration of the previous night had relieved pent-up spirits.

Between 1000 and 1100 hours on the morning of the 8th May I was talking with Col. Duncanson who expressed surprise when told that the City Police Patrol and a Street Car had been burned, and that three of the liquor stores had been broken into, some stock removed, and that a few windows had been broken, as he had been down town himself after 2300 hours and had seen no excitement whatsoever.

*at about 10.30 hrs. A.C.P.*  
During the morning of 8 May, together with Capt M.E. Byers, 2 i/c, 38 Provost Coy, I attended a meeting held at the Main Office of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission, at the request of the Chairman, Mr. A.S. Mahon. This meeting was attended also by Chief of Police Conrad, Inspector Chard of the R.C.M.P., S.O.S.P., Fl.Lt. Stubinsky and an N.C.O. representing the A.P.M., Eastern Air Command and various managers of the liquor stores. The purpose of the meeting, as explained by the Chairman, Mr. Mahon, was to discuss the best method of protecting the remaining liquor in the city of Halifax, as apparently considerable liquor was left even in the stores that had been broken into the night before. The suggestion was made that the liquor should have been moved out of the city and also that it should now be moved out of the city. Staff Officer Shore Patrol and I both offered to render assistance with trucks and men to do this. Mr Mahon felt that time would not permit, that it would have to be moved through the streets of Halifax and that no safe accommodation was available for storing the liquor. The Chief of Police for the City of Halifax admitted that it was his responsibility, but requested service police assistance from the other persons present and the following plan was adopted: 2 City Policemen, 2 R.C.M.P., 5 Naval Shore Patrol, 5 Army Provost and 5 R.C.A.F. S.P. were to be stationed in each of the following places at 2000 hours 8 May 45:

-124-

Agricola Street Liquor Store.  
Buckingham Street Liquor Store.  
Sackville Street Liquor Store.  
Hollis Street Liquor Store.  
The Bonded Liquor Warehouse at the Cold Storage Plant.

This hour was chosen as it was felt that no one would possibly think of attempting to break into any liquor store during daylight hours. A suggestion was made of 1200 or 1000 hours at night, but 8 p.m. or 2000 hours, was finally agreed upon. There had never been any request in connection with Breweries and the question of guarding these was not mentioned at this meeting.

It was suggested by Capt. M.E. Byers, that the stores should be boarded up in order to give time for Police to reach the store in case of further trouble, which Mr. Mahon stated he would do as soon as he could get carpenters on the job. All windows of all liquors stores were actually boarded up during the morning of 8th May.

At 1100 hours 8 May 45, services were held in most of the city churches and these were largely attended. Reports were received that people on the streets were quiet and well-behaved. At 1300 hours 8 May 45, 3 Provost Officers and 40 other ranks of 37-38 Provost Coys were detailed to report to the Inspector of the City Police on duty, at the Naval Despatching Station to control traffic for the parade and thanksgiving service to be held on the Garrison Sports Grounds. Six motorcyclists were also on duty together with roving patrols.

At about 1330 hours, 8 May 45, the Mayor of the City of Halifax phoned the D.A.P.M.'s Office, directly, and stated that there was a bad riot occurring in the vicinity of the City Hall, which is on Barrington, Duke and Argyle Streets. Major Lorway, O.C. 37-38 Provost Coys. took the call. He took a second call at H.Q., 37-38 Provost Coys from Mr. J.B. Hayes, Nova Scotia Light & Power who advised that a riot was taking place at Keith's Brewery.

No information or telephone calls were received from the Provost Liaison Officer at the City Hall, at the Provost Station, or from the City Police themselves. As a matter of fact at that time the City Police were so busy that the liaison officers were not advised; the pre-arranged system for securing information, and requests for assistance, had failed.

About 30 Provosts were immediately despatched from H.Q. 37-38 Provost Coys to the City Hall, and were augmented by 2 Officers and 36 other ranks at the Garrison Parade Grounds. The whole party then proceeded to the vicinity of the City Hall.

I advised Lt. Col North, AA & QMG, who was at Dist H.Q. that there was a serious riot in town and I was despatching

-125-

all Provost from the Garrison Sports Grounds to which the AA & QMG at once concurred. All Provosts at the Garrison Grounds with the exception of one Provost Officer were immediately despatched to the City Hall. This party consisted of 2 Officers and 36 Other Ranks and was combined with the party from 37-38 Provost Coy H.Q. About 1420 hours, 8 May 45, a group of about 60 Provosts assisting City Police and Naval Shore Patrol dispersed crowds on Barrington and Granville Streets at which time it was noticed that windows of Eaton's, Hudson's, Zive's and Phinney's had been broken.

Granville Street was barricaded on both ends from George to Sackville Streets and, at the request of the City Police, groups of Provost mingled with the crowd along Barrington Street attempting to prevent further damage.

A call was received from a routine roving patrol that reinforcements were required at Keith's Brewery and at approximately 1430 hours about 50 Provosts proceeded to Keith's Brewery. No signs of looting were noticed by this party on the way to the Brewery. At about 1430 hours, at the request of the City Police, one Officer and about 12 Provosts were left at the City Hall. The balance of the party proceeded to Keith's Brewery where on arrival they found that the first party of Provost despatched from Barrington Street (about 15 Provost) had ejected the crowd from the Brewery after they had obtained about 250 cases of beer. The group now at the Brewery, consisting of Shore Patrol and Provost, assisted the City Police in attempting to hold the crowd back.

From 1400 hours 8 May 45, telephone calls, too numerous to enumerate, were received from individual firms at H.Q. 37-38 Provost Coys, requesting assistance. The only answer that could be given was that all Provosts were on duty. It was impossible even to record the calls as there was only one man available to answer the telephone, all others being out on duty.

At 1425 hours, 8 May 45, advice was received by me, as I stood beside the platform on the Garrison Grounds, of serious trouble at Keith's Brewery and I at once advised Col Duncanson, who was standing on the platform of the Garrison Grounds attending the thanksgiving service, that the situation was serious at Keith's Brewery and that large crowds were rioting and about to break into the Brewery. Col. Duncanson requested that I, personally, go to the Brewery to see how serious the matter really was, stating that he would advise the D.O.C. and would stand to the left of the platform in case he, Col. Duncanson, was needed before the Service ended.

The second group of approximately 30 Provosts to arrive at Keith's Brewery at about 1425 hours, found a Provost van across the main gate and a crowd of approximately five

-126-

or six thousand people, which consisted mainly of civilians and navy, together with a small number of Army and airforce, completely surrounding the fence of the Brewery and stretching beyond the fence north and west for some considerable distance. At that time none of the crowd were inside the iron fence. I feel that my estimate of the crowd is a conservative one and much larger figures have been quoted.

One report stated that 4 Petty Officers were standing near the gates of the Brewery exhorting the people to join them in smashing the picket and to take the beer from the warehouse. A number of hoodlums were seen inciting the crowd and the presence of a large number of merchant seamen was also noted.

At 1425 hours accompanied by W/C McCallum, A.P.M. Eastern Air Command, I proceeded to Keith's Brewery and with difficulty, I pushed my way through the crowd and into the grounds where it was immediately seen that the situation was completely out of control and that it was just a matter of time before the crowds would push into the Brewery. The howling, shouting and agitation was terrific.

I then telephoned the Chief of Police, Halifax, and told him that I considered the situation completely out of hand and recommended that he report the situation to Mayor Butler of Halifax. The Chief admitted that the situation was out of control and that he was contacting the Mayor at once. Then I stated that I was returning to the Garrison Sports Grounds where the thanksgiving service was in progress and that I would report the situation to the D.O.C.

W/C McCallum and I returned to the Garrison Grounds, within five minutes, arriving at 1450 hours, and Col. Duncanson was advised that the riots were serious, that it was just a matter of time before Keith's Brewery would be broken into and that the crowds there were completely out of hand. Col. Duncanson at once advised the D.O.C. who, in turn, advised Admiral Murray. At the conclusion of the Thanksgiving Service at about 1500 hours Admiral Murray ordered all Officer on parade, of all services, to fall in in front of the stand and through one of his Staff Officers instructed them to parade their men through the streets of Halifax in the hope that the parade would break up the riots. The parade was preceded by at least two bands. During the march through the streets a large number of navy personnel left the parade.

At 1505 hours, the D.O.C. instructed me to have all soldiers who were found misbehaving themselves sent back to their Units and homes as soon as possible. I phoned through to 37-38 Provost Coys and told them to pick up anybody who was misbehaving and return him to his Unit. At about 1515 hours I suggested to the AA & QMG M.D. 6 that Units be instructed to have all their men return to their Units at once. Col. North, the AA & QMG,

-127-

definitely agreed that it was a good idea.

From 1500 hours 8 May 45 reports were received that mobs were breaking into the various liquor stores, that windows of business houses were being broken and that wholesale looting was taking place. Liquor was flowing freely and as the same was passed around, civilized human beings lost their sanity and acted like drunken savages.

At 1630 hours 8 May 45, in company with Major C.R. Lorwar, O.C. 37 Provost Company, I attended a meeting in the office of the D.O.C. M.D. 6. Copy of the minutes of this meeting have already been filed as Exhibit "E". Many reports were received during the meeting of crowds breaking into and looting shops. At about 1730 hours 8 May, before the meeting ended, the D.O.C. advised me to instruct Provosts to order all soldiers to return to their barracks or home. It may have been earlier than 1730 hours.

Lt. Col F.J. North, AA & QMG stated that all Units would be advised to confine their personnel to barracks at once and that they would also be requested to send their Officers out to assist the Provost in ordering members of the Units back to their barracks or home. Col. Duncanson advised that he would have as many officers and soldiers as possible report to me at H.Q. 37-38 Provost Coys, as soon as possible to assist the Provost and that they would work under my direct command.

At 1740 hours 8 May 45, Provost reporting back to Company H.Q. were immediately despatched in vehicles in groups of five to ten with instructions to order every soldier to return to his barracks or home at once. If he was not capable of so doing to put him in the truck and return him to 37-38 Provost Coy guardroom and to advise all soldiers that they were C.B.'d until further notice. Any soldiers from out of town were to be ordered to report to the Provost Company or No. 6 District Depot. At about 1800 hours, 8 May 45, Camp John Hall, of RCASC, sent 15-16 cwt mixed, and 30 cwt, T.C.V. to H.Q., 37-38 Provost Coy. At about 1830 hours 8 May 45, officers and soldiers began to report to H.Q. 37-38 Provost Coys, in response to Col Duncanson's appeal and they were detailed for duties under Provosts as fast as they reported.

At about 1815 hours, 8 May 45, Major C.R. Lorwar, O.C. 37 Provost Coy, with about 20 Provosts were despatched to the bonded warehouse at the cold storage plant as assistance to R.C.M.P. on duty there. Approximately 250 Officers and other ranks were despatched and reported to Major Lorwar between 1815 hours and 1900 hours. That night there were 8 R.C.M.P., 20 Provost, 250 soldiers assisting the Provosts, 20 naval shore patrol, and 5 R.C.A.F. service police at the bonded warehouse.

Between 1815 hours and 1915 hours Provost and assisting officers and soldiers to a total number of approximately 50, were stationed at the main office of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission in assistance to the city police. Provost and other officers and soldiers assisting Provost to the number of about 100 were also stationed at Olands Brewery



-128-

in assistance to the City Police. At about 2000 hours Provosts and soldiers numbering about 25 were despatched to No. 17 Admin Unit, CWAC, New Wellington Barracks, and a similar number to Number 10 Admin Unit, CWAC, Cathedral Barracks at the request of the CWAC officers, to protect the girls.

Mayor Butler announced the end of the V-E Day celebrations to be effective 1800 hours and invoked a curfew of 2000 hours.

Mayor Butler and Admiral Murraby proceeded through the streets of Halifax, commencing about 1845 hours, in an R.C.A.F. sound truck requesting civilians and service people to return to their Barracks or homes at once. At 1900 hours, 5 Provost were despatched to Dartmouth to assist the Provost Detachment there. At 1930 hours, 8 May 45, all soldiers with the exception of a few odd individuals were off the streets of Halifax.

At about 2130 hours 8 May 45, an escort of three motorcycles met armed troops from Debert at Waverley and guided them to No. 6 District Depot. The advance party of the troops from Debert arrived at 6 D.D. at 2210 hours and the last of the group at about 2230 hours 8 May 45.

Arrangements were made for trucks to convey to their units any soldiers of any kind arriving by train to avoid having soldiers disobey the curfew. Provost patrols were maintained during the night of 8 May 45. Total number of Provosts employed on 8 May 45 was about 160 including Officers, N.C.O.'s and men, who were employed exclusively on work outside the office. I also had approximately 450 soldiers, all ranks, from Units in Halifax area serving in Provost work from 1800 hours to daylight on the 9th May. This is exclusive of Dartmouth. The figures concerning Dartmouth will be furnished by Sgt. Meldrin, N.C.O. Dartmouth Provost Detachment.

On 8 May 45 one soldier was arrested by the city police for looting and subsequently sentenced to four years by the Civil Court. He is F.65957 Pte. Baginski, F., 1st Halifax Coast Regt, RCA. He was found in possession of a large quantity of stolen jewellery from Peoples' Credit Jewellers which was valued at over \$500.00.

Two soldiers were arrested by Provost for looting and turned over to their Unit for disciplinary action. Two soldiers were arrested for being in possession of liquor and fined \$100.00 and Costs. Fifty-two soldiers were picked up as drunks and returned to their Units for action.

One airman was turned over to the R.C.A.F. service police on a charge of looting. One sailor and one male civilian were turned over to the City Police for impersonating C.W.A.C.'s and were eventually fined \$100.00 and Costs.



-129-

Lt. Col North and I will prepare a statement showing the details of all Army Personnel involved in breaches of discipline on 7, 8, and 9 May, 1945, which will show by whom they were arrested, the charges laid against them, whether their cases were disposed of before the Civil Court or by Military Authority, and the result of disciplinary action taken. This will be filed as Exhibit "AA".

On 9 May 45 Provost patrols enforce the C.E. insofar as soldiers were concerned and conditions during the night were quiet. At 1830 hours 9 May 45, two Officers and 28 other ranks arrived from A-32 C.Pro C.T.C., Camp Borden, and were immediately placed on duty. At 1900 hours, 9 May 45 Provosts and other officers and soldiers to the number of about 250 were stationed at the bonded liquor warehouse at the Cold Storage Plant between Piers "A" and "B". Fifty were stationed at Main Office, Nova Scotia Liquor Commission and 100 were stationed at Olands Brewery as assistance to civil police. At 2000 hours 9 May 45 a sub police lockup was opened in the basement of the Armouries by the City Police and one officer and ten Provosts, all supplementary constables under the R.C.M.P. Act were stationed nearby in case the four Halifax City Police on duty required assistance. During the night a total of 161 persons were confined to the Armouries, consisting of 159 civilians, 1 sailor and 1 soldier. All these were prisoners of the City Police.

The 2000 hour curfew was obeyed by soldiers and others on 9 May 45.

At 2330 hours 9 May 45, two officers and 28 other ranks arrived from A-32, C. Pro. C.T.C., Camp Borden, and were immediately placed on duty.

On 9 May 45, a circular letter dealing with breaches of discipline was despatched by the A.A. & Q.M.G. M.D. 6 which has already been filed as Exhibit "X".

Members of the Provost Special Investigation Squad assisted City detectives and R.C.M.P. in searching for and rounding up loot.

Seven soldiers were arrested by Provost for drunkenness and turned over to their Units for action. About 200 Provost were on duty on 9 May 45. Heavy patrols were maintained all night.

On 10 May 45 all soldiers continued to be confined to Barracks. The 2000 hour curfew was strictly enforced and Provost Patrols had no difficulties whatsoever.

At 1100 hours a meeting was held by the D.O.C. M.D. 6 in the Operations Room at H.Q. M.D. 6. Copies of the minutes of this meeting are examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "OO".

-130-

Capt. M.E. Byers was appointed Provost Liaison Officer to Col Thompson and traffic details were arranged.

At about 1430 hours 10 May 45 a telephone call was received from Col Oland asking for assistance, stating that Naval personnel had broken out of "Stadacona" and were proceeding to wreck his brewery on Russell Street. He was advised to have the City Police request us for assistance and told that Provost Patrols would be despatched, at once. This proved to be a completely false rumour. Col. Duncanson was so advised.

At 1900 hours 10 May 45 Provost and other soldiers were stationed at bonded liquor warehouse at the Cold Storage Plant, main office of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission and Olands Brewery, the same as 9 May 45. Conditions throughout the day were quite normal. Five soldiers were arrested and charged with drunkenness. Approximately 150 Provosts were on duty. During the day members of the Special Investigation Squad 37-38 Provost Coy assisted members of the City Police and R.C.M.P. in searching for and rounding up loot.

On May 11 the confinement to barracks was lifted, the curfew was extended to 2200 hours and the restriction on normal leave and furloughs for soldiers proceeding outside Halifax was lifted. A.A. & Q.M.G. M.D. 6 issued further instructions on breaches of discipline, by letter, copy of which is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "PP".

The D.O.C. issued a special District Order No. 703, in which he thanked all ranks, including the Provost Corps, for their behaviour during V-E Day and subsequent thereto. Copy of this District Order is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "QQ".

Large Provost Patrols were maintained and the conduct of soldiers and others was very good.

At 1210 hours 11 May 45, the D.O.C. accompanied by Col Duncanson, and his A.D.C., thanked Provost in their Recreational Hall for their work during and after V-E Day. Provost and other soldiers were stationed at bonded liquor warehouse at the Cold Storage Plant, main office of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission and Olands Brewery, similar to those detailed on the two nights previous. No arrests were made and approximately 150 Provosts were on duty.

On 12 May 45, the curfew was raised to 0030 hours.

Advice was received that the Navy League would carry on its regular dance at the Forum from 2030 hours to 2345 hours under the immediate patronage of His Honour the Lieut. Governor and Mrs. Kendall and that the show "SEELEGS" would be presented at the Forum at 2030 hours on Sunday night, May 13, 1945.

At 1300 hours, 12 May 45, City Police, Naval Shore Patrol, Army Provost and R.C.A.F. Service Police, all

- 131 -

provided a representative at each theatre and the theatres opened for the first time since V-E Day. The same arrangements were made with regard to the bonded liquor warehouse at the Cold Storage Plant, main office Nova Scotia Liquor Commission and Olands Brewery.

Large Provosts patrols were maintained. Two sailors and two soldiers were removed from the dance at the Forum in case they might become a nuisance, otherwise all was quiet. Conditions were normal. The number of Provosts employed on 12 May 45 would be approx 180.

On 13 May 45, the curfew was lifted entirely and conditions were normal.

One-fifth of the numbers at the bonded liquor warehouse, main Office N.S.L.C. and Olands Brewery were used for the last time.

Large patrols Provost were maintained but no trouble was encountered.

I produce copy of my strength return as of 7 May 45. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "RR". I also produce the disposition of Provosts in Halifax on 7 May 1945. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "SS".

- Q. Exhibit "AA" purports to show a summary of breaches of discipline of Army personnel M.D. 6 involved in the disturbances 7, 8 and 9 May 45. Can you advise the Court whether this contains a complete record of all breaches of discipline by Army personnel who can be specifically identified so far as you are aware?
- A. Yes, with the exception of one further case which I understand is referred to in the testimony of Col. McLelland on page 184 and 4 exhibit AA-1. *act*
- Q. Does this list contain the names of those soldiers who were arrested by the civilian authorities of Halifax on charges arising out of these disturbances?
- A. Yes, insofar as can be obtained from the police records. These records have been examined and show that about 421 persons including civilians, sailors, soldiers and airmen appeared before the civil court and charged arising out of V.E. Day disturbances. This list shows the surname and initials only, without any numbers, addresses or any prefix, rank or mention of any service to which any service personnel might belong.

I asked the Chief of Police, Halifax, several times and the AA&QMG has already written to the Chief of Police, asking for details of soldiers who may be included on this list of names but no reply has been received and it has not been possible to obtain any further information in this regard as yet.

- 131 A -

- Q. Does the exhibit "AA" show all soldiers which have been convicted by the civil authorities?
- A. So far as I know, yes.
- Q. What steps did you take on the 9th May and subsequently to discover when any soldier who was charged appeared before the civil authorities?
- A. I detailed an officer to attend at the office of the Chief of Police on 9 or 10 May to obtain the Regimental No. rank and name and Unit, offence and disposition of any soldiers involved in offences arising out of V-E Day. The only information that he could find at that time was a scribbler which had been maintained by various persons on duty at the Sergeant's desk, kept in pencil, and which had at that time they were attempting to sort out. This record merely showed surnames and initials. Information was received by them from the city police of the more serious offences. My Provost were in Court each morning in connection with cases in which they were called upon to testify.
- Q. What instructions did you receive from higher authority with regard to V-E Day relating to V-E Day?
- A. Only what I have previously stated in my evidence.
- Q. Prior to the 7th May what did you understand would be the basis for determining when the holiday period would officially begin.
- A. I did not understand that there would be a holiday period for the Army.
- Q. When did you first learn of the disturbances on the evening 7 - 8 May 45?
- A. I received a report at about 2130 hrs that some flagpoles were taken down from the Victory Loan Arch. I did not consider this serious.
- Q. When did you hear about the instance concerning the burning of the patrol car?
- A. Shortly after the fire started at about 2345 hrs.
- Q. When did you know that some of the Halifax Liquor Stores had been broken into?
- A. Between a quarter past and half past twelve on the morning of the 8 May when I got a phone call from the City Police.
- Q. What steps did you take to notify the DOC MD 6 about the disturbances on the evening of the 7th-8th May 45?
- A. I didn't consider it sufficiently important to get the DOC out of bed as the Army were not involved in any of the trouble. I notified him about it the next day by advising Colonel Duncanson, at about 0930 Or 1000 hrs on the 8th May.

- 131B -

- Q. Did you receive any instructions or orders from higher authority prior to V-E Day or during and after V.E. Day with regard to the enforcing of discipline?
- A. No, except as previously stated in my evidence.
- Q. Was the apparent relaxation of discipline, which would appear from the testimony before the Court in particular regard to drunks and drunkenness, due to any instructions issued or by orders given by anyone?
- A. Not that I know of.
- Q. Why did such relaxation of discipline take place?
- A. I do not know. I presume because it was V-E Day and the Chief of Police of Halifax had intimated to me at the meeting of 21 Sep 44 and 5 Apr 45, at which all fighting services were represented, that arrests would not be made for minor offences or simple drunkenness.
- Q. Will you produce a map of Halifax in which you have marked in Yellow of the streets on which damage took place on the 7th and 8th May 45; and in Green the Liquor Stores which were looted; and in Brown the Breweries which were looted or attacked?
- A. Yes, I produce such a map. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "YY 4".
- Q. Will you also produce a list showing chronologically the main events of the 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. Yes I produce this chronology. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "U".
- Q. Have the members of one of the Provost services, Navy, Army, R.C.A.F., any powers in relation to personnel of all three Services?
- A. Yes Sir. This is laid down in CARO 3252, which I produce. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "SSS".
- Q. As a matter of practice and policy do the members of the Canadian Army Provost Corps exercise the rights invested in them by this Routine Order on members of the other Services?
- A. It is a little difficult to answer that - in some respects, yes, - in some respects, no.
- Q. To what extent are the powers authorized by this CARO exercised or applied?
- A. The Routine Order definitely protects Army Provost in any dealings that they may have with either Navy or Air Force personnel and makes any Navy or Air Force personnel subject to certain penalties, such as under Section 6 (e) Army Act and other sections and similar provisions in the Navy Act or the Air Force Act, if they interfere with an Army Provost in the execution of his duty.

This Routine Order also authorizes an Army Provost coming to the assistance of a Navy Shore Patrol dealing

- 131 C -

with Navy personnel or Air Force Service Police dealing with Air Force personnel.

It is actually used by Army Provost train patrols operating without Navy Shore Patrol or Air Force Service Police, to check Navy personnel and Air Force personnel.

It is not generally used for Provost, either individually or collectively, to check either Navy personnel or Air Force personnel, either individually or collectively, for Navy or Air Force offences.

- Q. To what extent do Army Provost check infractions of civilian law by personnel of either Service?
- A. As a general rule Provost are not concerned with the actions of Navy or Air Force personnel unless the particular offence is thrust upon the Provost or assistance is requested by either the Navy or Air Force. It is considered that the police of each service look after their own personnel as a general rule.
- Q. During the Halifax disturbances on the 7th and 8th May 45 did you or the members of the Army Provost Corps take any action against or in connection with personnel of Other Services other than the Army?
- A. Yes. One sailor was arrested and handed over to the Halifax City Police on a charge of impersonating a CWAC and attempting to fall in on the Thanksgiving Memorial Service as a CWAC.
- Another sailor was arrested on Barrington Street about 2:30 Tuesday afternoon for being in possession of liquor, turned over to the Halifax Police and fined \$100. and \$3.50 for costs. One of our fellows was taking a soldier out of a place and this rating interfered. It was considered more expeditious to charge him in a City Police Court with possession of liquor, for which he was fined \$100. and costs, than to charge him with obstructing the Provost.
- Q. How badly was he obstructing the Provost?
- A. Well, one of our officers - - he just kept making a nuisance of himself. The two soldiers in connection were also arrested and charged with improper possession of liquor and fined \$100. and costs in the Civil Court.
- Q. During the 7th and 8th May to what extent did the Army Provost prevent personnel of other Services from entering the liquor stores and the brewery?
- A. To a considerable extent, in assistance to the Naval Shore Patrol and the city police. All the police or Service Forces preventing the entry of liquor stores or brewery jointly acted to prevent the mob from entering by common accord without distinguishing the various persons composing a mob.
- Q. In the arrangements by the Service Police, Navy, Army and Air Force, with the Civil Police for V-E Day celebrations were there any plans considered or adopted for joint action in a case of disturbance?

- 131 D -

A. No. In cases of necessity Provost were prepared to co-operate with the city police and other Provost Forces as and when requested.

Q. No joint action was ever requested?

A. No, not as a composite force.

Q. Was there any consideration given to having one directing head to all police effort?

A. No.

Q. Was there any consideration given to having one directing head to all efforts of the police of the Services?

A. No

-132-

**TWENTY-THIRD  
WITNESS**

Lieut. J. N. Ramsay, Canadian Provost Corps, being duly sworn, states:

- Q. What are your functions and duties in M.D. 6?
- A. I am the D.A.P.M.'s assistant.
- Q. What did you see yourself on the 7th and 8th May, 1945, in down town Halifax?
- A. On the morning of 7th May I was proceeding to the 8th Victory Loan Headquarters on Blower Street to turn in the previous day's Victory Loan sales. I arrived at the Victory Loan Headquarters at approximately 1100 hours and heard the bells of a nearby church start to chime. I returned at once to company headquarters and reported that there were indications of a celebration concerning the end of hostilities.

I returned down town at about 1400 hours and I saw that crowds were beginning to gather in the down town area. I continued on a motorcycle patrol until approximately 1630 hours at which time flags and posters were being torn down by the crowds. My last patrol was made at 1645 hours on motorcycle, at which time three beer bottles and an empty glass were thrown at me at different times. I don't know who threw these. I returned to company headquarters and assisted in despatching roving patrols in vans to keep us informed of the situation.

I patrolled the city at 2245 hours with Lt. Col. Clarke the D.A.P.M. Large masses of people were milling on Barrington Street and the two or three city police whom I saw there were helpless in the crowds. The crowd was composed of large numbers of navy, merchant marine, civilians, with a few soldiers and airmen. The naval shore patrol were operating in groups of 25 or 30 men in vans from police headquarters, some of whom I saw on Barrington Street. A city police van was burning on Barrington Street opposite the K. of C. Hut at about 2335 hours. There was a street car beside the van but it was not burning then. At this moment I saw the navy shore patrol come up Barrington Street from the direction of the police station, but they could not get through the crowd. The City Fire Department was attempting to put a hose on the burning van but I understand the crowd were uncoupling the hose as fast as it could be connected with the hydrant. I went back to company headquarters and went out on a second patrol with Major Bannard, O.C. 45 Pro Coy.

We returned to Barrington Street. The street car was now blazing and at about 0015 hours on the 8th I saw a naval rating throw a rock or stick through one of the windows of the Capitol Building. I saw four other ratings completely smash the window and pass out lampshades and lamps to civilians and then play football with a lampshade in the street. Four city policemen came along and stood in front of the broken window and nothing else happened to the other windows. Almost immediately afterwards the



-133-

crowd surged down towards Hollis Street.

We drove down Barrington St towards the C.N.R. station and almost at once I noticed liquor being carried in all directions by sailors and civilians. There were no airforce or army personnel observed at this time.

We at once returned to company Headquarters and reported the situation to Lt. Col. Clarke. I stayed on duty at company Headquarters until 0445 hours, then toured the city and noticed that by that time the crowds had dispersed of their own accord from the down town area.

Tuesday morning, the 8th of May, from 0900 hours until 1430 hours I carried out routine traffic control and prepared for the V-E Day service at the Garrison Grounds.

At approximately 1415 hours while driving past the garrison grounds, I noticed Provost personnel being loaded into vehicles and being sent down town. Fifteen minutes later I proceeded with Lt. Col. Clarke to Keith's Brewery. Upon arrival there I found a crowd of about 5,000 people crowding around the main gate and spread out on the hill beside the brewery and those around the gate were attempting to push their way into the grounds. This crowd was composed of sixty percent navy, thirty percent civilians many of whom wore a merchant marine button, and the balance Army and Airforce. There was a Provost van backed up against the gate and was holding it shut. The gates of the grounds swung inward. About 30 minutes later the crowd pulled the gates off their hinges and surged towards the brewery. They battered down the big doors and gained entrance to the main part of the building. There were approximately 60 provost and 75 shore patrol at the brewery at that time. The crowd was quite sullen and was composed of naval ratings, merchant seaman, and civilians, both drunk and sober. The 135 service police were helpless in the mob. One provost L/Cpl had his little finger cut off when the gates were torn open. The crowd systematically looted the brewery passing the beer out in an organized manner. Several civilians were seen making two or three trips. I left the brewery at about 1550 hours after all the beer in the main shipping room was gone. I returned to company headquarters and got something to eat. I saw no army personnel remove cases from the brewery.

While I was returning CWAC personnel employed at the D.A.P.M.'s Office to their barracks at 106 Depot Coy, CWAC I noticed a mob gathering in front of the Agricola Street Liquor Store. I returned to company Headquarters by way of Gottingen Street and noticed in several places that 10 and 12 year old children (but no adults) were looting small shops. I reported the Agricola Street Liquor Store situation to Major Lorway.

At 1730 hours I went out with roving patrols to remove all army personnel from the streets, on instructions.

- 134 -

received from Major Lorway and the D.A.P.M., and within an hour and a half there were very few army personnel on the streets.

Co-operation was splendid from the army personnel asked to return to their Units. I do not know of one instance where a soldier refused to return to barracks. The discipline shown was marvelous.

I returned to company headquarters at approximately 1900 hours. Reinforcements from A.23 C.&A.A.A. T.C., No. 6 District Depot and the 21st AA Regt, RCA, Officers, NCO's and men, about 300 in number, were stationed at Olands Brewery under the Artillery Officers, and at the Cold Storage Plant under Major Lorway.

By 2000 hours the mob had practically dispersed. Occasional looting was going on and army personnel found on the streets were returned to their barracks. These roving patrols operated as late as 0430 hours at which time I went off duty.

Wednesday the 9th of May, all troops were confined to barracks and the streets were filled with civilian sight-seers. Provost and soldiers of other Units were stationed that night and for several nights after, at the Cold Storage Plant, Olands Brewery and at the Head Office of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission, but no incidents occurred.

Provost reinforcements arrived in batches that night from A-32 Camp Borden at 2030 hours and 2330 hours. The first lot of 2 officers and 28 men were despatched to Dartmouth and the second group were used on roving patrols that night, in Halifax.

Q. During the 7th and 8th of May did you see army personnel actually engaged in breaking windows or looting store or liquor store, or the brewery?

A. No, sir.

At this point I might say that the co-operation and the assistance received from the officers and men despatched from A-32 Camp Borden was splendid. By 0030 hours the 9th May the men of 37-38 Provost Coys, Halifax, were completely fagged out and their jobs were taken over in a most efficient manner by the Borden reinforcements.

(J. N. RAMSAY), Lieut.  
Canadian Provost Corps, Halifax.

-135-

TWENTY-FOURTH  
WITNESS

Lieut. B. W. Daines, M. T. Officer, No. 37 Provost Coy,  
Halifax, N.S., being duly sworn, states:

- Q. How long have you been M.T. Officer of No. 37 Provost Coy?
- A. Ten months.
- Q. What do you know about the disturbances in down town  
Halifax on the 7 May, 1945?
- A. I know nothing of the disturbances down town. I was at  
Company Headquarters looking after the despatching, etc,  
of vehicles.
- Q. What do you know of the disturbances on the 8th May?
- A. Nothing, sir, as I was at Company Headquarters. I was trans-  
port officer, looking after the vehicles, keeping them  
running, in charge of despatching them in and out.
- Q. You saw nothing personally of the disturbances on 7th and  
8th May?
- A. No, sir.
- Q. Will you indicate what duties you performed with regard to  
vehicles and despatching of Provost on 7th and 8th May?
- A. I was on duty in the W/S on the morning of 7 May, 1945.  
About 1030 hours Lieut J. T. Brown, Adjutant No. 37 Provost  
Coy phoned me on the field phone advising me all vehicles  
were to be grounded as V-E Day had been declared, which  
later was declared unofficial. I immediately passed the  
word on to M/T staff and all drivers to stand to and ordered  
all vehicles gassed up and maintenance done ready for any  
emergency. I placed a Sgt on duty at the barrier, main  
gate, at 1045 hours with orders that no vehicles moved out  
without authority from Coy H.Q. I then surveyed all  
vehicles of this Coy and supervised the gassing up and  
maintenance. Six M/C were despatched on reconnaissance  
work in the city; these remained on constant patrol through-  
out the day. Coy H.Q. Station Wagons were despatched  
periodically on Officer Patrols. All other vehicles were  
grounded and standing by for orders from Coy Commander. I  
remained on duty all night keeping a close liaison between  
Main Gate, M/T and W/Shop and supervising No. 37 Provost  
Coy Guard Room at periods during the night. Vehicles and  
Provost personnel were despatched to Buckingham, Hollis  
and Agricola Street Liquor Stores. Vehicles were despatched  
as orders were received from Coy H.Q.

Tuesday morning, 8th May, was normal. Several vehicles  
were out on Officer Patrols also the M/C at approximately  
1330 hours. At about 1340 hours about 8 vehicles, with  
some Provost (about 35) in them were sent to the Garrison  
Grounds to pick up more Provost and proceed to City Hall  
and Keith's Brewery. At this time I anticipated that this  
Coy's transportations was inadequate to fulfill impending

-136-

requirements. No. 6 Coy, R.C.A.S.C. was contacted and sixteen 60 cwt T.C.V. were sent to this Coy by R.C.A.S.C. They arrived at 1845 hours and were immediately drawn up in convoy formation inside this Coy's area. Twelve more 60 cwt T.C.V. were standing by in R.C.A.S.C. M.T. Park on Cogswell St awaiting a call if needed.

At 1845 hours three 60 cwt T.C.V. containing about 100 Army personnel from No. 6 District Depot were despatched to the Cold Storage Plant. At 1800 hours twenty Provost were despatched from this H.Q. in one 60 cwt T.C.V. to the Cold Storage Plant. At about 1930 hours Tuesday night, 8 May, twelve Provost Patrols continued patrolling the city in twelve 60 cwt T.C.V.'s. The strength of the patrols ranged from six to ten Provost in each vehicle.

On the 9th, the above patrols were maintained all day; during the night, enforcing the curfew. Four 60 cwt T.C.V. returned 100 personnel from the Cold Storage Plant to No. 6 District Depot and No 37 Pro Coy H.Q. at about 0115 hours. This detail carried daily until 14 May 45. At about 1100 hours 1 Officer and 25 other ranks were transported to Dartmouth. Three 60 cwt T.C.V. were despatched with Provost personnel to the City Police Station to carry the overflow of prisoners to the Armouries where emergency cells had been arranged. At 1820 hours Wednesday, 9th May, thirty Provost from A-32 C.Pro C. T.C. were picked up from launches at the waterfront and taken to Citadel Hill Fortress where accommodation had been set up for them. The second flight of A-32 Provost from Borden was picked up at the waterfront at about 2330 hours and taken to Citadel Hill. 100 men were moved daily at 1800 hours and 0045 to and from the Cold Storage Plant. About 2030 hours 9 May thirty Provost were despatched to Dartmouth in one 60 cwt T.C.V. to relieve Provost already there. Full patrols of twelve 60 cwt T.C.V. were maintained out of No. 37 Prov Coy H.Q. all night.

During the 10th and 11th May we were engaged in similar activities.

(B. W. Daines) Lieut.,  
M.T. Officer, No. 37 Pro Coy, CProC

-137-

TWENTY-FIFTH  
WITNESS

Lieut. J. T. Brown, No. 37 Pro Coy, C.Pro C., being  
duly sworn, states:

- Q. What were your duties on 7 and 8 May, 1945?
- A. I was a member of 37 Pro Coy, M.D. 6.
- Q. Will you tell us what you know concerning the disturbances in Halifax on 7th and 8th May?
- A. The first indication of V-E Day was received at No. 37 Pro Coy Headquarters at 1015 hours, 7 May, by a phone call from Station Patrols advising that newspaper Extras were out. I heard it announced over the radio shortly after. Upon receiving the announcement all patrols were recalled to barracks. I made numerous motorcycle patrols through the city; I was on duty at Company Headquarters till 0030 hours 8 May 45.

At about 0100 hours I was recalled to Provost Headquarters and on arrival there I accompanied D.A.F.M. M.D. 6 on a tour of the city. I visited Agricola Street Liquor Store where there was no disturbance, and Buckingham St Liquor Store, where the store had previously been looted. On arrival at the Hollis St Store a small fire was noticed in the alley-way off Salter St. Taking C.S.M. Wright, Sgt. Brickwood and several Provost, this fire was put out by us. While putting this fire out an explosion was heard on Granville Street. I saw several Navy men running north on Granville St. from a Service Station. On arrival at the Imperial Oil Service Station on Granville Street, it was found that the Gas pumps had been set afire. I grabbed an issue rain coat from a soldier nearby and managed to beat out the fire before the City Fire Department actually arrived.

On continuing the tour of the city, I noticed that several windows on Barrington Street had been broken. At 0330 hours, conditions were quiet. I returned to Company Headquarters.

I didn't see any other disturbances other than those mentioned, on 7th May.

I was on duty at Company Headquarters Tuesday, 8th May from 0900 hours till 1300 hours when a motorcycle patrol was made to Stadacona Barracks and the Navy Parade was escorted to the Garrison Grounds. On arrival at the Garrison Grounds at approximately 1415 hours, Major Bannard informed me of a serious riot starting down town. On arrival at Barrington and Sackville Sts I saw a large crowd of Navy personnel, civilians, some Army and some Airforce personnel milling around. I saw some windows were being broken, but I couldn't say by whom. I saw a large crowd on Granville Street breaking windows. This

-138-

crowd was cleared on Granville Street from George to Sackville Streets without much resistance by about 60 Provost and 4 or 5 City Police who had instructed us to assist them, and Provost guards were posted at either end of Granville Street. The crowd then moved upto Barrington Street.

We then proceeded to the City Police Station. Major Bannard took some Provost to Keith's Brewery. I, and ten Provost, remained on duty at the City Police Station assisting the City Police. While at the Police Station an additional ten Provost reported to me from Company Headquarters. Looting was at its peak in the late afternoon and early evening.

I returned to Company Headquarters at about 1830 hours. At 2000 hours on instructions from the D.A.P.M., myself and two other escorts proceeded to Waverly and escorted a convey of armed troops in from Debert to No. 6 District Depot. On arrival at No. 6 District Depot at 2230 hours, I reported to the D.A.P.M. by phone, and I returned to Provost Headquarters at 2359 hours.

- Q. On what streets did you see windows being broken?
- A. Barrington and Granville.
- Q. Do you know who broke these windows?
- A. No, sir. I don't know whether they were civilians or service personnel.
- Q. Will you describe the composition of the crowd in front of the windows which were being broken on Barrington St.?
- A. There were about equal numbers of civilians and sailors, with a few soldiers and airmen.
- Q. And the crowd on Granville St.?
- A. The same, sir.
- Q. Did you see anyone entering premises on 8th May?
- A. Yes, I saw a civilian enter a store on Barrington Street. I saw him break the window and go into the store. I was with the city police when they arrested him.

While at the city police station, myself, a couple of Provost, Navy Shore Patrol, and City Policemen, got into an Army Station Wagon and drove north on Barrington St to Jacob, down to Water Street, at about 1530 hours. We turned south on Water Street. Practically everyone on that street was carrying liquor. We assisted the City Police in arresting two soldiers, one sailor, and one civilian, who were carrying liquor. They were charged in the City Police Courts. The two soldiers were E.621859

-139-

Cpl. Paulin, A. belonging to No. 6 E.S. & W. Coy, R.C.E.;  
and B.1642049 Pte. Kurlock, J., belonging to the RCA, York  
Redoubt Battery.

Q. How many other soldiers did you see carrying liquor?

A. I saw a few.

Q. Why were they not arrested?

A. Our station wagon was filled, so we did not go after them.

Q. Did you see any soldiers carrying articles other than  
liquor?

A. No, sir, I did not.

Q. Did you see any other infractions of discipline?

A. No, other than seeing civilians carrying liquor and differ-  
ent articles of clothing. That was the only sortie I made  
and returned to company headquarters at 1830 hours.

Q. Were there any disturbances on 9th to 13th May?

A. No. We patrolled the city streets enforcing the curfew and  
C.B., and found everything under control.

(J. T. BROWN) Lieut.,  
No. 37 Provost Company, C.ProG.

-140-

**TWENTY-SIXTH  
WITNESS:**

Captain J.S. Speakman, Canadian Provost Corps, attached to A.32 Cdn Provost Corps detachment, Camp Borden, Ontario, having been duly sworn states:

**Q.** When did you arrive in Halifax and how did you happen to be here?

**A.** I was called by the Commandant, A.32 Canadian Provost Corps Training Centre, early in the morning of 9th May and detailed as officer in charge of a party of 56 other ranks and 3 officers to be in readiness to fly to Halifax and to give such assistance as was necessary to the Provost Corps, H.Q. 6. I was to report to H.Q. H.Q. 6.

Arrived at the Dartmouth Airport at 1810 hrs. Proceeded by bus to docks and to the Halifax side by Army Service Corps Ferry, where I was met by transport from Nos 37 and 38 Provost Coys. Proceeded to H.Q. 37 and 38 Provost Corps and reported on arrival to Col. Clarke, DAPM, H.Q. 6

At about 2130 hrs I was detailed in company with Lieut. Muir and 28 other ranks to proceed to Dartmouth to assist the civil police. On arrival at Dartmouth, routine patrols and ferry guards were set up and maintained throughout the night until 1200 hrs the following day when I returned to H.Q. 37 and 38 Provost Corps. No incidents or disturbances occurred throughout our tour of duty.

Reported to Magistrate Murray, Dartmouth, at 1900 hrs 10 May. Routine patrols and guards were maintained throughout the night. No incidents were reported and guards and patrols were stood-down at 0830 hrs 11 May and we returned to Halifax. Up until night Sunday 13 May, same routine patrols were maintained - finished on the morning of 14 May.

No serious incidents occurred during our entire tour of duty in Dartmouth.

**Q.** Did you personally see any disturbances or disorders while in Halifax?

**A.** None whatsoever. Lieut. Muir, who accompanied me on these tours, has nothing to add to my testimony.



-141-

TWENTY-SEVENTH

WITNESS:

Lieutenant R.G. Parker, Canadian  
Provost Corps, attached No. 2 Transit Camp  
Debert, N.S., having been duly sworn states:

Q. When did you arrive in Halifax and how do you happen to be here?

A. I was directed by Col. Gillespie, O.C. No. 2 Transit Camp to proceed to Halifax, N.S. alone, on the 1624 train from Debert N.S. 9 May 45.

I arrived in Halifax at approximately 1945 hrs and immediately reported to the DAFM, M.D. 6. I was instructed to proceed to the Armouries to take charge of Provost personnel who were detailed to assist the civilian police in controlling the overflow of curfew breakers of the night 9 May 45. I remained at the Armouries until relieved by Lieut. W.G. Perry of Camp Borden, Ontario. I returned to Coy H.Q. and continued as Duty Officer the remainder of the night 9 - 10 May 45. I was relieved at 0800 hrs 10 May.

On the night of 10 May I again reported to Coy H.Q. and was detailed for motorcycle street patrol. I performed this duty until approximately 0300 hrs and remained on duty from that time as Coy Duty officer until relieved at 0800 hrs.

At 1800 hrs on 11 May I again was detailed as motorcycle patrol and continued that duty until approximately 0100 hrs. At that time I was relieved of special duty by Colonel Clarke, DAFM, M.D. 6.

Q. During the whole of the time you have been in Halifax from 9 May, did you see any disturbances or disorders?

A. No, sir.

Q. Can you tell us how many Provost all ranks proceeded from No. 2 Transit Camp, before or after you did?

A. There were 3 Provost officers proceeded with the troops on the night of 8 May. There were 2 Provost officers proceeded 9 May independently. There may have been other ranks with the troops, but I am not sure.

-142-

**TWENTY-EIGHTH  
WITNESS:**

Lieutenant W.G. Perry, Canadian Provost Corps, attached to A.32 Cdn Provost Corps detachment, Camp Borden, Ontario, having been duly sworn states:

**Q.** Will you tell us when you arrived in Halifax and how you happened to be here?

**A.** I was warned at 0800 hrs 9 May to prepare to proceed to Halifax at 1000 hrs.

At 1400 hrs, same date, we departed from No. 1 S.F.T.S., Camp Borden, Ontario, by aircraft, landing at Rockcliffe, Ont. From there by air transport to Halifax. I was in command of this section consisting of 26 other ranks and one officer, Lieut. L.L. Fox, of the same unit as myself.

We arrived at 2315 hrs 9 May and reported to Colonel Clarke, DAFM, M.D. 6. I was detailed by the Adjutant, 37 Provost Coy, to proceed with 1 sergeant and 10 men to the Armouries to reinforce the police detailed there in charge of prisoners overflowed from the city jail. My instructions were to remain there on call to aid the city police when requested by them, to take no action on my own initiative. Our duty was merely to assist the police if called upon by them as ordinary citizens under the common cause. I remained on duty with this detail until 1200 hrs 10 May when we were relieved.

On the night of 10 - 11 May, from 2000 hrs until 0800 hrs, I remained on call at the Orderly Room No. 37 Coy as assistant to the Orderly Officer. During the course of the night I made four routine patrols covering the city generally, accompanied by an NCO and driver and I saw no disturbances or disorders of any kind.

The same applies for the night of 11 - 12 May. We were then advised that this completed our tour of duty in respect of Halifax disturbances. We remained on call at our quarters on Citadel Hill. My men continued to serve as reinforcements and replacements for No. 37 Provost Corps.

**Q.** Who did you say was in charge of the first group?

**A.** Captain J.S. Speakman. Lieut. Fox had similar duties as mine and has nothing to add to my testimony.

-143-

**TWENTY-NINTH  
WITNESS:**

**Major C.R. LOWEY, Officer Commanding,  
No. 37 Provost Company, H.D. 6, Halifax, N.S.  
having been duly sworn states:**

- Q. How long have you been O.C. of No. 37 Provost Coy?**
- A. Since September 1940.**
- Q. What can you tell us of the events of 7th-8th May 1945?**
- A. I arrived in Halifax from Sydney, N.S. about 1115 hrs Tuesday 8 May. I proceeded from the station to Coy H.Q. and noticed a great deal of paper-type debris on the streets. Large numbers of people were on the streets but were very orderly and were coming out of churches. At Coy H.Q. I found that a parade had been arranged for the afternoon, ending with a service at the Garrison Grounds. Traffic details had been laid on for the parade and a party of two officers and 40 other ranks had been detailed to take care of the crowds at the Garrison Grounds. The D.A.P.M. and one other officer had left to take charge of arrangements at the Garrison Grounds with the Provost party.**

I was working in the office at about 1330 hrs when I received a message from an officer that the Mayor of the City was on the DAPM's phone - I took the message. The Mayor reported that a large crowd was gathering in front of the City Hall and the tempo of the crowd seemed to indicate that they were about to commence a riot and that, in fact, he felt they were in the rioting stage just then. I advised the Mayor we would send the Provost to the City Hall. When the Mayor had finished, I was advised by runner, that a call was waiting on my phone. I ordered an NCO to have all men in barracks fall-in and to prepare to move a large party to the City Hall.

On reaching my office and answering the phone I listened to Mr. Hayes of the N.S.L. & P. Co., situated near Keith's Brewery, advise that a crowd was rioting at Keith's Brewery near the N.S.L. & P. Co. property. He demanded protection for the Public Utilities. He was informed that Provost were on their way down town.

I despatched Lieut. Daines to notify the D.A.P.M. of the riots and to tell him that men in vehicles would arrive at the Garrison Grounds shortly after, on their way to the City Hall in case the DAPM would wish to add to the party from the men there on duty at the service.

When the men and vehicles were ready about 43 men and 10 vehicles were sent to report to Lieut Daines and the DAPM at the Garrison Grounds and to proceed from there to the City Hall. The Gate Guard was increased to 6 men and an additional 6 men posted as piquets along the fence of No. 37 Provost Company area. Nine men had already been posted at District H.Q., Bellevue and Citadel Hill.

-144-

As there seemed to be more than one riot, I held a reserve or reinforcement party at Coy H.Q. in the event of calls from still another area. After that, calls were received one after the other from store owners giving the same information and making requests for protection as previously received. I told them the Provosts were despatched and also told them to call the City Police.

I was later informed by phone there would be a meeting at District H.Q. asking that the DAFM and myself be present. I was informed the meeting was for 1630 hrs and would decide what action was to be taken. Near the end of the meeting I ordered Provost available at the barracks to be sent on Unit trucks to the south end of the city and told to work northward along the different streets and to order all soldiers they saw to return to barracks or billets. Reports coming into me were that the streets were cleared of soldiers within an hour and a half, except for odd cases, as there were not many soldiers on the streets in the first place.

That evening about 1800-1830 hrs I was despatched to the Cold Storage Plant, between Piers "A" and "B" (which contained the Bonded Warehouse) with about 20 Provost. I was instructed by the DAFM to assist the RCMP group there to prevent any mob from entering. I was advised by the DAFM that further soldiers would be sent to assist me as they became available. Approximately 200 soldiers, 20 Shore Patrol and 5 RCMP police arrived that night to assist my Provost in our assistance to the RCMP guarding the bonded warehouse. There were about 8 RCMP at the bonded warehouse and had taken up position inside. I stationed the soldiers and Provost outside the warehouse, but inside the Cold Storage Plant. Sgt Johnson, RCMP, issued instructions to me that if the mob put in appearance we were to try to get the ringleaders quickly, if possible, and to break up the mob. If this failed we were to put up some resistance; if this in turn failed, we were to fall back far enough to let the RCMP use tear gas which they had on hand as a last resort. They had about 4 to 6 grenades of tear gas available to use inside.

The inside of the storage plant which was adjoining the warehouse was looked over, certain entrances were barricaded and parties detailed to defend certain areas. The night passed without incident. The party was cut to about one-fifth strength at about 2359 hrs, and the balance released to return to their units upon instructions from the DAFM at about 0230 hrs 9 May 45.

The day of 10 May 45 was quiet. During the day I attended Coy duties. I was again detailed for duty at the cold storage plant that night. I was supplied with about 200 troops. A roof watch was maintained for warning purposes and the party was split up into details and assigned areas to defend. Close contact was maintained with the RCMP on duty. The night passed without incident. The main body of troops were allowed to go at 0030 hrs but an officer and 35 men were left to guard the warehouse until 0600 hrs.

-145-

11th and 12th May 45 passed without incident.  
13 May 45 was similar except that one-fifth strength of previous night was used in early part of night and this was cut out entirely at about 0300 hrs.

- Q. Did you see any disturbances during the day 8 May?
- A. During the 8th I didn't see any actual disturbances?.
- Q. Did you see any Service personnel involved in any infraction of discipline?
- A. None.
- Q. You didn't see any chaps breaking windows, looting etc?
- A. No. I did see a few civilians carrying odd boxes of what could have been anything.
- Q. From what you saw during the disturbances on the 7, 8 and 9th May in Halifax, have you any suggestions as to how the Army might improve plans and arrangements to meet any disturbances of a similar nature in the future?
- A. I don't think so, sir. We have a pretty good set-up.
- Q. How did the Provost under your command act, in general in connection with the disturbances?
- A. Grand. The men as a whole acted excellently - gave perfect co-operation - worked long hours, 18 hrs a day for 3 days without a kick and they abstained from liquor during this whole time.
- Q. Were any complaints or arrests made by the City Police of Provost Personnel?
- A. Yes, one. He was acquitted. He was proceeding to Dartmouth to join the Provost detachment there and picked up a briefcase on the street. He was on his way to the Police Station and was picked up by 2 soldiers in a jeep who drove him to the Police Station, where he was charged with stealing the briefcase in which a telephone was discovered.

This charge was dismissed by the civic magistrate.  
This was the only case.

- 146 -

BLANK - Not used.

-147-

THIRTIETH  
WITNESS:

Major E.E. Bannard, Officer Commanding  
No. 45 C. Pro. C., M.D. No.6, having been duly sworn  
states:

- Q. How long have you been Officer Commanding No. 45  
C. Pro. C. ?
- A. Since March, 1944. I am also 2 i/c to Major Lorway,  
who is the senior Provost Officer of the Companies.
- Q. What can you tell us regarding events or disturbances  
on the 7th-8th May 1945?
- A. On the 7th May 1945, at approximately 1000 hrs, I  
was informed by GSN Wright, No. 37 Provost Company,  
that the Station Patrol had telephoned with informa-  
tion that the newspapers were on the street with an  
"Extra" announcing the unconditional surrender of  
Germany. I immediately informed Lt.-Col. C.W.  
Clarke, DAPM, M.D. 6, ordered the Adjutant, Lt.  
J.T. Brown, to ground all vehicles, have the  
personnel of the Company assembled, confined to  
barracks and ready for despatch to do duty at a  
moment's notice anywhere.

This information was confirmed by a radio broadcast  
a few minutes later. Whistles from tugboats in the  
harbour and sirens began to blow. Activity in the  
streets increased considerably. At approximately  
1100 hrs, information was received, the source of  
which I am not certain, that the announced Thanks-  
giving Service, which was to be held at 1430 hrs  
on "V-E Day" would not take place on the 7th May  
as the V-E Day announcement was premature and  
unauthorized.

Foot and vehicle patrols were despatched throughout  
the city at regular intervals, supplemented by  
motorcycle patrols at irregular intervals. Crowds  
assembled in the vicinity of Citadel Hill and down-  
town area at about 1430 hrs when they were officially  
informed by a sound truck that the V-E Day celebration  
~~would not take place that day.~~ The city, though  
somewhat excited, maintained normal conditions  
throughout the day. Strict instructions were issued  
by me to all my Provost personnel and especially to  
Officers and N.C.O.'s to be prepped for any eventuality.

The wet canteens of the Unit area, Nos. 37, 38 and  
45 Companies, were absolutely closed on 7th May 45  
up until the time I left on special escort duty at  
0720 hrs, Monday, 14 May 45, they were still closed.

I remained at Company Headquarters throughout the  
7th May directing the normal activities and special  
arrangements of the Company. A detail was sent to  
All Saints Cathedral at 2000 hrs to assist in controll-  
ing the crowds and to direct any Army vehicles and  
Army personnel which might be in the vicinity, as  
a precautionary measure. I made a tour of the street  
in the vicinity of the Nova Scotian Hotel and the  
Lord Nelson Hotel where Provost details were posted  
and things were orderly, well conducted and the crowd  
seemed to be enjoying themselves. I made a tour of  
the streets North of Barrington and at that time,  
approximately 0150 hrs, the only place of disturbance  
appeared to be on Barrington St.

-148-

At about 0155 hrs, I saw a Naval rating throw a rock through a window of the Capitol Theatre Bldg on Barrington St. and four other Ratings finished the job of smashing the windows. The City Police came on the scene at this time and attempted to protect the property as far as possible, but missiles were still being thrown by the crowd, composed mostly of Naval personnel, some civilians, but I did not see any Army personnel. I saw several Naval Ratings with lamp shades in their hands. The City Police made every effort to recover these, a large proportion of which they did, and returned them to the windows. The City Police were in complete control at this time.

I proceeded down Barrington St. towards the C.N.R. Station and observed people streaming in all directions with liquor in cases and bottles. The majority appeared to be Naval ratings, a few soldiers, and a large per cent were civilians. I did not see any soldiers with liquor at this time. I immediately returned to Company Headquarters to see if assistance had been requested by the City Police. Provost Officers and men were despatched by men and other officers to Agricola St., Buckingham St. and Hollis St. in response to telephone calls from the Civil Police to protect the Liquor Stores there. Our Provost gave every assistance that was requested by civil police. At about 0300 hrs on the 8th May, I made a patrol of the city. The riots at these places had subsided and the situation was under control. I then went to bed and remained on call.

During the morning of the 8th May I remained on duty at Company Headquarters. Major C.R. Lorway, O.C. Nos. 37 and 38 Provost Companies, had at this time returned from Sydney, N.S. and resumed command of 37 and 38 Provost Companies. I was detailed as Officer in Charge of policing the Garrison Grounds where the official celebration was scheduled to take place. I proceeded with Capt. M.E. Byers and 40 O.R.'s to the Garrison Grounds and placed them in position.

At about 1330 hrs, the DAPM, MD 6, ordered me to assemble all my Provost personnel, with the exception of one officer and four other ranks, at a corner of the Garrison Grounds, as serious trouble had broken out downtown. This order was immediately carried out and a motorcycle patrol was also informed. Within a few minutes of the order being received, a convoy of trucks from Coy. H.Q. had arrived with the personnel who were standing by and I took command of the convoy and proceeded to give what assistance I could to the City Police; this was done at the request of the City Police.

On Barrington and Sackville Sts, I saw crowds milling around, composed of Naval personnel, civilians, and youngsters. I saw a few soldiers who were proceeding along the street and appeared to be anxious of getting out of the crowd. Provost personnel were taken there. The street was cleared by us and guards posted at each end for a short period.



-149-

We then heard windows smashing in another direction. As I did not know which place to employ my force, I went to Police Station to find out, and information was received that a crowd was assembling at Keith's Brewery, and a request was made to me by the City Police for assistance, which was immediately given. I saw looting was in full swing and it appeared to me that Naval personnel were smashing windows to their delight and the urging of the mobs were following. It also appeared to me that ego and mob psychology were the two dominating factors.

I ordered Lt. J. T. Brown to remain with the City Police and give them all assistance in his power and immediately proceeded with the remainder of the Provost to Keith's Brewery. On arrival at the Brewery, I observed Lt.-Col. G.W. Clarke, DAPM, M.D.6 with a van across the main gate, some city police and Lt. J. N. Ramsay of the Provost Corps, attempting to quell the crowd which at this time was good naturedly aggressive but very determined. I ordered all my Provost to go up to the Brewery where I saw Col. Oland attempting to pacify the crowd. I later saw Lt.-Col. Clarke, DAPM, in the office of the brewery attempting to use a 'phone. Windows were being smashed and missiles were being thrown through the office.

Later, Capt. B.L. Conway of the Provost Corps, took his Provost and together with Naval and city police, barricaded the main warehouse. I remained outside in the crowd with some Provost personnel collecting what Army personnel I could and attempted to humour the many drunks who were the vocal points of the disturbances. The crowd at this time was in a very ugly mood and determined on looting the brewery. This crowd was composed of Navy personnel, civilians, some Army and a very few Air Force. The persons definitely trying to break in and did break in the brewery were Navy and civilians. When they had cleared out the small warehouse, the crowd began to dwindle, and with the aid of the City Police it was possible for the Brewery to be cleared of the rioting looters.

I returned to Company Headquarters and later made patrols. At approximately 1700 hrs on this date, in response to a telephone call from Major C. R. Lorway, O.C. Nos. 37 and 38 Provost Companies, all available Unit transportation was utilized in the removing troops from the streets of the city of Halifax, starting at the South end, and informing them that they were confined to barracks until further notice. Throughout the remainder of the day and into the early hours of Wednesday, patrols were made giving what assistance when and where possible and protecting public property to the best of their ability.

A great amount of tact was required and all Forces, Navy, Army and Air Force and City Police exercised great restraint whilst doing their duty under very difficult circumstances preventing, in my opinion, bloodshed in addition to the existing chaotic conditions.

-150-

At approximately 1400 hrs, Wednesday, 9th May 45, a report was received from Oland's Brewery that Naval personnel had broken out of their barracks and were proceeding in force to wreck Oland's brewery. I immediately took a detail under my command and proceeded to Oland's Brewery where everything was found quiet and normal. Mr. Cunningham, an official of Oland's Brewery, was interviewed and he stated that the Brewmaster at Keith's had telephoned Col. Oland to the effect that trouble might be expected at Oland's Brewery. I placed Provost in position at the main gate, inside, and troops arrived to assist from the local garrison. These were maintained until Sunday, 13 May 45.

Details were posted at the Bonded Liquor Warehouse, main office of the Liquor Stores, Buckingham St. Oland's Brewery and I, from that time until leaving for special escort duty was responsible for visiting and reporting upon the conditions of the guard at the above mentioned places, also inspecting street patrols and contacting the City Police from time to time. There were no incidents to report.

False reports were received by me at about 2000 hrs of a disturbance at Keith's Brewery on the night of Thursday, 10th May, and upon the request of the City Police, I proceeded with a detail along with Naval Shore Patrol, but found no foundation for the report. At the request of the City Police a curfew was enforced and the city was normal when I returned to Company Headquarters in the early hours of Friday morning.

Prior to V-E Day, I addressed and informed a muster parade of the combined Provost Companies, Nos. 37, 38, and 45, that V-E Day all leave will be cancelled until further notice and anybody on leave was to report to Coy. H.Q. immediately. I also instructed them that if on V-E Day they saw drunken soldiers on the streets, they were to pick them up and take them to their homes or barracks, to protect private property to the best of their ability, and to arrest any soldiers who were found wilfully or wantonly destructive.

On Saturday of the week prior to V-E Day, when Senator Connolly made the false announcement of unconditional surrender of Germany, from San Francisco, the Company was then alerted by me. All personnel were confined to barracks, men sleeping out reported in, transport was frozen and I made routine checks of the City. There was no indication in any shape, manner or form that disturbances such as were later experienced on the 8th May might be anticipated.

-151-

THIRTY-FIRST  
WITNESS:

Capt. M. E. Byers, 2 1/c No. 37 C. Pro. C.,  
M.D. No.6, having been duly sworn states:

Q. How long have you been with No. 37 C. Pro. C. ?

A. Since 10 Mar 45.

Q. What did you see of the events or disturbances in  
Halifax 7th-8th May?

A. At about 1030 hrs. 7th May 45, information was  
received by Major Lorway at No. 37 Provost Coy.  
H.Q. that Germany had unconditionally surrendered  
to the Allied Powers and special instructions for  
V-E Day would immediately come into effect. At  
about 1100 hrs, 7th May 45, acting on instructions  
received from the DAPM, M.D.6, I proceeded to Elice  
Station to report to the Chief of Police and there  
to act as liaison between Army Provost and civilian  
police. The arrangement was that any request made  
by the Chief of Police to me for assistance would be  
passed on by me to the Provost Corps. The same is  
true of information given me.

During my tour of duty, only one request was made  
for Provost personnel, namely, to police two street  
dances which were being held, one on South Park St.  
and the other on South St. I phoned the Provost  
Coy. and this request was supplied consisting of  
11 men and 1 N.C.O. at each dance. There were large  
crowds on the streets but were orderly. I went  
out and checked these dances.

I remained on duty until about 1800 hrs. 7th May 45  
and was relieved by a Provost N.C.O. and returned to  
Coy. H.Q. at about 1815 hrs.

At about 0025 hrs, 8th May, I received instructions  
from Major Bannard, Acting O.C. Composite Provost  
Companies, to proceed to Buckingham St. Liquor  
Store with 2 W.O.'s and 25 O.R.'s and there to assist  
the civil police as the Liquor Store had been broken  
into. Acting on these instructions, the patrol  
arrived at Buckingham St. Liquor Store about 0035  
hrs. 8th May 45. I found that the front of the  
liquor store had been broken into, a mob of from  
two to three hundred people standing in front of the  
store and a large crowd inside the store. The  
crowd consisted mostly of Naval and civilian personnel.  
I did not see any soldiers at this place. Whiskey  
and beer were being taken out of the store and some  
of it was being drunk on the sidewalk.

Acting with the Shore Patrol and civilian police,  
the store was cleared and the situation was brought  
under control. At about 0145 hrs 8th May 45, I  
received further instructions from Capt. Conway,  
No. 37 Provost Coy. to proceed to the Hollis St  
Liquor Store and there to help the other police  
patrols as the store also had been broken into.  
I proceeded and informed the City Police of my  
instructions and the Sgt. in charge suggested I  
leave 6 O.R.'s and 1 Sgt. to give them any assistance  
should the occasion arise. This request was carried  
out.

-152-

With the rest of the patrol and I, arrived at the Hollis St. Liquor Store where it was found that the front of the store had been broken into, that the Naval ~~Shores~~ Patrol and civilian police, under the command of an Naval Officer, were inside the store. The store had been cleared and the situation was well under control. There was a crowd of about 200 people, composed of Naval personnel and civilians, in front of the store but were orderly. I did not see any soldiers at that place. The patrol stayed at the Hollis St. Liquor Store until about 0400 hrs, 8th May. The crowd by this time had all left and the street was quiet.

At the request of the civil police, 10 men and 1 Sgt. were detailed to remain at the Hollis St. Store to assist the civil police and the remainder of the patrol returned to Coy. H.Q. arriving at 0415 hrs.

At about 1200 hrs. 8th May 45, I received instructions from Major Bannard to proceed with 3 Sgts. and 40 O.R.'s to the Garrison Grounds for the purpose of policing the V-E Day Thanksgiving Service which was being held at 1430 hrs same date. A patrol under the command of Major Bannard arrived at the Garrison Grounds about 1300 hrs and plans were made to carry out the instructions. About 1350 hrs, 8th May, the DAPM, MD 6, ordered all men on duty at the Garrison Grounds, with the exception of one officer and 4 O.R.'s to load into the Coy. trucks and to proceed downtown as serious trouble had started. This order was immediately carried out.

I and 4 O.R.'s were ordered to remain on duty at the Garrison Grounds and to carry out the policing on the grounds, which we did. The parade was broken off at about 1545 hrs. After the Garrison Grounds had been cleared of all troops, patrols returned to Coy. H.Q. at about 1700 hrs. At about 1745 hrs a phone call was received by the Provost Orderly Room, that a 60 cwt. DND vehicle carrying a large amount of liquor was driving towards Wellington Barracks. Accompanied by Major Bannard, a patrol was made to Wellington Barracks, but no trace of the truck could be found. Patrol returned to Coy. H.Q. at about 1800 hrs.

At about 1810 hrs, 8th May 45, instructions were received from the O.C. #37 Provost Coy. to clear all the streets of Army personnel, as an order had been received that all Army personnel were to be confined to barracks. Acting on these instructions and accompanied by 2 O.R.'s, patrols were made through the streets and all soldiers seen were ordered to return to their barracks or billets immediately. This order was strictly enforced. The streets were clear of soldiers at about 2100 hrs. The patrol remained on duty till 0800 hrs. 9th May 45.

At about 1100 hrs, 9th May, I received instructions from the DAPM, M.D.6, to proceed with 2 Sgts. and 25 O.R.'s to Dartmouth, N.S. and to report to the Chief of Police there for further instructions. Patrols arrived at the Police Station, Dartmouth, N.S. at 1130 hrs. Instructions were received from the Chief of Police, Dartmouth, to patrol the town of Dartmouth, N.S., enforce all town by-laws, to arrest all drunks, military, naval, airforce and civilians. Joint patrols which consisted of town.

000481

-153-

naval, military and air force police were detailed to patrol the town. Several drunks, including two soldiers - D.170283 Pte. Turcotte, R. and G.57230 Pte. Martin, R., of the Regt. de Ste. Hyacinthe, and a number of civilians were picked up and turned over to civil authorities.

Curfew was laid on for 1900 hrs and was strictly enforced. At about 2300 hrs, the patrols were relieved from reinforcements from Camp Borden under command of Capt. Speakman. The patrol returned to Halifax at 2400 hrs.

The remainder of the week, I carried out routine duties at H.Q.

Q. How many members of the Provost Corps were arrested 7th-8th May?

A. None to my knowledge.

-154-

THIRTY-SECOND

WITNESS

Captain Bernard L. Conway, 21/c No. 37 Provost  
Coy., C.Pro.C.

being duly sworn, states:

Q. Were you on duty from 7th May 45 to Sunday May 13th, 45?

A. I was, sir.

Q. Will you tell us what you know of the events that transpired on those days?

A. On Monday, 7th May 45, VE Day was declared. I was instructed to take charge of Motorcycle patrols and they were to patrol the City and advise Provost Headquarters at frequent intervals as to the situation in the City of Halifax. I detailed the Motorcycle Patrols to the different streets and from 1800 hrs. to 2200 hrs., accompanied by Sgt. Isenor, I patrolled the main streets of the City and inspected the street dances. Things were generally under control at this time although naval ratings and merchant seamen were ripping down the Victory Loan decorations on Barrington St. and were very noisy. The street dances were very orderly and the crowd assembled on Citadel Hill to watch the display of fireworks were orderly and very quiet.

At 0010 hrs. the 8th I received a call at Headquarters from Det.-Insp. Langille of the City Police, who stated that he wished that forty Provost be despatched immediately to the Agricola St. Liquor store. I asked him what the trouble was and he stated that there was no trouble yet, but that they expected that they would have trouble. I told him that I would send him some men. Police Inspector Kinsman called me at Headquarters at 0015 hrs. and requested that I send some Provost to the Buckingham St. Liquor Store as the crowd had already broken in there.

I contacted Lt.-Col. C.W. Clarke, D.A.P.M., M.D.No.6, and advised him of the situation and he instructed me to send men to these stores. Capt. M.E. Byers and thirty men left for the Buckingham St. Store immediately.

I took a Sergeant and nine men to the Agricola St. store. There was no incident at the Agricola St. Liquor store.

Q. What did you see when you arrived there?

A. There were from 50 to 70 Naval Shore Patrol standing inside and outside the store. There were no crowds on the street other than passerbys.

Q. Continue.

A. At 0130 hrs. Police Inspector Kinsman phoned me at the Agricola St. Liquor Store and told me that a crowd had broken into the Hollis St. Liquor Store and requested that I send some men there and asked permission to send some of the Provost from the Buckingham St. store to the Hollis St. store. I told Insp. Kinsman to contact Capt. M.E. Byers at the Buckingham St. Liquor Store and instruct him that if

-154A-

- A. (Continued) things were quiet there to take his men to the Hollis St. store. I phoned Major E.E. Bannard at Provost Headquarters and advised him of the Hollis St. disturbance. He told me that he was sending twenty-five men from Headquarters to the Hollis St. Store.

About 0300 hrs. the Naval Shore Patrol and the Provost left the Agricola St. store in charge of the Mounted Police. The Provost returned to barracks. I went off duty at 0445 hrs.

- Q. What happened on Tuesday the 8th May 45?

- A. I reported on duty at Company Headquarters at 0830 hrs. With the Motorcycle Patrols I controlled the traffic along the Garrison Grounds until 1100 hrs. at which time a Public Address system advised the assembled crowds that there would not be a Thanksgiving Service held at The Garrison Grounds until 1430 hrs. and the crowd dispersed, on hearing this news.

From 1300 hrs. to 1415 hrs. I controlled traffic for the Thanksgiving Service and the parade passed into the grounds.

At 1415 hrs. I heard rumours to the effect that there was trouble at Keith's Brewery. I proceeded there and found that the crowd had already been into the Brewery once and had been driven out and were being held on the Brewery grounds and outside the fence by members of the Provost Corps alone. I did not see other city, R.C.M.P. or service police there. I forced my way through the crowd to the Main Gate of the Brewery where I found that the trouble makers were four Naval Petty Officers who were exhorting the crowd to break through, telling them that they outnumbered the Provost. I realized that the situation was getting out of hand and I immediately returned on my motorcycle to the Garrison Grounds where I saw Col. Clarke, D.A.P.M., and Inspector Judge of the City Police and told them of the situation at the Brewery and that the Provost could not possibly hold the crowd out much longer and if they attempted to do so with their small numbers that they would be killed as the mood of the crowd was ugly. Col. Clarke and I returned to the Brewery where we found that the Provost had been reinforced by more members of the Provost Corps and the arrival of the Naval Shore Patrol, but that the crowd was even larger than before and was intent on getting into the Brewery regardless of the cost. Col. Clarke told me that he was going back to inform the D.O.C. and His Worship, the Mayor of Halifax.

About five minutes after the D.A.P.M. had left, the crowd burst through the gates and over the fences and pushed the Provost and Naval Shore Patrol back to the loading platform of the Shipping Room of the Brewery Warehouse. As the crowd was throwing bottles from the hill, I ordered all the Service Police back inside the Shipping Room as there were no officers of the Shore Patrol that I could see, and we got the big doors closed and barred.



-155-

The crowd then obtained a large piece of timber and, using it as a battering-ram, smashed through the heavy door of the Shipping Room in front of the Brewery.

The Provost and Naval Shore Patrol stood shoulder to shoulder behind the front door of the Shipping Room and beat the crowd back several times but then, with a concentrated rush, the crowd pushed the Provost and Shore Patrol back into the room and continued to pour in, and took cases out, until there was not a case of beer left in the Shipping Room. Only three or four got into the main warehouse. When the beer was gone in the Shipping Room we put the remainder of the crowd outside and closed the doors to the Shipping Room again and after some time the crowd around the Brewery dispersed, taking the beer that they had looted with them. This was at approximately 1630 hrs. When the crowd was dispersed, Provost personnel returned to Provost Headquarters.

I returned to Company Headquarters where I took over the job of detailing Provost, and the Troops which were detailed to assist the Provost, to Oland's Brewery, Cathedral Barracks, New Wellington Barracks, and to whatever other points where Provost were needed. At 1700 hrs. I began detailing the patrols in trucks that were to tour the City and remove all soldiers from the streets. At 1830 hrs. we received the big TCV's from the R.C.A.S.C. and I allotted them for the same purpose.

I made several patrols through the city, found that looting and smashing was going on on Barrington St. I could not see the composition of the crowd there, but I noticed the crowds which had begun smashing windows and looting on Göttingen St. The composition of these latter crowds were mostly civilians and sailors. The trouble-makers on Göttingen St. were mostly boys between the ages of 16 and 18, there were with them quite a considerable number of naval ratings. I saw no soldiers. The greater part of the crowds was dispersed by the effect of the 8 PM Curfew but spasmodic looting and smashing continued on Göttingen St. I took a truck and two R.C.A. Officers to the main Telephone Exchange on North St. at approximately 2330 hrs. where we picked up approximately fifty female Long Distance Operators and saw that they were safely delivered to their homes. I went off duty at 0400 hrs.

- Q. During the whole of the time did you see any army personnel actively engaged in smashing windows or looting?
- A. There was only one place and that was at the Brewery. In the crowds which poured into the Brewery there were exactly five soldiers who came in and took beer out. It was impossible to get near them to try to check them or place them under arrest because the crowd would never let you get near them. I might say that when we were driving the crowds back we only had our bare hands, we also began to use beer bottles.
- Q. What was the reaction of the crowd?
- A. The reaction of the crowd, they took beer bottles and came back at us. We were enormously outnumbered, it would have been risky to have attempted to use extreme force on the crowd.
- Q. Will you tell us whether these five soldiers you mentioned were active leaders of the crowd that broke into the brewery



-156-

or whether they merely came afterwards and took beer?

A. They were merely following the crowd, sir, and came in and took beer. They were not leaders of the crowd.

Q. To what unit did they belong?

A. I can only answer that for one man and he had R.C.E. on his shoulders. Four of them were returned men.

Q. Were any of the Provosts of your Company injured that day?

A. Yes, there was one injured at the gate of the brewery. He had his little finger on one of his hands, I don't know which hand, badly injured.

Q. That was the only injury suffered by your Company that day?

A. Out side of small bruises and cuts, yes sir.

Q. You mentioned that on the 8th on your first trip to the brewery that there were four Naval Petty Officers inciting the crowd to break into the brewery.

A. That's right sir.

Q. In your opinion if you had taken those four men into your custody would that have prevented the break into the brewery?

A. No sir. They were backed up by naval ratings and merchant seamen and if we had tried to take them in we would have had to take them all in. Most of the individuals in the crowd appeared to have been drunk.

Q. What is your estimate of the number watching and the number who came in and took beer?

A. My estimate of the crowd outside the brewery was some where around seven thousand people.

Q. What happened on Wednesday, 9th May 45?

A. I was on duty at Provost Headquarters at 0900 hrs. Everything quiet. I made several tours through the City enforcing the C.B. of soldiers. I arranged for accommodation for the first group of Provost to arrive by plane from Borden. This group was sent to Dartmouth. The second group arriving from Borden was sent out on Roving Patrol in Halifax.

The City Police through the D.O.C., M.D.No.6, requested the use of the Halifax Armouries as an auxiliary Jail for the persons they had arrested as their own was not adequate. Acting on instructions from the D.A.P.M. at 1300 hrs. I contacted Major Weir, O.C. Res. Bn. Halifax Rifles, at the Halifax Armouries and arranged for an Auxiliary City Jail to be set up in the Rifle Ranges in the basement of the Armouries. I visited this

-157-

Auxiliary Jail twelve or fifteen times during the night. There were many civilians, three naval ratings and two soldiers. I went off duty at 0300 hrs.

Q. And on Thursday, 10th May 45?

A. I reported for duty at Provost Headquarters at 1000 hrs. Everything quiet. Accompanied Roving Patrols through the City and assisted the City Police at the Auxiliary Jail in the Armouries where Court was held in the afternoon. The Armouries was cleared of prisoners by 1300 hrs. The night was very quiet. Curfew was enforced. I reported off duty at 0100 hours.

Q. And on Friday, 11th May 45?

A. I reported for duty at 0900 hrs. at Company Headquarters. Regular duties carried out. Inspected patrols. I remained on duty until 0200 hrs.

Q. And on Saturday, 12th May 45?

A. I reported on duty at 0900 hrs. Patrols made throughout the City. Reported everything quiet. Dance at the "Forum". Reported off duty at 0300 hrs.

Q. And on Sunday, 13 May 45?

A. I reported for duty at 0900 hrs. I was on duty at Company Headquarters until 2400 hrs.

Q. Evidence has been produced in this court that there was some military personnel in the raid of Keith's Brewery. You were at Keith's Brewery during all the time that the raid was going on?

A. That is right, sir.

Q. They had gone in and taken out some beer?

A. Some people had gone in and taken some beer out before I arrived.

Q. While you were there do you think there were three thousand cartons taken out?

A. My guess would be less than three thousand sir.

(B.L. CONWAY) Captain,  
2 i/c No. 37 Provost Coy.,  
Canadian Provost Corps, C.A.

--158--

THIRTY-THIRD  
WITNESS

Major H.V. Kerney, MM., C. 21st Coy., V. C. of C., M.D.6.

being duly sworn states:

Q. How long have you been Officer Commanding this Company?

A. Twelve months sir.

Q. What was the strength of your command as of the 7th May, 1945?

A. In the Halifax area, 9 Officers and 235 Other Ranks.

Q. What were the numbers of all your ranks out of barracks no on duty in the Halifax and Dartmouth area on the 7th and 8th May, 1945?

A. During the whole of 7th and 8th May 45 there were none.

Q. Were there any personnel under your command involved in the disturbances in Halifax and Dartmouth on May 7th and 8th?

A. None whatsoever.

Q. Have you received any advice or report concerning any of your men having been involved in any disturbances?

A. Definitely not, sir.

Q. What instructions or orders were received by you from higher authority relating to V-E Day prior to 7th May 45?

A. I received by special D.R., at approximately 1900 hrs on the 4th May, Orders for V-E Day Parade and Thanksgiving Service issued by District Headquarters, M.D.No.6 which has been filed as exhibit "S".

Q. Did you receive other instructions or orders other than those relating to the Thanksgiving Service?

A. No sir.

Q. Did you receive any instructions from Higher authority on 7th May 45 relating to V-E Day?

A. Nothing at all sir, other than making preparation for the Service.

Q. Did you receive the telegram of May 7th 45 filed as exhibit "B".

A. I did not receive this telegram but we got line 6/in of the message writing from Fortress on the 7th or the morning of the 8th. I might say that all orders and instructions come to my Company from Fortress Headquarters.

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on prior to midnight May 6th 7th May 45 relating to V-E Day?

- 158a -

A. I contacted our Protestant Chaplain, H/Captain Moore, and arrangements were completed to hold a Thanksgiving Service in the Recreation Hut at 1700 hrs. All denominations were requested to attend, which was done, and it was made into a muster parade.

I also communicated with Captain Hall, of the DS & TO M.D.6 and completed arrangements in regard to transportation for party who were participating in the V-E Day Parade and Thanksgiving Service in Halifax on the 8th May.

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements were made by you on May 8th other than routine?

A. We had a parade in the morning of the party that were participating in the Thanksgiving Service later and that was all the activity we had in the morning.

At approximately 1245 hours on the 8th May 45, the Party designated to participate in the V-E Day Parade and Service paraded and were inspected by me. And they were again informed of the importance of the occasion.

At 1250 hours the RCASC trucks arrived ready to convey the party to Halifax, NS, about 11 or 12 miles distant. In the meantime, it was decided that personnel not on duty, who were desirous of attending the Service, would be permitted to do so and our own truck was utilized for this purpose. It was pointed out that they must return with the trucks immediately after the service.

We proceeded from the barracks at JS Magazine, at 1300 hours and I accompanied the convoy in the Station Wagon.

After the service those trucks were loaded and everyone present and we left Halifax at the Point of Assembly at 1600 hours, and accompanied by me, returned to barracks.

All ranks duly carried out my orders and remained in barracks the night of 8th May 45.

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on May 9th and thereafter, other than routine?

A. Immediately upon receipt of the message from Fortress Headquarters, regarding leave being cancelled and all ranks, other than those on duty, confined to barracks until further notice, I took immediate steps to inform the Detachment on duty at Imperial and personnel on duty at the Halifax Embarkation Pier, the contents of this message and gave definite orders to the officers i/c that the order from Fortress must be strictly adhered to and all ranks, leaving barracks on duty or sick parade, would be registered, showing name, time of departure and return and nature of duty.

I also issued instructions to the Motor Transport Section, that vehicles would be used only in the most urgent and necessary cases, such as rations etc., that the quickest and shortest routes would be utilized and that all vehicles on such duty, would be accompanied by an officer.

- 158b -

- A. Due to the fact that cessation of hostilities in Europe was anticipated at any time, a muster parade was held, in the Recreation Hut at 1100 hrs., on 5th May 45 and I addressed all ranks and advised that, when the news of Germany's unconditional surrender would be conveyed to us, it was my definite wish and order that all ranks would not leave the barracks for at least two days. This I explained, was<sup>in</sup> the best interests of all and this fact has been most vividly and truthfully borne out.

On the 6th May 45, immediately after Church Parade, I visited the detachment located at Imperoyal and informed them of my wishes in the same regard.

I also telephoned Lieut. Kavanagh, who was on duty at the Embarkation Building, Halifax, NS with 12 O.R.'s that when the news was received, that no man was to leave the billets at the Embarkation Pier for at least two nights.

- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on May 7th 45 other than routine?

- A. At approximately 1100 hrs., on the 7th May 45, we received the startling good news from the radio that Germany had capitulated. This information was conveyed to all ranks and again they were requested that in the best interests of all concerned, no man was to leave barracks for at least 48 hours. This was followed 100%.

The same message was relayed by telephone by my Headquarters to the detachment on duty at Imperoyal, NS and on duty at the Halifax Embarkation Pier.

- Q. Why did you take that move?

- A. My home happens to be at Windsor, Ontario, and from what I have seen of celebrations in Detroit and what I have also seen in Toronto, I had that in mind sir, a thing I also had in mind, sir, was that in my unit I have a great number of men in my unit who have sons and daughters in the service, some of whom have been killed, and I emphasized it to them when I spoke to them. I thought that in all due respect to them it was as little as I could do to debar ourselves from a possible "48 hours". And I definitely did not go out myself, other than when I had to go to Embarkation, because I am not a man who asks other ranks to remain in camp and not myself.

- Q. It was, then, a combination of anticipation and respect?

- A. Yes sir, it was. And I repeat, from what I have seen in Detroit and Toronto, I might say that the message did not go over too good at the first but I had several men come to me after they found out what happened and they were very grateful for it, they stated quite openly, that they could have been involved, innocently.

- Q. What else did you do?

A 158c -

These orders were to be in force until instructions would be received from Fortress as to the lifting of restrictions.

Q. Will you describe your personal movements with regard to the disturbances on 7th and 8th May 45?

A. During the 7th May 45, I remained at Company Headquarters, the entire day and night, keeping in close contact by telephone with our detachments and Fortress Headquarters. I did not, therefore, see any disturbances downtown in either Halifax or Dartmouth.

On the 8th May 45, I accompanied the Party selected to take part in the V-E Day Parade and Thanksgiving Service to Halifax, NS at 1400 hours.

After the service, the Party which participated in the Parade was some little time in returning to the Point of Assembly on the South Commons. Upon inquiry, I was informed that they had proceeded, as a patrol, with other sections to the downtown section of Halifax, headed by the Naval Detachment with band. This, was in order with instructions the Officer i/c of the party received. To make sure, I proceeded in the Station Wagon from the South Commons, along Bell Road to Sackville Street, down Sackville Street to Granville. I noted the vast crowds on the street, several carrying, what appeared to be cases of beer. These crowds were composed of civilians, navy. I did not see any Army personnel. Everyone seemed to be in a very jovial, not ugly, mood. I was greatly surprised, when proceeding along Granville Street, which at this time, had very few people on it, to notice the utter destruction of store windows and fronts. We proceeded up Buckingham Street to Brunswick Street and thence to the South Commons, arriving at approximately 1545 hrs. Shortly after our arrival back to the Assembly area, our Party returned and all troops loaded on the trucks. I personally made a survey and all troops, including those that had been permitted to come over to attend the Service, were reported present and we all returned to the barracks near the JS Magazine, arriving at approximately 1650 hrs. I did not, during all this time actually see any rioting, only the results of it. I did not see any army personnel engaged in any breaking or looting.

I would like to point out that, I definitely know for a certainty that not one member of No. 21 Coy., VGC., under my command, were in Halifax, N.S. or Dartmouth, NS during the period that rioting was in progress and were in no way connected with the destruction of public property or looting of any stores or the brewery.

During May 7th all my personnel remained in barracks at my request and on the 8th and other days when they were during the period of confinement to barracks, steps were taken and efforts were made to provide adequate entertainment in the way of moving pictures, card games and bingo.

When C.B. was lifted, all ranks were warned by me that they must adhere to the curfew law existent in Halifax NS and Dartmouth N.S. until same were lifted.

- 158d -

It is also, with a great deal of satisfaction and a good deal of pride that I can say that all ranks of my unit obeyed my wishes most explicitly and view the whole affair with mixed feelings of regret and concern.

Q. What do the troops under your command do?

A. There are general duties. They furnish the guards for the JS magazine, also furnish guards and piquets for Embarkation Pier on the arrival of boats, we have had up until Monday last one platoon stationed at Imperoyal guarding the oil refinery out there. That is the list of our duties here in this area.

.....  
H.V. Kerney, M.M., Major,  
O.C. 21 Coy., V.C. of C.

-159-

Lieut. E.G. WITHERSPOON, "A" Tp. Commander,  
19 HAA Bty., 21 AA Regt., RCA, (Princess  
Lodge) being duly sworn declares:

THIRTY-  
FOURTH-  
WITNESS

Q. Will you tell the Court how many men you had under your command on 7 May 45?

A. Seventy-eight.

Q. What plans did you make with regard to V-E Day?

A. On 7 May 45, although V-E Day had not been officially announced, we had previously arranged a smoker in the evening for the men. During the week prior to 7 May 45, arrangements had been made, with the permission of Capt. W. Purcell, O.C., 19 H.A.A. Bty., RCA, that whenever V-E Day was proclaimed there would be a proclamation from the Regimental Commander, Lt.-Col. Kent, giving the official time of peace and thanking the men for their loyal services. This would be followed by a church service at 0900 hours on V-E Day, after which the canteen would be opened and a free issue of ten (10) cases of beer would be distributed to the men of my troop and H.Q. of the Battery--a total of about 76 men. Each case of beer contained 12 bottles. A parade at the Garrison Grounds was also arranged, to which our Battery was supposed to contribute 15 men and 1 Officer, at 1330 hours. Normal passes for Non-Operational Role were to be granted, but no special passes were to be issued. These plans were all carried out on V-E Day, 8 May 45.

Q. Prior to 7 May 45, what orders or instructions from higher authority did you receive relative to V-E Day?

A. None, with the exception of the arrangements which were made up above.

Q. What is the system of passes enforced in your Troop?

A. Personnel entitled to a pass appear in Unit Orders, and they secure a permanent pass, bearing their name, at the gate, which they turn in when they return. These passes state a definite time in the evening and in the morning.

Q. Will you describe the events of 7 May 45?

A. Normal duties were carried on throughout the day until 1700 hours. The radio announcement of the end of hostilities was heard at about 1100 hours. Apart from a few cheers, everyone carried on as usual until we were finished our normal duties at 1700 hours. A unit smoker was held in the evening. Twenty-seven (27) personnel were entitled to proceed on pass to Halifax, but only a very small percentage left the camp, due mainly to the fact that a Unit smoker had been arranged and was held in the evening. There were no disturbances whatever during the day or evening.

Q. Will you describe the events of 8 May 45?

A. On Tuesday, 8 May 45, the Regimental Commander's proclamation of V-E Day was read to the men, followed by church services. One Officer and fifteen (15) OR's of the Bty. participated in a V-E Day parade to the Garrison Parade Grounds. Thirty (30) men of my troop were entitled to proceed on pass, but I don't think many went, because



-159A-

our canteen was functioning. Every effort was made to encourage our men to stay in camp; this was why the canteen was opened. At about 1700 hours, all Officers, except one per troop, were ordered to report to Regimental H.Q., and there plans were made to detail patrols to assist in the Halifax disturbances. Five Officers from the Bty. and forty (40) O.R.'s from my troop were detailed for patrol duties. Of these a number were detailed as guards at the Cold Storage Plant, between Piers "A" and "B" in Halifax from 1700 hours to 0330 hours.

Subsequent to 1700 hours, 8 May 45, all personnel in Halifax were detailed for duty as they reported to H.Q., 21 AA Regt., RCA, R.A. Park, Halifax, N.S. Those men not required were returned to the unit.

All men were accounted for by 1900 hours, with the exception of: B.22710 BQMS Newman, R. and C.115024 Gnr. Bordeleau, G., who were taken into custody by the Canadian Provost Corps in Halifax. At the present time, Gnr. Bordeleau is in the Guard House at Citadel Hill and BQMS Newman is at the 19 HAA Bty., "A" Tp. Both these soldiers are members of the 19 HAA Bty. Headquarters. As far as I know, no men of my troop were involved in any disturbances in Halifax at any time.

At the 19 HAA Bty. a special Security Guard had been mounted and was instructed to take possession of all parcels which personnel carried as they turned in. No personnel returned carrying parcels.

On Wednesday, 9 May 45, 2 Officers and 30 men were supplied for duty at Oland's Brewery from 1500 hours to 0230 hours, 10 May 45. 20 men and 1 Officer were detailed for duty at the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission from 1730 hrs. to 0200 hrs., 10 May 45. A Kit Inspection by three Officers was carried out as per Regimental instructions at 1300 hrs., but no loot was recovered. All personnel were confined to barracks.

On Thursday, 10 May 45, 1 Officer and 40 men were detailed for duty at Oland's Brewery from 1800 hrs. to 0100 hrs., 11 May 45, and 20 men and 1 Officer from 0100 hrs. to 0600 hrs., 11 May 45. Ten men and 1 Officer were on duty at the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission, at Buckingham and Granville Streets from 1730 hrs. to 0600 hrs., 11 May 45. All personnel were confined to barracks.

On Friday, 11 May 45, 1 Officer and 40 men were detailed for duty at Oland's Brewery from 1900 to 0030 hrs., 12 May 45. Personnel not on duty were still confined to barracks.

On Saturday, 12 May 45, 1 Officer and 40 men were detailed for duty at Oland's Brewery from 1900 hrs. to 0030 hrs., 13 May 45, and 20 men and 1 Officer from 0030 hrs. to 0600 hrs., 13 May 45. Personnel were still C.B.

On Sunday, 13 May 45, a few passes were issued and 20 men held in reserve for duty if required.

During May 8th, 1945, I was ordered to go around the streets of Halifax to secure Army Officers and O.R.'s who would aid in assisting in the putting down of the disturbances; and during all this time I never saw any Army personnel with any liquor or loot, or involved in any disturbances.

-160-

THIRTY-FIFTH  
WITNESS:

Col. W.D. Simpson, Officer Commanding,  
36th (Res.) Bde. Gp., M.D. No.6, having been duly  
sworn states:

Q. What was the overall strength of your command  
on 7th-8th May 1945?

A. 183 Officers; 2,382 O.R.'s

In the Halifax Area alone there are 155 officers  
and 534 O.R.'s.

Q. What is the total number of full time personnel  
under your command?

A. 9 Officers; 61 O.R.'s. In the Halifax area there  
are 5 Officers and 34 O.R.'s.

Q. What was the approximate number of your full time  
personnel out of barracks, not on duty, in the  
Halifax - Dartmouth area on 7th and 8th May?

A. I might explain that all my personnel are out  
on subsistence.

On the morning of the 7th May - none

On the afternoon of the 7th May - none

In the evening after 1800 hrs - 2 officers and 21 OR's

On the 8th May:

In the morning - 2 officers and 21 O.R.'s

In the evening - do

In the afternoon - do

Q. What personal knowledge have you of personnel under  
your command having been involved in disturbances  
on the 7th-8th May 1945?

A. We have made a thorough check and found no one took  
part in the disturbances. Nothing has been advised  
or reported to me.

Q. What instructions did you receive from higher  
authority relating to V-E Day?

A. On the 7th May at about 1645 hrs, we received a  
letter from District Headquarters advising that  
evening and the following day would be a holiday.  
This has been filed as exhibit "B".

Q. Were you authorized to allow Reserve Army personnel  
to wear uniforms on V-E Day?

A. Yes, I have a copy of letter from the D.O.C. giving  
authority to wear uniforms on V-E Day.

Q. What instructions did you issue with regard to wearing  
of uniforms on V-E Day?

A. That Reserve Army personnel may wear uniforms if  
participating in parades. I produce copies of the  
orders received and orders issued. These are examined  
by the Court and filed as exhibit "TTT".

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you  
relating to V-E Day prior to midnight 6th-7th May?

-161-

A. None

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on the 7th May relating to V-E Day?

A. On 7th May after receiving this message, we cancelled the Reserve Army parades which had been planned for Monday night. I gave instructions to the chief caretaker of the Armouries to lock all doors. I checked and found that I had 11 vehicles that might be useful in the case of emergency and I detailed 11 full time drivers to "stand by" and consider themselves on call. I detailed my Brigade Major to return to Bde. H.Q. at about 1930 hrs and remain and be on hand in the event of anything turning up.

Q. What orders did you issue and arrangements made by you on the 8th May?

A. None, only to carry on with the orders as of 7th May.

Q. What orders did you issue and arrangements made by you on the 9th May?

A. The same orders still stood.

Q. Did you see any disturbances down town on the 7th-8th May?

A. I wasn't down town.

Q. What precautions did you take prior to 7th-8th May in order to insure that discipline was maintained on V-E Day?

A. None

Q. What program was planned for Reserve Army troops under your command on V-E Day?

A. Nothing special in the Halifax Area, but in some small towns Reserve Army took part in local parades and celebrations.

Q. Do you consider that there were any parades in the Halifax Area on the 7th-8th May to which your instructions filed as exhibit "TTT" would apply?

A. There were no such parades.

Q. Do you know whether or not Reserve Army personnel under your command in the Halifax Area actually wore their uniforms on 7th-8th May?

A. There was no authority granted but individuals might have worn them

Q. When you ordered the main doors of the Armouries in Halifax locked, what people had access to them?

A. Any of our full time staff, our caretakers and Reserve Army personnel returning to their rooms would not have been stopped. The Messes in the Armouries were available but were not used. The doors were locked for the purposes of keeping any unauthorized persons out of the Armouries.

Q. Did any of the personnel under your command participate in the Thanksgiving Service on 8th May?

-162-

A. No

Q. Will you tell us what you know concerning the using of the miniature rifle range in the Armouries by City Police for prisoners arrested by them on 7th-8th May?

A. Lt.-Col. North, AA & QMG, M.D. 6, phoned me at 1800 hrs on the 9th and told me they required additional accommodation to take of personnel arrested by civil police. We allotted two bays in the miniature rifle range and that night we had 151 prisoners placed there. We had no responsibility in connection with their bedding, clothing, medical attention, etc, but we took precaution in asking the Provost to supply a guard of two men at the main gate.

Q. Were there any particular precautions taken with regard to fire while the civilian personnel had the use of part of the Armouries?

A. It was carefully watched by the chief caretaker and by one of my staff officers. I was in the building every night.

-163-

THIRTY-SIXTH  
WITNESS:

Major B.A. Snow, No. 6 Ordnance Depot,  
R.C.O.C., M.D. No.6, having been duly sworn states:

- Q. What are your functions and duties in M.D. No.6?
- A. I am employed at the New Wellington Barracks as Ordnance Officer and Assistant to the District Ordnance Officer. I am also Vice-President of the New Wellington Barracks Officers Mess.
- Q. What personal knowledge have you of incidents or disturbances which occurred on the 7th-8th May 45 and of any events which occurred in the New Wellington Barracks Officers Mess?
- A. I have no personal knowledge. I was on leave. I left Halifax on Friday evening, 4th May, and returned to Halifax, Wednesday 9th May.
- Q. What do you know concerning the collection of beer and liquor from Army personnel at New Wellington Barracks on the 8th-9th May?
- A. On Wednesday morning, on returning to my duties, I became aware of the fact that certain spirits and beer had been relieved from men at New Wellington Barracks. On becoming aware of the fact that a certain amount of the liquor was of high quality brand, and which we had not been able to obtain for use in the Mess, and having read of various damage done to the Liquor Stores, I felt we would not be in a position to purchase liquor for a considerable time, it struck me, on behalf of the Mess, that if I could make a suitable arrangement to purchase some of this confiscated liquor from the N.S.L.C. it would be a good thing to keep the Mess stocked. I accordingly approached my O.C., Lt.-Col. Ketcheson, and stated my ~~advice~~ <sup>advice</sup> and he granted me permission to follow up the subject. I phoned Mr. Mahon, the Liquor Commissioner for the province of Nova Scotia on Wednesday morning, 9th May, and stated the circumstances of the confiscated liquor, which Col. Ketcheson had given orders should be returned to the Liquor Commission that morning. I asked him whether or not I could arrange a purchase of certain bottles of this liquor through the Liquor Commission. Mr. Mahon gave the subject some thought and stated that he was not sure of his position in this regard and would contact other authorities and let me know. Some 30 minutes later, Mr. Mahon called me by telephone while in my office and stated it would be in order for me to make a purchase of certain bottles now in the possession of the No.6 Ord. Depot, for use of the Officers Mess, New Wellington Barracks.

I asked Mr. Mahon what arrangements I should make for the delivery of the bottles to be purchased by the Mess. Mr. Mahon stated that they were in no position, due to disturbances, to make delivery

-164-

or hand me transactions insofar as the actual payment was concerned, and instructed me to select what liquor I wished to purchase for the Mess, separated from the total of the confiscated liquor at New Wellington Barracks and undertake to deliver same to the Mess myself on behalf of the Liquor Commission. Together with Major Smith and Capt. Deroche, members of my Unit, we went to that part of the Ordnance Depot where the confiscated liquor was under lock and key and I proceeded to separate from the entire lot such brands as I thought suitable for the use of the Mess. The entire lot which had been confiscated was 255 bottles of various wines, beers and hard liquor, and from this I separated 41 bottles in all for the use of the Mess.

I produce list of hard liquor and beer confiscated on the 8th and 9th May and which was placed in No. 6 Ord. Dept for safekeeping, as well as list showing bottles of hard liquor purchased by the Officers Mess, New Wellington Barracks on 9th May from the N.S.L.C. and delivered by me on behalf of the N.S.L.C. to the Officers Mess, New Wellington Barracks. This is examined by the Court and filed as exhibit "RRR".

Q. What relation did this purchase of liquor by the Officers Mess, New Wellington Barracks, have with your quota?

A. I assumed the N.S.L.C. would deduct it from our quota.

On delivery to the Officers Mess, New Wellington Barracks of bottles purchased by it, the balance was then taken to the rear door of the Liquor Commission on Granville street by myself, Major Smith and Capt. Deroche of my Unit, and in the presence of two representatives of the Liquor Commission, the total list of the confiscated liquor was produced and they in turn checked the bottles taken there and the difference of 41 bottles purchased by the Mess Committee was checked against the total. The representative of the Liquor Commission signed a receipt in full for 255 bottles which had been confiscated. I have attached a certified true copy of this receipt to exhibit "RRR". The following day, I went to the Liquor Commission, accompanied by Sgt. Finney of the Officers Mess, to make payment for the liquor now in possession of the Officers Mess.

I was informed that they were not in a position to accept payments and that Mr. Mahon could rely on me that at the first available opportunity a payment would be made. I kept in contact with the Liquor Commission and on Monday, 21st May, I was advised that certain stores were open for business and that payment could then be made. A cheque was drawn forthwith on the Royal Bank of Canada at the Corner of Agricola and Allan Sts. for the sum of \$171.30, payable to the N.S.L.C. as payment in full for the 41 bottles sold to the Officers Mess, New Wellington Barracks. This payment for the full list at retail prices, according to the brands which were purchased.

-165-

Q. What there any written agreement of sale or correspondence?

A. No. Purely verbal over the telephone.

Q. Was this confirmed in writing at any time?

A. No

P A G E

- 166 -

THIRTY  
SEVENTH  
WITNESS

Lt.-Col. G.L. Kent, O.C., 21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A., C.A.

being duly sworn, states:

- Q. How long have you been Officer Commanding this Regiment?
- A. Since 18 August 1944.
- Q. I understand you come under command of the Fortress Commander.
- A. That is correct, sir. Normally I receive all my instructions and orders through Fortress.
- Q. What was the strength of your command as of May 7th 45?
- A. Sixty Officers and 1113 Other Ranks all in the Halifax Area.
- Q. What were the number of all your ranks out of barracks on the evening of 7th May 45?
- A. Twenty-six Officers, 202 Other ranks. There were none out of barracks in the morning or the afternoon of the 7th.
- Q. What were the numbers of all your ranks out of barracks in the morning, afternoon and evening of May 8th 45?
- A. Morning - nil. Afternoon 25 Officers, 244 Other Ranks. Evening 12 Officers, 253 Other Ranks. At 1830 hours I ordered all ranks to be C.B.'d. Practically all of our men were off the streets, having been called in, by 2030 hours. My adjutant had received a message from Fortress at 1745 hours to have all personnel removed from the streets by our officers.
- Q. Have you any personal knowledge of the disturbances of the 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. None directly.
- Q. What has been advised or reported to you concerning personnel under your command having been involved in the disturbances on the 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. Two men were arrested by civic police and later sentenced.
- Q. What are their names?
- A. They were: D611433 Gnr. Gervais, J.L. and B44375 Bdr. Marshall, G.S. These men were brought before Stipendiary Magistrate Murray in Dartmouth, damage to property and were each sentenced to six months in the county jail. There were seven other cases, two of which I dealt with and five remanded for court-martial.
- Q. What were the charges of the two disposed of summarily?
- A. One had two ornamental jewellery brooches of a value of about \$3. each. He had been drinking and was not in



possession of reasoning facilities. He casually handed them over to a C.W.A.C., with whom he is slightly acquainted, and she turned them in. So the connection through her was established. He claimed that these articles had been handed to him by an unknown sailor as he was walking on the street. I considered his act as unintentional irresponsibility. His name is: L-104632 Gnr. Stallard, J., 18th Battery R.C.A. I gave him 14 days C.B. and 8 days forfeiture of pay.

The second case was of: F-600114 Gnr. Stevens, G.J., who was charged with breaking and entering in search of plunder, this charge had been placed by the Provost Corps who apprehended him on the street in possession of parcels containing certain items of merchandise, which upon evidence produced by the soldier were shown to be in his proper possession and the charge was therefore dismissed.

- Q. Were any personnel under your command, other than those that you have mentioned, found in possession of merchandise arising out of the disturbances on the 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. I file a report covering the question of merchandise found around R.A. Park, South Barracks and Citadel Hill and on certain of my personnel. This is examined by the Court and filed as exhibit "III"
- Q. What instructions or orders were received by you from higher relating to V-E Day?
- A. I produce copies of all such instructions received from Fortress. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "JJJ".
- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you prior to midnight May 6th - 7th 45 relating to V-E Day?
- A. I sent out a proclamation on 4th May to be read on V-E Day. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "KKK". I sent a detachment of 75 men and 2 officers for V-E Day Parade. I also ordered detachments supplied to man 4 - 18 pounder guns which were indicated to be required by the V-E Day salute.
- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on May 7th 45 relating to V-E Day?
- A. I produce a copy of these orders. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "LLL". No extra passes were permitted, the usual passes only. Previously to May 7th Battery commanders had been authorized to issue free beer on the Mens' Canteens on V-E Day at their own discretion, up to approximately one bottle per man. Beer was issued to men on the evening of the 7th to all batteries other than the 14th Ack Ack Battery. Batteries were warned to take no action regarding V-E Day celebrations until officially advised. All vehicles were grounded from 1500 hrs on the 7th May 45.

PAGE  
- 168 -

- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on May 8th 45 other than routine?
- A. I produce a copy of these orders. This is examined by the Court and filed as exhibit "MM".
- Q. When did you actually send out your Q1418?
- A. At 1095 hours, although we had similar messages from Fortress on the 7th we did not send out until 8th because it was considered better for the discipline of the unit, also because we had no official announcement that the 7th was V-E Day. Following instructions from Fortress at 1745 hours 8th May all officers were called to R.H.Q. and ordered to circulate through downtown streets urging army personnel to return to barracks at once.½

A verbal message was received through Fortress H.Q. at approximately 1815 hrs. requiring the Regiment to supply 15 Officers and 120 men to the Canadian Provost Corps at 1930 hrs. This personnel was supplied and remained with the Provost Corps until 0300 hrs 9th May 45. The Regimental personnel on pass were withdrawn by verbal message in very short time and C.B.'d shortly before 1830 hrs. until further notice.

- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on May 9th and thereafter, other than routine?
- A. All passes in the Regiment were cancelled at 0004 hrs. by formal message.

At 1130 hrs. a complete kit inspection was ordered to be carried out by all units under my command. The results of the kit inspection was: finding no loot. I have already filed a list of the merchandise found in or near the R.A. Park, South Barracks and Citadel Hill, in which area we are, together with other units. The list has been included in Exhibit "III".

I file a list of messages which were sent out by me. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "000".

Orders were received from Fortress that 12 officers and 300 men were to stand by for assistance to the Provost Corps.

At 1450 hrs. 100 men were requested for immediate dispatch to Oland's Brewery and 200 men to Cold Storage Plant, which was done.

At 1830 hrs. 50 men were ordered to report to the 37 Provost Coy.

Similar arrangements were made on the 10th to the 13th, inclusive.

On the 14th all personnel withdrawn and sent back to Units at 0100 hours.

PAGE  
- 169 -

- Q. Did you personally see any of the disturbances on 8th May 45?
- A. No sir.
- Q. Did you take any special precautions 8th to maintain discipline other than you have mentioned, on V-E Day?
- A. I did not consider it necessary due to the high standards of discipline maintained in my Regiment as exemplified by the fact that over a period of 6 months previous to May 1st 45 there were only 37 cases of punishment awarded for offences other than A.W.L.
- Q. Have you any reports from your battery Commanders concerning the events that took place prior too and including V-E Day?
- A. Yes, I produce these reports. These are examined by the Court and filed as exhibit "PPP".

- 170 -

THIRTY-  
EIGHTH  
WITNESS

Major A.C. Sinclair, O.C. 1st Halifax Coast Regt., R.C.A.  
C.A., M.D.No.6.

- Q. How long have you been commanding this unit?
- A. Since approximately 1st May 45. I come under the command of Halifax Fortress and receive my instructions as to operation and administration from there.
- Q. What was the strength of your command as of 7th May 45?
- A. 19 Officers and 584 Other Ranks in the Regiment and 11 Officers and 177 Other Ranks at York.
- Q. What is your estimate of the number of your all ranks out of barracks not on duty, in Halifax, N.S. and Dartmouth N.S. on the 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. On the whole of the 7th and 8th May 45 about 40 of my personnel were on pass. I might explain that my unit is still on operational duty, this would account with the normal number on pass. All my personnel are stationed outside Halifax city but within the Halifax area.
- Q. Have you any personal knowledge of the disturbances on the 7th and 8th May involving Army personnel?
- A. None sir.
- Q. What instances do you know of having been advised or reported to you of the disturbances on the 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. There were three cases. One was F65957 Gnr. Baginski, F. and the other D164209 Gnr. Kurolock, both of whom were reported A.W.L. 8th May 45, were charged before the civil courts in Halifax with being in possession of stolen property, Baginski was sentenced to 4 years in Dorchester Penitentiary, and Kurolock to 30 days in jail. The details of these cases have been filed by Lt.Col. E.P. Flowers, Acting Fortress Commander, as part of Exhibit "WW".
- There was one other case of the three, K3650 Gnr. Barkhouse, P.S. who was reported by No. 6 District Depot for being in possession of certain articles such as razor blades, pipes etc., on the 8th May in Halifax. This case was investigated but it was found that no charge could be proven that he was improperly in possession of stolen goods. So no charge was laid against him.
- Q. What instructions or orders did you receive from higher authority relating to V-E Day?
- A. I produce copies of all orders received by me from higher authority as well as copies of orders issued by me. This is examined by the Court and marked as exhibit "QQQ".
- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you prior to midnight 6th - 7th May 45 relating to V.E. Day?
- A. Nil.

- 171 -

- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you prior to May 7th 45 relating to V-E Day?
- A. These are included in exhibit "QQQ".
- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on May 8th 45 other than routine?
- A. All troops were C.B.'d. None other than calling out a guard of 1 officer and 25 O.R.'s to mount guard at Melville Island magazine.
- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on May 9th and thereafter, other than routine?
- A. All troops were C.B.'d and all personnel were searched on return to Forts. There was a muster roll call of all troops on the 9th at 1200 hrs.
- Q. Will you give a description of your personal movements with regard to the disturbances on 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. I was at York Redoubt until called out, approximately 6 miles outside Halifax.
- Q. Will you describe what you did on 7th May 45?
- A. On May 7th at approximately 1100 hrs., after being notified by Halifax Fortress that V.E. Day was official, had a general assembly of all troops at York Redoubt. Addressed same stating that war in Europe was over but manning as before. Attended short service conducted by "Unit Padre" on cessation of hostilities - approximately 80% of personnel attended voluntarily. Attended gathering in canteen and then lunch. Monday P.M. and Tuesday was spent in Fort Area watching different sports etc. Tuesday at approximately 1800 hrs. dispatched one officer and several W.O's to town, to try and send few troops we had on pass back to barracks. At approximately 1920 hrs., took 54 O.R.'s and 6 Officers to report at Provost H.Q.'s., in accordance with instructions from Fortress H.Q. Guard (unarmed) of about 20 men were placed at C.W.A.C. Barracks Wellington - Olands Brewery - Pier 27. Returned with personnel at approximately 0400 hrs. Wednesday.
- Q. Did you see any of the disturbances on 7th May yourself?
- A. Not the disturbances sir. I just saw personnel returning to their homes and wandering through the streets after 2000 hrs on the 8th, I was called into town 8 o'clock in the evening of the 8th May 45.
- Q. Did you see any army personnel actively engaged in breaking windows or looting or carrying loot?
- A. Not army personnel.
- Q. Did you see anyone else carrying ~~loot~~ unwrapped merchandise?
- A. I saw civilians carrying merchandise, I saw some sailors carrying liquor.
- Q. Did you see many?
- A. A few.

- 172 -

- Q. What precautions did you take on the 7th and 8th May to insure the maintenance of discipline among you personnel?
- A. None sir. I did not consider it necessary. I sent out orders that it was to be treated as Sunday or a holiday and that manning was to be continued, work outside manning would cease and the only difference would be that sport would be carried on or they could do what they wished in the afternoon. There were 40 of my personnel from the full regiment out of York Redoubt.

- 173 -

THIRTY-  
NINTH

WITNESS

Major R. A. Young, O.C. No. 6 District Coy, R.C.A.S.C.,  
being duly sworn, states:

Q. What was your total strength on 7th May, 1945?

A. 334.

Q. What is the approximate number of all ranks out of barracks, not on duty, in Halifax and Dartmouth, on 7th and 8th May?

A. On the 7th in the morning, nil. In the afternoon, 24, in the evening, 100.

On the 8th in the morning, 10, in the afternoon, 50 and in the evening, 5, who were all in by 2000 hours.

Q. What personnel under your command were involved in the disturbances of 7th and 8th May?

A. There were no personnel directly involved in the disturbances down town on the 7th and 8th.

H.23673 Pte. Dume, L. J. was arrested by the Provost on the morning of 9th May, and charged with selling liquor in his quarters at New Wellington Barracks. On the 17th May the accused was released without prejudice to re-arrest pending the return from furlough of a witness. He was charged under Section 40 AA. The evidence available now is conflicting.

Q. Was any liquor found in your barracks on 8th May?

A. At about 2000 hours 8 May, R.S.M. Boot, G.S. and Sgt. Tozer, M.J. acting on my orders, searched the quarters and all the area of Glacis Barracks. They found considerable liquor, but none was found on any one person. This was completely inventoried and placed under lock and guard. It was later returned to the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission. I have been advised that at least 90% of this liquor was passed through fences of the compound by passers-by.

Q. What instructions or orders were received by you from higher authority relating to V-E Day, prior to V-E Day?

A. Previous to V-E Day, on a date I can't remember, a meeting of the various Officers Commanding in the Halifax Area was called by Col Duncanson, Col i/c Admin, in his office, to discuss the problems of V-E Day celebrations. Col. Duncanson was in the chair. The consensus of the meeting was that each Unit be left largely on its own; the aim being to keep the personnel off the streets as much as possible without enforcing a strict C.B.

A teletype message, which has already been filed as Exhibit "B", was received from H.Q. on the morning of 8th May, but the purport of this message had been received previously, at about 1400 hours on the 7th.

- 174 -

Q. What orders and arrangements were made by you prior to midnight May 6th, relating to V-E Day?

A. Prior to V-E Day it was ordered that 12 guards would be needed to watch the compound. All keys would be removed from the ignition locks of vehicles and hidden in the glove compartment (This was necessary so that our own drivers could move the vehicles in case of fire). In our area it is too dangerous to immobilize a vehicle. Orders were given that the Supply Depot personnel would have to be on duty; forty drivers detailed to stand by. No vehicle was to move without authority from D.S. & T.O. or H.Q. M.D. 6. Ten ambulances were ordered for special duties. All vehicles to be provided with a spare driver.

Q. What orders were issued by you on May 7th relating to V-E Day?

A. Orders were carried out as previously detailed in an orderly manner and without incident. All were confined to barracks until the noon meal. After the noon meal, each one who wanted to was given one bottle of beer. The Sergeants Mess remained open for those not on duty until 2245 hours. The call for details was considerably increased and more men were held on duty. (To our surprise very few left the compound. The guard at the gate reported that only about twenty left the area). All movement of transport was Ok'd by myself or the M.T. Officer.

In the evening the details were considerably increased in number and it was decided to allow all those not on duty to leave if they so desired.

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on May 8th, other than routine?

A. The morning was without incident. A careful check was maintained on all transport details. Most of the men were on duty, and those who were not nearly all remained in barracks.

In the early afternoon the details moved evenly and without incident. Several asked permission to go to the Divine Service. About thirty, all told, went.

When the curfew was announced the men not on duty returned in an orderly manner, and were all in or accounted for by 2000 hours. There were no awl's.

I took special precaution on the 8th with regard to the Water Transport, ordering all boats on our charge away from the Wharf. They spent the night at the R.C.A.F. Marine Section Dock. At about 2300 hours on the 8th I visited King's Wharf and found everything in order.

On the afternoon of the 8th, I authorized 10 lorries to proceed to the Provost, and 8 ambulances to stand by for emergency.



- 175 -

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on May 9th other than routine?

A. None. The company was operating in an orderly manner.

Q. Were there any other incidents of breaches of discipline involving your personnel on the 7th and 8th?

A. There was a little hilarity and about four drunken men on Monday night in the quarters. On Tuesday, 8th May, two men had to be forcibly put to bed. Otherwise the only signs of hilarity were twelve 10" x 12" broken panes of glass which are being replaced.

Q. Did you receive any instructions regarding the relaxation of discipline during the V-E Day period, on the 7th and 8th May?

A. No.

(R. A. YOUNG) Major,

O.C. No. 6 Dist Coy, R.C.A.S.C.

- 176 -

FORTIETH

WITNESS

Lt-Col. Agnew, E.A., O.C. No. 6 Coy. R.C.E.M.E., and  
D.E.M.E. M.D. No. 6.  
being duly sworn, states:

- Q. How long have you been D.E.M.E. and O.C. No. 6 Coy., R.C.E.M.E.?
- A. Since Sept. 1944.
- Q. Your 2 1/2, Major A.W. Harrison has provided the court with information concerning the activities of the personnel of No. 6 Coy., R.C.E.M.E., during the 7th and 8th May and subsequently thereto, during your absence on duty from Halifax. What did you see yourself concerning the disturbances in Halifax on the 7th and 8th May 45?
- Q. On 1st May I issued a warning order to all the detachments of No. 6 Coy., R.C.E.M.E., copy of which has already been filed as exhibit "AAA".

At approximately 1000 hours on May 7th I had the Halifax Detachment fall in on parade and spoke to them. I warned them that there were duties to carry out, that it was not a day of celebration but a day of Thanksgiving and that there would be special duties, probably for the next two days. The Padre then said a prayer and we detailed the guards, skeleton crews and break-down crews and broke the remainder off. There were 359 all ranks on parade and approximately 60 were detailed for duty.

On the evening of the 7th May at approximately 2030 hours I received a call that there had been a vehicle accident 20 miles outside Halifax. This was handled, probably by the breakdown crew.

At 1045 hours on the 8th there was a parade at New Wellington Barracks, all ranks were on parade, 359. They were marched to the workshop and Major Harrison spoke to the men. He detailed the change of security guards and duties and the unit was broken off. The majority of the men stayed around the dry canteen most of the morning -- listening to the radio.

The platoon that was detailed for the drum-head service was marched back to barracks by their platoon officer and dress, clothing and equipment was inspected. On the afternoon of the 8th we had 2 officers and 75 Other Ranks and our pipe band of 10 other ranks on parade in addition to that we had double security guards and in-line piquet, break-down crews and skeleton crews detailed. I went to the Drum-Head service and returned to New Wellington Barracks approximately 1645 hours. I received a telephone message at approx. 1700 hrs from Major Harrison that all officers of the unit were to proceed downtown and get our troops <sup>back</sup> to barracks.

I placed one officer on telephone duty, one to parade the men coming into barracks and the remainder proceeded downtown in vehicles by two's.

I went with Lieut. Telepson directly to the Agricola St. Liquor Store.

- 177 -

I saw at the Agricola St. Liquor store a large mob. It was composed of mainly civilians, some sailors and approx. 6 soldiers. I ordered the soldiers to return to barracks immediately, all of whom did so except one, he was a Sgt. and was carrying a bottle of liquor. I got into the jeep and called to him, I placed him in the jeep and drove him to New Wellington Barracks. On questioning I found that he was a Sgt. of the Reserve army and that he wished to go home. He was apparently sober so I confiscated his liquor and allowed him to go home. He was in uniform, but I did not ascertain his name. I returned to the Agricola St. Liquor Store with Lieut. Thompson and saw a civilian trying to break open the cash register. There were two members of the Provost Corps there and no other soldiers that I saw. We, the Provost and I, took the cash register, placed it in the Provost truck and I ordered them to drive it to the Provost Barracks. There was a Shore Patrol of approx. 10 sailors and a Petty Officer standing on the outskirts of the crowd. The crowd were looting the dry goods store next to the liquor store. There were about 6 sailors in this Dry Goods store. I got the Petty Officer of the Shore Patrol and went in to the dry goods store and removed the looters from it -- we turned out the looters from the store. The civilian crowd were very threatening and I stood at the door of this store as the shore patrol were doing the work, and the civilians shouted to each other "Didn't I know that the war was over -- and threats to come in and get it".  
-- I don't know what the word was.

Lieut. Thompson and I returned to barracks and got a truck with 6 men there and the remainder of the evening we patrolled the streets picking up soldiers, C.W.A.C. personnel, and some sailors. We patrolled Agricola St. as far as the Armouries and back up to Windsor St. until the area was clear of service personnel.

About 1900 hours on my return to Wellington Barracks on one occasion someone drew my attention to a truck belonging to the R.C.E. which was parked next to their hut in New Wellington Barracks. The driver was sitting in the seat and the cab beside him was full of loot. The driver was an R.C.E. soldier sitting in the drivers seat and the seat beside him was filled with a considerable amount of loot. There was clothing, ladies boots, sheep lined boots, there were slippers and other articles. Capt. Milne of District Headquarters was there and I told him to keep the loot and I ordered the soldier under close arrest. I put the soldier in the Guard Room and I informed the O.C. of the Engineers. He was sober, this soldier under arrest, and he told me that this stuff had been given to him. I later informed an officer of the R.C.E. in New Wellington Barracks Mess and called Major ~~XXXX~~ Dunn of No. 6 Coy. R.C.E. that one R.C.E. soldier was under close arrest in New Wellington Barracks and that I would be prepared to give evidence against him. I discovered subsequently that this soldier was D640409 Sapper LeDuc, concerning whom a Summary of Evidence is now being taken.

At approx. 2030 hours at the South Gate at New Wellington Barracks I saw a soldier attempting to ~~XX~~ leave the barracks with a kit bag. He was one of my ~~XXXX~~ men. I searched him

-178-

and found approx. 12 bottles of wine and liquor which I confiscated and put under safekeeping. He was Craftsman Laird. He was drunk and later when he was paraded to me informed me that he had not been out of barracks since he was dismissed from the Drumhead service parade. This evidence was confirmed. He informed me that he had bought the liquor he had, from a soldier of another unit, unknown, and had paid \$20. for it. As he was an old soldier with the Military Medal and a very good character I charged him with drunkenness.

At approx. 2030 hrs. at the gate of New Wellington Barracks I saw a soldier walking down Almon St. carrying a kit bag with his battle dress bulging. He was wearing R.C.E. patches. I took him to New Wellington Barracks Guard Room searched him and found some loot in the battle dress, including valuable hair clippers or electric razors. I ordered the guard to ~~XXX~~ lock up the loot and placed the man under close arrest. I don't know his name. On the morning of the 9th I proceeded to New Wellington Barracks Guard Room to see what disposition had been made of this man. The Guard told me he had been released because he was sober. When I inquired as to the loot he said he didn't know where it was -- it had disappeared. I placed this soldier, who I believed to be the guard I gave the man too, under close arrest and in a cell. Capt. Clarke of the O.C. of the Employment Company was with me. I dictated evidence and turned it over to Capt. Clark to deal with this man. I don't know what disposition was made of this guard or the man.

I might explain that we turned over a number of drunken soldiers to the New Wellington Barracks Guard Room later in the evening, and then took approx. one truck load to the District Depot. They were not seriously drunk, mildly drunk, and were locked up for their own protection. There were approx. 15 men in the truck load.

Those are all the incidents involving army personnel that I saw on the 7th and 8th May 45. I would like to say that there were very few soldiers on the street during the whole of the evening of the 8th from 1700 hrs. until the 9th. We picked up few soldiers, none of them seriously drunk or any of them misbehaving themselves.

- Q. What have you to say generally concerning the composition of any crowds which you saw on the 8th May in the vicinity of places where breaking or looting was going on?
- A. As I proceeded down Almon St. to Agricola at approx. 1700 hrs. there were large numbers of people streaming up Almon St., many of them carrying liquor. They were mostly civilians a few sailors -- from which I recovered some cases of liquor, there were no army personnel. I did not see any army personnel on Almon St. On Agricola St. in the vicinity of the liquor store there was a mob of approx. 500 people. I could say that in that mob there might be 50 sailors and a few air force and not more than 6 soldiers and the rest were civilians. Many of the civilians were very drunk. On the other streets I patrolled I didn't see any large mobs or numbers. There were numbers of people on the streets a few small fights going on and people standing around and watching but no real disturbances.

- 179 -

- Q. Did you see any soldiers involved in fights?
- A. I saw no soldiers involved in fights.
- Q. In the crowd at the Agricola St. were there many teen-aged youths among the civilian crowds?
- A. Yes sir. The mob that threatened us when the Shore Patrol and myself were clearing the dry goods store were lead by teen-aged youths -- young teen aged civilian youths.
- Q. Did they have any instruments or weapons?
- A. No sir.
- Q. Where did you see the army Provost working on the 8th May?
- A. The only Provost I actually had anything to do with were the two Lance Corporals that were in a truck in front of the Agricola St. Liquor store. They and I confiscated the cash register and took it away. I saw a few Provost Vehicles patrolling while I was downtown -- they were patrolling the streets. I saw them picking up troops.
- Q. Did Will you tell us what you saw of the civilian police downtown while you were down town on the evening of the 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. The only civilian police I saw were down on Barrington St. after 2200 hours in the vicinity of the street fires. They were keeping the crowds away from the fire. The streets were fairly clear at this time. There were also these A.R.P. people on duty from approx. 2200 hrs. on the 8th. They were on the streets on duty and there were many of them.

- 180 -

**FORTY-  
FIRST  
WITNESS:**

Major J.J. Frappe, O.C. Trainedd  
Soldier Company at A.14 C.I.T.C., Aldershot Military  
Camp, Aldershot, N.S., having been duly sworn, states:

A. Are you prepared to give the Court certain information  
on behalf of the C.O. Aldershot Military Camp, which  
has been requested of him?

A. Yes.

Q. Will you inform the court how many of the personnel  
all ranks of Aldershot Military Camp were out of  
barracks not on duty in Halifax and Dartmouth on  
the 7th and 8th May 45?

A. On the 7th May, 25; on the 8th May, 16.

Q. Will you tell the Court how many of the personnel  
of Aldershot Military Camp were involved in distur-  
bances in Halifax and Dartmouth on the 7th and 8th  
May 45?

A. Up to the present, no reports.

Q. What instructions did you receive from the O.C.  
Aldershot Military Camp relating to V.E. Day, prior  
to V.E. Day?

A. Prior to V.E. Day conferences had been held with  
the officers and C.O. to determine what ceremonies  
should be held. We run normal conferences on  
Tuesdays and Fridays, but I cannot tell you on  
what days these questions were discussed. On the  
6th May my C.O. called us together and laid on  
certain orders and arrangements. They included  
confinement to camp of all officers and NCOs on  
V.E. Day. I believe we received order the following  
day declaring a holiday. The 7th May 45 was passed  
as a normal training day.

The 8th May 45 was a holiday and in the morning, a  
service was held at 1000 hrs. This was as strong as  
possible parade. That afternoon the Training Centre  
paraded from Camp through town to Kentville and back  
to Camp. This parade entailed two hours work.

That evening the troops were permitted to walk out,  
but arrangements had been made to hold a sing-song  
for those who wished to remain in Camp. Things  
having gone quietly the night of the 7th, the C.O.  
detailed an officers and NCOs piquet to remain in  
Camp ready to handle any emergency.

Q. The C.B. that was imposed, was for officers and NCOs  
only?

A. Yes sir, but it was modified. The C.O. told us he  
would permit certain officers and NCOs to go out if  
they wished.

**PORTY-  
SECOND  
WITNESS:**

Major H.L. Nixon, Staff Captain  
H.Q. 1 Trg Bde Gp, Debert, N.S., having been duly  
sworn, states:

- Q. How many personnel all ranks of No. 1 Trg Bde Gp, Debert, N.S. were in Halifax or Dartmouth, out of barracks not on duty 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. On the 7th May 45, seven; on the 8th May, five.
- Q. Will you give these similar figures for No. 2 Transit Camp, Debert, N.S.
- A. On the 7th May 45, seven; on the 8th May, seven.
- Q. Will you give these similar figures for the Camp Administrative Staff of Debert Military Camp?
- A. On the 7th May 45, one; on the 8th May, one.
- Q. How many of the personnel all ranks of No. 2 Transit Camp, Debert, N.S. were involved in disturbances of the peace in Halifax and Dartmouth, on the 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. None.
- Q. How many of the personnel all ranks of No. 1 Trg Bde Gp, Debert, N.S. were involved in disturbances of the peace in Halifax and Dartmouth, on the 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. None.
- Q. The Administrative Staff, Debert, N.S.?
- A. Again none.
- Q. What instructions or orders did you receive from District H.Q., M.D. 6 relating to V.E. Day, prior to midnight 6-7 May 45?
- A. So far as I know, none.
- Q. Did you received teletype message sent from District H.Q. dated 1445 hrs on the 7th May 45 which has been produced as Exhibit "B"?
- A. We did.
- Q. When?
- A. It reached the Trg Bde Gp H.Q. at Debert at 1545 hrs on the 7th May.
- Q. What plans and arrangements were made by No. 1 Trg Bde Gp relating to V.E. Day?
- A. We drew up a definite program in which the personnel of No. 2 Transit Camp and Camp Administrative Staff joined with the No. 1 Trg Bde Gp. I produce the following instructions originated at 1800 hrs 3 May 45. This is examined by the court and filed as Exhibit "JTT".

I believe a copy of this instruction was sent to District H.Q. in either the mail of 3rd mail or the mail of the day of 4 May.

Q. Were these instructions carried out?

A. As far as possible, the difficulty being that there was no official announcement of V.E. Day, the men were not confined to barracks on the afternoon of 7th May, one-third being permitted to go to Truro. They were confined to barracks from tattoo of 7th May to 1600 hrs on the 8th, when again one-third were permitted to go to Truro.

Q. Why were they confined to barracks from tattoo on 7th May?

A. That was to ensure that the personnel involved in the camp celebrations were on hand.

Q. Why on the 8th?

A. Merely that they would be readily available to take part in the ceremonies.

Q. Did you receive any instructions from District H.Q. on the 8th May relative to confinement to barracks?

A. Not as such sir. We received a call for a force to be sent to Halifax and immediately following that every man in Camp was officially C.B'd. by the C.O. but we received no instructions from higher authority. No instructions that I personally know of.



FORTY-  
THIRD  
WITNESS:

Lt-Colonel J.A. MacLellan,  
District Chaplain (RC), M.D. 6, having been  
duly sworn, states:

Q. Will you kindly tell us what you personally saw  
or know concerning the disturbances on the 7th -  
8th May 45 in Halifax?

A. I did not know anything of the disturbances on the  
7th. On the morning of the 8th May a man told me  
about the disturbances of the evening of the 7th.  
I didn't take the thing very seriously and thought  
it exaggerated.

We were preparing for the service that was to take  
place and later came over to the service. During  
the service the Mayor and other men appeared on the  
scene and were discussing some matter with the  
Admiral and we felt something was up. There was  
considerable discussion and we noticed the Provost  
making their way downtown. After the service was  
over Col Cox, District Chaplain (P) suggested that  
we go downtown and see what was happening.

We went down as far as Hollis Street and we noticed  
a tremendous crowd, and met people carrying cartons  
of beer, and were surprised.

At about 1530 - 1600 hrs we arrived at Hollis St,  
in our staff car, pulled behind an Army Truck and  
saw two soldiers and a CWAC in the vicinity of the  
truck. The truck was on Hollis Street between Bishop  
St and Morris St, on the east side. The soldiers  
were piling the truck up with cases of beer or liquor.  
One was standing in the truck and the other passed  
the loot in to him.

Q. Where did these soldiers appear to be taking these  
cases from?

A. They seemed to be coming from the north from either  
Bishop or Morris Sts. We were in our staff car  
facing north on Hollis St and there was a large  
crowd immediately ahead of us. The crowd was  
composed of Navy, civilians and Army.

Q. Could you tell us anything of the proportion of each?

A. No.

Q. How many cases did you see being loaded on that truck?

A. I cannot say that, but approximately 2 or 3 while  
we were there.

Q. How many people were in this truck?

A. One soldier and CWAC inside and one soldier outside  
who was bring back cases.

Q. Were these cases wooden or cardboard?

A. Cardboard.

- Q. How far northwards on Hollis Street did you see the soldier, who was outside the truck, go before returning with cases?
- A. We could not see very far, not more than 20 feet from where we were.
- Q. While you were there, did you see this soldier only load cases from the sidewalk to the truck or did you see him go away and bring back more cases?
- A. My impression is that I saw him go away and bring more cases back to the truck. I am not sure whether he went away or another soldier came back with the cases.
- Q. Did you see the soldier in the truck get out of the truck at any time?
- A. I cannot be sure.
- Q. What was the license number of the truck?
- A. We didn't take note of the license number of the truck. When we were leaving Col. Cox said to take a note of the license number and our driver, Pte. Jean Dickie, CWAC, said GL 121, which was painted on the door of the truck. That was all the markings I took note of.
- Q. How long did you stay at this position observing this truck and people around it?
- A. I'd say not more than 15 minutes.
- Q. And you said that you thought possibly 2 or 3 cases were loaded on the truck?
- A. That is my impression.
- Q. You don't know where the cases came from?
- A. I do not sir.
- Q. Would it be possible that the cases may have been taken from other personnel in the crowd that should not have been in possession of them?
- A. It is quite possible.
- Q. Did you do anything at all to ascertain why this was going on, why the truck was there or whether or not the personnel were working under Provost orders?
- A. I cannot say.
- Q. Was it possible the personnel might have been Provost personnel?
- A. I don't think so.
- Q. Did you see any Provost personnel in the immediate vicinity?
- A. I don't know.

- 185 -

- Q. Were the soldiers you saw inside and outside this truck wearing Provost leggings?
- A. I can't say.
- Q. Are you sure that this was an Army truck?
- A. No I am not sure, but I am sure of GL 121 though.
- Q. Were there any unit markings on the truck?
- A. I cannot recall that, sir.
- Q. You weren't curious whether this was an Army truck or not?
- A. Just when Colonel Cox suggested we take that number.
- Q. Were there any cases in the truck before you got there?
- A. We couldn't see inside.
- Q. On that same street at the same time, did you see any other army personnel involved in breaking or carrying liquor, clothing or merchandise?
- A. The only army personnel we saw ere 2 officers and they were standing on the sidewalk. I was rather amazed at the time that these men were not doing anything about it. I cannot remember seeing any army personnel carrying clothing or merchandise.
- Q. What would you have expected an officer to do at that time?
- A. If I'd have been an officer other than a Padre, I would have tried to get them to leave the beer behind.
- Q. Who were these officers?
- A. I don't know who these officers were or their unit.
- Q. Do you know their ranks?
- A. I do not know their ranks.
- Q. What were the relative proportions of that crowd that you saw?
- A. It would be very difficult for me to say. This was not entirely an Navy show, there were a considerable number of army there. At that particular point I cannot say there were more navy than army there.
- Q. In other words, your observations were not photographed on your mind clearly?
- A. Thats right sir, it was such a mix-up.

- 186 -

Q. Where did you go from there?

A. We drove up to District H.Q. and immediately went to the D.O.C. We felt that somebody should say something of the army part. We spoke to the D.O.C. at about 1600 hrs for a few minutes. The D.O.C. simply listened to what we had to say. Col Cox did most of the talking. The one thing we wanted to get across to him was that there was some army there, the army truck and the 2 army officers looking on, and to let him know that it was not just a Navy show, and I remember my own remark to him that it was not a Navy show entirely. The impression I got from him was that he was quite cognizant of what was happening and all that could be done was being done. We felt therefore that this incident should not be taken too seriously. I believe we went back to the office and that was the end of that.

Q. Did you see any other incidents during the day?

A. From my office window I could see men going along Spring Garden Road from the direction of Barrington Street carrying loot. A goodly number of these were sailors and I took what they were carrying to be liquor or beer. I cannot recall any army that I saw, carrying anything that looked like liquor or loot.

Q. Did you see any women carrying clothing or merchandise?

A. I saw a woman going along with a naval officer. The only thing that I recall is that she was associated with him and do not know if she was carrying anything or not.

Q. Did you see any other incidents, will you go on please?

A. In the evening after supper my assistant, Major Rice, and I went down town. We walked down to Robie St from New Wellington Barracks at about 1930 - 2000 hrs and we saw quite a great number of drunks everywhere, and coming down one of the smaller streets we met two soldiers, one carrying a bottle was very drunk and as he passed a shop, I think it was a laundry, he broke the window with his fist.

Q. Did you speak to this soldier?

A. He came up and stuck his face into mine and said "How am I doing". I don't know what I said to him, but I told the other soldier who was with him to tie up his hand to prevent blood poisoning. The other soldier was not quite so inebriated, as far as I know. I don't know what badges they were wearing. They proceeded west on Cogswell St.

We went downtown east on Cogswell St, then along Barrington St and of course we saw what had happened. The streets were filled with broken glass. Provost were getting the sailors and soldiers off the streets fairly well.

- 187 -

We walked south on Barrington Street as far as Spring Garden Road and went west on Spring Garden Road. There was not much to notice. We felt that the police were in control then. The crowd consisted of Navy, civilians and army. I saw a Provost man here and there. They were speaking to these men and telling them to get off the streets and go home. We advised some of these men also. I stopped and reasoned with a number of navy men advising them of the curfew. Some went back and some went downtown. We made our way back to Windsor Street and back home.

Q. Did you see any other incidents during that day involving army personnel breaking or looting, other than those which you have mentioned.

A. Looked from my window in New Wellington Barracks at about 1630 - 1800 hrs I saw some of our men of New Wellington Barracks, east of Gate No. 1 near the K. of C. Hut at Almon and Gladstone Sts going over to the fence and getting cartons of something from, I recall particularly, some civilians outside the fence.

These soldiers were standing inside the fence getting what I believe to be liquor, from civilians outside the fence. My impression is that the soldiers were paying for these, but as I was approximately 400 or 500 feet away at the time, I could not be sure.

**FORTY-  
FOURTH**

**WITNESS:**

Colonel J.L. Sutherland, District  
Medical Officer, M.D. 6, Halifax, N.S., having  
been duly sworn, states:

- Q. How long have you been the District Medical Officer, M.D. 6?
- A. Since September 1943.
- Q. Would you give a brief description of the Medical Units in M.D. 6? as of 7th May?
- A. As of 7th May in M.D. 6, Debert Military Hospital, Halifax, Windsor, Aldershot, Yarmouth, Dartmouth, Sydney and Mulgrave Military Hospitals, and No. 6 Company RCAMC in Halifax.
- Q. Who is the O.C. No. 6 Coy, RCAMC?
- A. Captain Raxlen is acting O.C. of this unit.
- Q. What is your total strength as of 7th May?
- A. Total strength as of 7th May - officers 62 and 22 reinforcement officers attached from A.22 and 58 other ranks.
- Q. How many are in the Halifax area?
- A. Roughly 40 officers and 53 other ranks.
- Q. Of your personnel in the Halifax Area, how many were out of barracks not on duty in Halifax and Dartmouth on 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. That I cannot say - so many of them are on subsistence. In the afternoon of 7th May approximately 12 CWACs and 6 men were let go. The CWACs went to their Barracks. 8th May there was nobody in the office. The girls were confined to barracks and a Sergeant Major and one clerk were only in the office the whole day.
- Q. Were any of your personnel, to your personal knowledge or as reported to you, involved in the disturbances in Halifax 7 - 8 May 45?
- A. No member of my personnel was involved in these disturbances as far as I know.
- Q. Were any charges laid against any personnel under your command arising out of the V.E. celebrations?
- A. There was only one case, a rather doubtful case, that of Captain F.C. Hazen, RCAMC, who has been charged by the Army Provosts, with the illegal use of a jeep on 8 May. A summary of evidence is now being taken. From the information now available to me, I would think that this charge should never have been laid.

- 189 -

- Q. What instructions did you receive from Higher authority prior to V.E. Day, relating to V.E. Day?
- A. As far as I recall, I didn't receive any instructions except a letter from M.D. 6 announcing the Thanksgiving Parade.
- Q. What orders did you issue prior to midnight 6-7 May?
- A. Nothing except that I issued an order to the Halifax Military Hospital to co-operate with the City Health Officer, with relation to supplying ambulances and Medical Officers in the ambulances.

I submit a report showing the work of the Halifax M.H. from the 7th to 9th May 45, indicating where the ambulances were stationed and what Medical Officers were on duty. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "UUU". At some time prior to 6th May, I made arrangements with the O.C. Halifax Military Hospital to have sufficient personnel to look out for things and as a matter of fact there were in effect personnel of 3 surgical teams available at all times at the Halifax M.H. on the 7th and 8th May.

- Q. What orders were issued by you 7th May, other than routine?
- A. Nothing else.
- Q. What orders were issued by you on the 8th other than routine?
- A. Nothing, just to carry on as was being done.
- Q. What orders were issued by you on 9 May?
- A. Merely routine orders.
- Q. Were your personnel confined to barracks from 9th May 45 on?
- A. Yes, as far as I know. An order was issued and it was left to the O.C.'s. of each hospital to execute, as a great number of these people were on subsistence.
- Q. Did you personally see any disturbances?
- A. None at all.
- Q. Will you advise the Court as to the number of patients treated in the Halifax Military Hospital on the 7th and 8th May 45, as a result of the disturbances in Halifax, on those days, exclusive of the original admissions?
- A. Yes. I file a report showing these commitments. This is examined by the Court and filed Exhibit "VVV".

- 190 -

- Q. What record have you of patients treated in M.I.R. by units under your command in the Halifax area on 7, 8 and 9th May 45, as a result of the disturbances 7th-8th May, exclusive of the original sick parade at the M.I.R.?
- A. I produce a detailed report showing those treated. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "VVV.1". This was secured over the telephone and may not be exactly accurate.



FORTY-  
FIFTH  
WITNESS:

Lt.-Col. J.A.G. Roberge, Officer Commanding,  
Le Regt. de Ste. Hyacinthe, Halifax, N.S.  
having been duly sworn states:

Q. How long have you been Officer Commanding, Le Regt. de Ste. Hyacinthe?

A. Since 8th March 1945.

Q. What was the total strength under your command in the Halifax - Bedford area on 7th May?

A. 28 officers and 559 O.R.'s.

Q. What is your estimate of approximate number of all ranks under your command out of barracks, not on duty, in the Halifax - Dartmouth Area on the 7-8th May?

A. On 7th May 1945:

(i) Morning - nil  
(ii) Afternoon - nil  
(iii) Evening - 10% were allowed passes, but I don't know how many left camp.

On 8th May 1945:

(i) Morning - nil  
(ii) Afternoon - about 40% got passes  
(iii) Evening - 110 were still out as of 1800 hrs.

At 1800 hrs a phone call was received from Fortress Headquarters to the effect that we had some men there and asked that we bring them back. I called the Coy. Comdrs. to send three vehicles to town to check up on the men. One vehicle went to Fortress Headquarters and the other two vehicles were to go along the streets of the city to check on personnel and bring them back to camp.

Q. Have you any personal knowledge of personnel under your command having been involved in disturbances on 7th-8th May?

A. No

Q. Have you received any report of any personnel under your command having been involved in disturbances on 7th-8th May?

A. No

Q. Have you any knowledge of 2 soldiers - D.146585 Pte. Gagnon, J.M. and E.628525 Pte. Jobin, C., who it is alleged were found in illegal possession of certain merchandise on the 8th May?

A. No. These cases have not been reported to me. They may belong to Hornes Field. The only thing I know about Hornes Field was that two men of "B" Coy. were reported to have bought shirts from Air Force personnel at the airport at Eastern Passage and these shirts were found in their kit the next morning. They were taken away from them and sent back to Dartmouth.

- Q. What instructions or orders did you receive from higher authority prior to V-E Day?
- A. The first thing was at a meeting called by the D.O.C., if I remember rightly about the 20th Apr., concerning the opening or closing of canteens. It was agreed that the opening or closing of canteens would be left at the discretion of the O.C.'s of Units. Since we do not have a wet canteen, I was not much concerned. Most of my personnel use the wet canteen operated by the A.A. Reinf. Camp. Besides that I do not recall any other instructions from District H.Q. or Fortress Headquarters, relating to V-E Day.
- Q. What orders did you issue and arrangements did you make prior to midnight 6th-7th May?
- A. I advised the officers about the meeting we had regarding canteens and about discipline. We would send a vehicle to town to report to the Provost and pick up whatever men the Provost might check up so that they could be taken to Bedford or Halifax Fortress. Nothing else was done because nobody knew when V-E Day was coming.
- Q. Was the arrangement of you having a truck in town made at the D.O.C.'s meeting on the 30th Apr.?
- A. I suggested it to the DAPM, Lt.-Col. Clarke, because I knew some of our men would be coming to town and I preferred to handle our own men.
- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements were made by you on the 7th May relating to V-E Day?
- A. Training was carried out in the morning and when it was learned over the radio that Germany had capitulated, the officers were told there would be no parades that afternoon. I told the Adjutant that there would be a parade at 1400 hrs as I wanted to talk to the men. The canteen at the A.A. Camp at that time were giving away free beers and so I decided to hold the meeting at 1600 hrs.
- Q. Did you know anything about a speech to be broadcast by Mr. Illsley or other government officials relating to V-E Day?
- A. No
- Q. What in your opinion on the 7th May was the signal or the announcement that would state the Army's Thanksgiving festivities?
- A. No personal knowledge. I receive word from the Adjutant and shortly after from District H.Q. that Sunday arrangements would be observed. This word was received from Dist. H.Q. about 1300 hrs.
- Q. What orders did you issue on the 8th May, other than routine, relating to V-E Day?
- A. On the 7th May, I told the Adjutant that on the announcement of V-E Day, church parades would be held the next morning.
- Q. What orders did you issue and arrangements did you make on the 8th in relation to V-E Day?

- A. After church parade I told the Adjutant that passes could be granted to go to town. At that time we were only allowed 10% to go on pass and so I inquired from Fortress Headquarters if that number could be increased. I told the officers that troops must be properly dressed and behave well. About 80% of my personnel are N.R.M.A. and I felt that if they got among G.S. personnel there might be trouble. I told them to steer clear of trouble and if they didn't know what to do to report to R.A. Park or the Provost where arrangements could be made to take them back to camp. I then called Major Trimble, Bde. Major, and asked him regarding the per centage of passes that could be granted that day because our strength at Bedford had increased a lot since I came there by withdrawal of troops from other Units. The operation instructions involving my troops only required a few of them for operational capacity. I told the Bde. Major that there was a fire picket which was a platoon, a duty company of the personnel, that would remain in camp that day. It was agreed by the Bde. Major and by myself that 50% could get passes out of camp that day but a great many of the men did not go to Halifax; they usually stay around Bedford.
- Q. What orders did you issue on the 9th May, other than routine?
- A. On the 9th May I receive the order from the D.O.C. that no passes would be granted and that training would continue as usual.
- Q. Were you in Halifax on the 7th-8th May?
- A. Yes, I was in town on the 5th May.
- Q. Did you see any disturbances on the 5th May?
- A. None at all. I came to the Citadel and went back to Bedford.
- Q. Can you tell us whether or not any personnel under your command brought back articles of liquor, merchandise, clothing, with them?
- A. We had a kit inspection on the night 8th-9th May but nothing was found. The next morning the driver found a raincoat, marked Zellers and valued \$6.50. It was found in his lorry. It was hard to find out who owned it and it was returned to Fortress on the 9th May. This was the only article found.

- 194 -

FORTY-  
SIXTH  
WITNESS

Detective Weldon Jack Fitzsimmons, R.C.M.P., Halifax, N.S., being duly sworn, states:

- Q. Were you on duty on the evening of the 7th and 8th of May, 45 in Halifax?
- A. I was not on duty the evening of the 7th May 45. I was on all day of the 7th May leading up to the night. I was performing my normal duties as a member of the Preventive Branch on the 7th.
- Q. Did you see any of the disturbances in Halifax on the 7th May 45?
- A. I did not. The only celebration I saw was in the afternoon of May 7th when the ticker tape was thrown from the buildings and everything was very quiet.
- Q. Would you, please, tell us what you know concerning the disturbances of the peace in Halifax on the 8th May 45?
- A. On the 8th day of May 45 I was performing, in the morning, my normal duties. Attached to the Preventive Branch, the members of which work in plain clothes, and most of whom are detectives.

I went for my lunch at 1000 o'clock. I was in plain clothes all that time. I had my lunch at my mother-in-law's residence on Argyle Street directly opposite from St. Paul's church.

I was returning to the Headquarters of the R.C.M.P. where my office is located. Co-ing down Prince St. at about 2 PM in the afternoon of the 8th. At the corner of Barrington and Prince Streets there was a large crowd of people, the majority were civilians together with navy men and some members of the army and airforce. I mean, when I speak of some members, 1 or 2 of each. This crowd was assembled on the north-west corner of Barrington -- that is the corner of St. Paul's church -- the corner of Prince and Barrington Streets. My attention was attracted to three members of the Canadian Navy, in round rig, who were on the other side of the street coming from the direction of Henry Birks and Sons, prior to their reaching the corner of Prince St. I heard glass breaking. I saw them break a window in a confectionery store next to John Condon's clothing store, that is on the corner of Prince and Barrington Streets. This confectionery store is next door to Cordons. These sailors, one in particular that broke the window with his elbow and hand, then the other two sailors were walking in and taking out the window display. There were civilians passing and they were handing the children candy, it appeared to be gum candy drops.

Then I was standing and talking to two members of the army and they were not in on the breaking. They were, like myself, thoroughly disgusted -- they were not participating in it. I might say here that there were definitely no members of the Canadian Army involved in the disturbances which I have just related.

- 195 -

While this was going on there were a lot of civilians on Barrington St. in this vicinity and I looked up the street and saw a crowd of civilians and navy personnel in the vicinity of Zive's clothing store and I heard glass breaking and I saw the city police and the shore patrol were succeeding in moving the crowd along but I can't actually say that I saw the window in Zive's being broken.

About this time I noticed about thirty personnel of the Royal Canadian Naval Shore Patrol, led by a Lieutenant, coming down Barrington St. from the vicinity of the police station where the disturbances were.

About half way between the corner of George St. and Prince St. on Barrington St. I looked down the hill on Prince St. and I had been attracted by the sound of breaking glass and shouting. I couldn't see anything at first but I soon saw a crowd of approximately two hundred traveling as they marched on Granville, they crossed Prince St. and I saw two members of the Royal Canadian Navy, in round rig, who were carrying "2 by 4's" attack the window in the Eaton store on Prince St. They attacked the window and smashed it by jabbing the boards through the windows. This would be about 2:15. The 30 members of the Royal Canadian Naval Shore Patrol led by the officer marched down into the location of Prince and Argyle Streets where the rioters were assembled, what took place was obscured from my vision by civilians, there was a great melée going on. I don't know what happened but I do know that the crowd finally cleared away from the corner of Prince and Granville Streets and to the best of my knowledge they moved up Granville St. In connection with that incident I did not see any members of the R.C.A.F. or army. There were none in the crowd. It was predominantly a naval show with a few civilians in the back looking on. It appeared to be about 5 or 6 naval ratings in the forefront that were doing the damage, they were encouraged by the other members. This would be about 2:15 P.M.

After all this transpired I returned to my office in the Headquarters of the R.C.M.P., corner of Hollis and George St. And after attending to a few things there I again went up on Barrington St. and I took up a position approximately across from Zive's and Sons clothing store. On the way up I noticed that there were several members of the Navy and civilians and a couple of Army and air force personnel carrying beer and what-not along the streets. The Army were in the minority in relation to civilians or naval personnel.

On Barrington St., this would be approximately 3 P.M., there were civilians moving along the sidewalks and naval personnel, a few air force and a few members of the Army. All seemed to be in fairly good spirits and quite a number of them were intoxicated and they were carrying cases of beer and bottles of liquor.

In the crowd the army were vastly in the minority. To every army man, I would say approximately, there would be 15 or 20 navy to one army. The army, to my mind, were to such a minority that I would pay attention to them, the navy were all over the place.

- 196 -

While I was standing in my position on Barrington St. I saw three members of the Royal Canadian Navy, two of them were in round rig and one was in the square rig which I took to be a Petty Officer, and I saw these men kick a window in, in the entrance next door to Zivo's and Coy. store on Barrington St. There is an entrance to the building there. They tried with a bottle first and didn't have much success and they left and came back and one put his foot through.

For about a half an hour as I say the crowd was coming up and down Barrington, there were civilians carrying everything, one with a baby carriage full of beer and things like that. But the persons of the navy were in the majority in every instance. You'd see 2 or 3 civilians together but the navy were about 5 or 6 together. They were not bodied up at this time in mobs.

It was approximately 4 o'clock. Then I heard the sound of bands and saw them coming down Barrington St. from the vicinity of the Capitol Theatre. They were followed by representatives of the Navy, representatives of the Air Force and representatives of the Army that finished off the parade.

When they passed my position on Barrington St. there was a member of the Army in the parade who had a bottle of liquor in his hand, he was marching along. I had no sooner seen him than I saw him taking a drink and right away an army Sergeant-Major came up, tapped him on the shoulder and made him put the bottle down on the street then a member of navy darted out from the sidewalk and got a hold of the bottle. That was the only instance, where army personnel had been involved in the breaking of discipline or civil authority.

On the same evening I was returning and I noticed civilians with looted merchandise and beer, members of the Navy with loot and I can't recall seeing any personnel of the Army or Air Force carrying loot. I saw them carrying liquor but outside that I can't say that I saw any Army men carrying merchandise.

- Q. Did you see any of the incidents involving the liquor stores or the brewery?
- A. No I did not.
- Q. During the whole of that day did you see any army personnel actively engaged in breaking or looting?
- A. No sir, I did not. I didn't see any members of the army breaking any windows or looting, and that applies to members of the air force too. Civilians, I did see with loot.
- Q. Did you see any other instances of disturbances on this day?
- A. About 11:30 A.M. of May 8th I saw a member of the army with a couple of civilians standing at the corner of Prince and Argyle Streets. The member of the army concerned was on crutches and he was the worst for liquor but he was not causing any disturbance to speak of. One of the civilians he was talking too at St. Paul's church, he was about 16 or 17 years old, he tore out a piece of the railing about the church.



- 197 -

but the member of the army did not take part in it. I shouted across the street to him and the lad put the piece of railing back.

Later on in the afternoon of May 8th about a quarter to 5 I saw two members of the navy, and at this time there was a large crowd, there were a couple hundred members of the navy and a couple hundred civilians and these two sailors were attacking Eaton's front window at Prince and Barrington. The windows were boarded up and they were removing the boards from the windows. When I was walking up I heard the breaking and noise and I take it that the window was broken. Later on my suspicions were confirmed, I actually saw the window out.

There is only one other instance and that was about a quarter to 5 the same evening I saw a few naval ratings at St. Paul's church, and there is a stone wall running along the street, that segregates the church property from the street, and this is a picket fence above, put up in sections, and these sailors had a case of beer and they wanted to sit up on the fence, on the stone part of the fence, and apparently the metal part was making it uncomfortable to sit so they tore it up and threw it out.

- Q. To your knowledge has the R.C.M.P. in Halifax received any reports from it's own personnel or from others stating that any army personnel were actively engaged in breaking windows or looting retail stores and liquor stores?
- A. To my knowledge no, but that is limited, the section I am in charge of, we deal extensively with enforcement of the Federal statutes and we don't come into the picture regarding general police work, liquor detachment etc.
- Q. Will you state the approximate time that you spent there and where were you on Barrington St.
- A. From about 20 minutes past 3 in the afternoon until 4:30 P.M. I was in the vicinity of Barrington St. If I wasn't standing directly outside of Johnston's Jewellery Store I was up stairs in a Beauty Salon above Johnston's which is operated by my mother-in-law and I had a bird's-eye-view from there.
- Q. That was between Sackville and Prince? You were in that area all that time?
- A. Yes sir.
- Q. You were at the corner of Prince and Barrington before that too?
- A. Yes sir, from 2 to 2:30.
- Q. You could have seen from Prince and Sackville any damage going on to windows from those hours?
- A. Yes sir. Mind you, I saw sailors throwing bottles through windows that were already broken out.
- Q. You mentioned the parade coming down with the band. Do you know why they didn't go through Barrington St.?
- A. No sir.

- 198 -

- Q. What effect did the band passing Harrington have on the crowd?
- A. It did more or less quieten them for a time. The crowd remained on the side walk, some of them were on the road, they didn't obstruct the band coming down the street, the band passed and the crowd then came back onto the street.

.....  
Detective Weldon Jack Fitzsimmons,  
A.C.M.F., Halifax, N.S.



- 199 -

**FORTY-  
SEVENTH  
WITNESS:**

Sergeant J. Murray, R.C.M.P. Halifax Detachment,  
being duly sworn states:

- Q. What are your duties with the R.C.M.P.?
- A. I am in charge of the Halifax Detachment situated at Headquarters in Halifax.
- Q. Do you operate only in Halifax?
- A. They don't operate in the city of Halifax in any way, except looking after the Federal statutes and the Liquor Control. Our duties lie outside the city of Halifax.
- Q. What duties did your detachment perform on the 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. Well around midnight on the 7th May we got a request from the city police to assist in the stopping of the breaking in of the Sackville St. liquor store. I think it was about 10 after 12 when I was called and I went there with about 30 men at 20 minutes past 12. Well, I got to the Sackville St. liquor store about 20 past 1. I took over from the city police and Naval Shore Patrol. The store had already been entered and I would say about 3 or 400 bottles of liquor had been taken out of it. There had been little real damage done to the store at that time. At that time there was a few of the crowd, some made up of naval personnel and civilians but they had then gone down to the Hollis St. store and burst that open at about half past 12. For some time after there were civilians and navy carrying liquor away. I did not go down there but I saw them coming by. I didn't see any army men around, about that time things had quietened down.

I placed two men in every liquor store, and placed 4 in the Sackville St. store, I put them in at about 4 o'clock in the morning. The retail store on Hollis St. and the mail order house there on Hollis St. and Buckingham and the rest of the stores, I put 2 men in each. Previous to that, 3 o'clock in the morning, there had been no attempt to break open the Agricola St. store.

I left them there all night and then sent two men to the Buckingham St. store at noon. I left men in the Sackville St. liquor store and it was around, between 2 and 2:30, in the afternoon that I got a call saying that they were breaking into the Hollis St. store --- they cleared that store out of liquor, I didn't go down. Cpl. Hall was in charge of that liquor store, they cleaned out the mail order house too.

Prior to this on the Tuesday, the 3th, things were pretty quiet until I received a call from Cpl. MacLean about 20 past 1 in the afternoon saying that the navy were on their way to break open the brewery, he had heard it from the crowd up there. I came back to the office, reached about half past one. The report came from one of our Corporals in the Dockyard. He past that on and that information was passed to the City Police and it had already been passed to the city police by Cpl. MacLean who had phoned the detachment.

From then, about 20 minutes to 2 until 2 o'clock, I was standing in the building, upstairs and I heard a mob coming up Granville St, going south. You could hear glass breaking

and then the crowd came. There were large numbers of civilians standing at the corner of George and Granville looking north. When they moved it appeared that there were 6 or 7 in the lead of the mob each armed with long "2 by 4s". They were straggled out coming from the Dockyards. The civilians were standing there just looking up the street. As they came into view the sailors with the "2 by 4s" smashed and poked out the windows on one side of the street. I could see only one side of the street looking past the end of the Provincial Building, that would be the west side. Well, they smashed at the windows there that I could see and following behind there were a crowd of civilians, navy and one or two army, when they disappeared, they got out of my view, and then I went back down to my office.

Q. Did you see any army men actually breaking windows?

A. No sir. The breaking was done by the naval ratings. I think one had a baseball bat and he was finishing off the windows that had been broken off by the "2 by 4s". The rest of the crowd, the people who were following, were trying to see what was going on. I could not say that they were all in this mob or not, well the next thing they were trying to break into the Hollis St. liquor store and shortly after that time around 3 o'clock I got information that Keith's brewery had been broken in. Then on that afternoon there was naval ratings and civilians pouring along Water St. carrying liquor and there was the odd soldier amongst them, I didn't see any air force. And each and every one that came north on Water St. was armed with case or bottles of beer, all headed north to the city.

After that loot started coming by, the crowd pouring down Barrington and Hollis Sts and even along Bedford Row were carrying looted merchandise that had been taken from stores.

Q. What was the crowd carrying beer composed of?

A. I'd say 75% of the loot carriers were civilians, quite a number of naval ratings and the odd army men not more than the naval ratings that were carrying loot who were, I can say, so drunk that they didn't know what they were doing.

Q. Were the two army men, that you remember seeing, drunk?

A. The only drunk ones that I saw carrying away loot were the sailors. They were staggering around the street with armfuls of clothing. One in particular, he had a case of beer in one arm and one of those models out of a window dragging it along the street by it's ankle, and there was one other there who had quite an armful of clothing, mostly ladies' clothing, boots and shoes and the people would come along and pick out what they wanted from his armful and if it didn't suit them they would throw it back at him.

Q. What were these army men you saw carrying?

A. It's hard to say, they had clothing, shoes and stuff of that kind.

- 201 -

- Q. This crowd that was carrying this clothing and merchandise, what was the size of this crowd?
- A. They were travelling along there, one after the other, they were passing for quite a long time, they continued that until nearly 6 o'clock.
- Q. How dense were those crowds at that time?
- A. If you had stopped them at the ends of the street for 2 or 3 minutes I'd say you'd have 300 or 400 there. There was very little wheeled traffic on the street.
- Q. Did you see many automobiles?
- A. I don't recall seeing very many automobiles. There were few vehicles on the road at all, there was the odd jeep and naval wagon.
- Q. But the street was at no time packed from building to building was it?
- A. No they weren't but I didn't see the crowds that were up on Barrington and Granville Sts.
- Q. You actually saw the looters carrying the loot after they had looted the stores?
- A. Yes I did, they were pouring by carrying the stuff somewhere.
- Q. Did you leave the building?
- A. I remained at Headquarters. We had to send some men down to the Cold Storage where they had the large stock of hard liquor. I sent those men down around 5 o'clock. We got a call and I sent 10 men down there, these were my men that came in from other liquor stores that had been broken open and emptied out, I sent them down. They had already been in the Cold Storage and taken a little liquor and left. We got some assistance from the army, there was about 100 men posted down there. I am not sure whether that was Provost Corps or some other regiment, I imagine it was Provost Corps. We had no more trouble at the Cold Storage.
- Q. Any other incident that you remember?
- A. No, I wasn't out much that afternoon, I was standing at the door and answering the telephone.
- Q. Did you, during the whole of this day, see any army men going in and out of stores which had been broken into?
- A. No sir, I wasn't or that wasn't in my view.
- Q. Did you see any army personnel going out from the liquor store or breaking windows?
- A. No, I did not see a soldier breaking any windows and my men haven't mentioned that they could say that they saw a soldier breaking any windows. It was done by the navy.
- Q. Have you received any reports from your men that reported soldiers actually entering liquor stores?
- A. No sir. Most of my men had been posted at the liquor stores all day and the men who I had relieved in the morning I kept them working till noon and then I sent them home because they had been on duty from 8:30 Monday morning.

000536

- Q. What did you see of the army Provosts during the 8th?
- A. I didn't see army provost or naval shore patrol on Tuesday down along George or Hollis Sts, or in that vicinity, nor City Police or anybody else. I didn't see any Provost Corps early Tuesday morning other than an officer and a Sergeant on duty at the Agricola St. liquor store, when I went there at 3 o'clock in the morning they were inside with some 50 Shore Patrol and that was the only reason that this store had not been bust that morning and they left as soon as we took over.
- Q. You had a comparatively good view of all these proceedings?
- A. I did not have a view of the proceedings at all and I never got any opportunity of going up during the time but after 9 o'clock at night we sent patrols out to patrol the streets all night after they had the curfew put on. We sent two City Police men in the cars.
- Q. By what time were most of the disturbances over?
- A. Most of it was over by 6 o'clock, that maybe closer to 7 o'clock, the mayor then declared that V-E Day celebrations had ceased at 6 o'clock and then around 7 o'clock I think it was, Admiral Murray went around with this van --- sound truck, and instructed his men to go ---- all service personnel to go back to barracks and that the curfew was to be placed on at 8 o'clock and they faded out fast after that.
- Q. What effect did the curfew have?
- A. It was very quiet after that. The majority of the people got off the streets and those that were left were trying to get home. There were many down at the ferry trying to get to Dartmouth but couldn't because the ferry had stopped and they were rather scared off getting caught by the curfew hour.
- Q. You say that as far as you are concerned I didn't see any city police?
- A. Yes.
- Q. You didn't see any city police working in the crowds that you saw.
- A. No, that was at the time the services were going on in the Garrison Grounds.
- Q. How many of the R.C.M.P. were available to work in Halifax on the 8th May?
- A. 24 regular members of the force --- we had about 32, that includes office staff and the balance were made up by my detachment.
- Q. Were you requested to assist the police in the liquor stores during the whole of that day?
- A. I had no request from the City police nor <sup>for</sup> any other assistance in any event we didn't have the men available.
- Q. Would you know of any request that were made by the city police?
- A. The majority of the requests would come to my office but from my knowledge none were made.

- 203 -

Q. Did you receive any complaints from civilians that day involving army personnel?

A. None whatever.

Q. From the city police?

A. No. Everything that was any complaint was the phone calls about the navy and the head of the navy kind of took control.

Q. Would you be so good as to describe the incident about sailors who lead the crowd on the 8th of May in the neighbourhood of Granville St.?

A. The crowds came south on Granville, that is they came down Granville St., south on Granville, and when they came into view you could see them smashing windows in the Sun Life Building, the odd window there, then they went set to breaking windows on the north side of George St. Then they smashed all the plate glass windows on the west side of Granville, the window breakers were 6 or 7 navy doing the breaking. They were backed up by 300 or 400 naval personnel behind them and there were civilians in the crowd moving with them and others standing watching them on the north side of George St.

There were few men of the army in the crowds that I had seen. I'm not protecting the army at all but they just weren't there and there is no question about the very few air force men ---- I don't think I saw any all day.

Q. In your opinion did it appear to be an organized show?

A. The whole thing in my mind looked like that. At first it looked organized and then it became drunken. I have seen a lot of riots but I have never seen anything such as it was here in Halifax. It appeared that somebody had it in for the city of Halifax and then it developed into an organized and drunken riot.

Q. You were out and saw some of the breaking in on the Monday night of May 7th?

A. After midnight or early in the morning of the 8th when I took control of the Sackville St. liquor store.

Q. Did you, after that quietened down, have any apprehension of what might happen the next day?

A. We thought it was all over, we figured that they had all the liquor they wanted and that would be all for them.

- 204 -

**FORTY -  
EIGHTH  
WITNESS**

Corporal S.F. Hall, Halifax Detachment R.C.M.P.  
has been duly sworn and states:

- Q. How long have you been with the R.C.M.P.?
- A. This is my sixteenth year.
- Q. What were your duties on the 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. I was detailed to go to the Hollis St. Liquor store on the 8th.
- Q. What do you know of the disturbances on the 7th May 45?
- A. I know nothing.
- Q. Will you tell us what you know of the disturbances on the 8th May 45?
- A. At approx. 2:30 P.M. on the 8th May I was inside of the Hollis St. Liquor Store and at that time I was accompanied by Constable Tomlin. The panel of the north door of the store was forced in while I was there it was forced in and I couldn't swear as to who forced it in but I looked through the panel of the door and I saw a chap in naval uniform looking through the panel. I went to the door and told them to get away and I looked through the panel and I saw the crowd leaving the Hollis St. sidewalk, that was the east sidewalk starting in the direction of Water Street. That was approx. 10 or 15 minutes after the panel was kicked in. Mr. Cashin, Assistant Manager of the Hollis St. Liquor Store phoned the Naval Shore Patrol and they arrived and I would say approx. 12 or 15 came. That would be shortly after 2:30. Shortly after the panel was kicked in there was a large crowd gathered outside. It was a mixed crowd mostly naval personnel I would say, civilians too, I don't recall seeing any army personnel. After the Shore Patrol arrived I say they left and went across towards Water St., that is west from the Hollis St. Liquor Store. In approx. half an hour the crowd gathered again before the front of the store and the street was filled with people. The sidewalks were crowded, roughly the same composition as before. They started pounding on the door and on the windows that had been boarded up and the boards from the middle window were torn away and they were torn away by navy personnel. They entered the windows, the navy men, and they climbed over the fence or railing that is used in normal times to accommodate the public and the first ones over carried liquor and set it up over the railing that is the metal guard, and set it down to the counter outside and navy personnel carried it out. The first few threw it over and the others rushed in and carried it away. It was no time at all until the place was filled with civilian people, navy personnel, merchant navy, and that is about all.
- Q. Did you see any soldier actively engaged in coming into the store and taking liquor out?
- A. There was the odd soldier there. There was the odd soldier that came in but I don't recall the unit or rank, there was the odd one.
- Q. How many soldiers do you remember seeing?
- A. To the best of my recollection there were two sir. I remember seeing two, I don't know their rank or unit.



- 205 -

- Q. What were they actually doing when you saw them?
- A. They were carrying out liquor.
- Q. How do you tell when a man belongs to the merchant marine or merchant navy?
- A. They wear a badge on their left lapel of their coat which is the letters "MM". They call it the merchant navy or the merchant marine. It is known more commonly as the merchant navy.
- Q. Is there anything else with regard to this particular incident? How long did this particular looting of this store last?
- A. Roughly an hour sir. I stayed there until nearly 4 o'clock and I left with Mr. MacLeod.
- Q. Why was there no more definite effort made by you and the rest of the law enforcement personnel to stop the crowd?
- A. Well I phoned Sgt. Murray when they first started to break in and I told him what was taking place and he told me that he had none no one to send to assist -- that all his men had been posted and then at that time Mr. Cashin phoned the Naval Shore Patrol.
- Q. How many of you were there?
- A. Just the two of us sir, the constable and myself. When the crowd first came through I told them to go away -- "get away from the door" and they left. The bunch that I saw, at least the navy that I saw there, and they left and then after that, of course this was hearsay -- I was told that they had broken into Keith's Brewery and I could see them carrying from the direction of Keith's Brewery, carrying case after case. Within a half an hour, however, I looked over the transom of the Manager's office and I saw a lot of drinking on the street and then the crowd became more or less under the influence, drunk and belligerent, and once they started they seemed to go berserk.
- Q. Did any one actually try to stop them?
- A. No sir. But I think that, it's my opinion of course, I think it would have been unwise for one or two police men to use force to try and stop the crowd.
- Q. What do you think the result would have been?
- A. I think I would have possibly been used as a door mat. There is no doubt about it, the condition they were in, if we had tried to hit the navy personnel with out batons there would have been injury to ourselves.
- Q. Were any threats made toward you or the constable?
- A. -- None to me.
- Q. Did they pay any attention to you or the constable?
- A. Not after they came in. They looked in our direction, laughed and they thought it was a big joke. A lot of them were under the influence of liquor. I mean both navy personnel and civil-

- 206 -

ians and merchant navy.

Q. Was the store completely looted?

A. I left at 4 o'clock and all the cases had been removed to the best of my knowledge and I could hear bottles being broken and I think that they were picking <sup>them</sup> up and throwing them inside the building against the wall which they started doing. The manager felt that it was a very unsafe place to be. There were between 5 and 6 thousand liquor permits, blank permits, that were more or less very valuable and in regard to this he wanted them removed. He didn't want them to fall into the hands of the crowd and he suggested that we remove them out of the crowd through the back door, which we did. The mail order part is immediately south of the store, these were individual and blank cards and had not been sent in through the mail.

Q. How was this store constructed inside?

A. There was a counter approx. 3 and a half or 4 feet high. To the best of my knowledge it was a wooden counter. And then there is a metal railing on top, the total height of which was 5 or 6 feet from the ground.

Q. That would be about 2 and a half feet of metal railing?

A. Yes sir. It was possible to step on the counter and then over the top.

Q. To reach to the top of the railing you could step on top of the counter?

A. That was what they were doing.

Q. Where did you go from there?

A. I went out the back door of the Hollis St. store, out into the back alley and on to Saulter St. and along Granville St. to Blower St. to where a car was hailed and he turned around and we put the liquor permits in the car and drove along Granville to George St. and I got out of the car and went to the Mounted Police Detachment and I wasn't up to Barrington St. at all. I didn't see any of the looting and I remained in the Halifax Detachment office until 4:30 P.M. or a quarter to 5 approx.

I then was detailed to go to the Warehouse where a report had been received that men were needed to guard the liquor there. That was the bonded warehouse, that is on the end of Terminal at the waterfront.

Q. You went there, arrived there when?

A. Well as near as I recall around 6 o'clock.

Q. What did you see when you arrived there?

A. There was a bunch of men standing at the front of the store across the street and I took them to be employees of the fish company across from the bonded warehouse. And the big doors leading from the or into the warehouse had been broken open and we were told, by hearsay we were told by the caretaker Mr. MacIntyre, or the man in charge that it had been forced open by navy personnel.



- 207 -

- Q. Did you see a crowd ather there at that time?
- A. Just the few in front, and I think they were employees of the fish company --- National Fish Market I believe.
- Q. Did you see any navy or army?
- A. No sir I did not.
- Q. What happened then?
- A. We remained there till the following morning.
- Q. Who was there with you?
- A. Shortly after we arrived along came a large number of army men who came down to assist the police.
- Q. Any shore patrol there?
- A. I'm not sure, sir. I don't recall.
- Q. Did the army men stay all night with you?
- A. Some of them did, they didn't all stay.
- Q. Were they Provost or ordinary army personnel?
- A. I think there were both there.
- Q. Anything happen there?
- A. No sir.
- Q. And you didn't see any other disturbance?
- A. No sir.
- Q. Did you during the whole of the 8th May see any army personnel actively engaged in disturbances of peace other than those which you have just mentioned?
- A. No sir.
- Q. Did you during the 8th May see any army personnel other than carrying loot or liquor?
- A. No sir. I saw a lot of navy and civilians but I didn't see any army. All I recall is the 2 of them that I told of seeing in the Hollis St. store.

- 208 -

FORTY-  
NINTH  
WITNESS: 49

Captain W.V. Cockman, Assistant  
P.R.O., M.D. 6, Halifax, N.S., having been duly  
sworn, states:

Q. How long have you held this appointment?

A. At M.D. 6, since March 1, 1945.

Q. Where is Major Hyndman, P.R.O.?

A. At NDHQ - I don't know when he's expected back.

Q. What did you see of the disturbances in Halifax  
on 7 May 45?

A. At 1300 hrs on 7 May 45, I left the office and  
went downtown in Halifax where the crowds were  
milling along Barrington Street as if they were  
expecting a celebration, but none were provided.

The crowds moved mostly along the streets of the  
business section. The only activity downtown was  
the street dance near the Nova Scotian Hotel.

Q. What disturbances of the peace did you see on the  
8th May 45 in Halifax?

A. At 1515 hrs on 8 May I joined crowds walking  
southward on Barrington Street on the west side  
of the street. The crowd was mainly civilians  
on the west side and navy on the east side. There  
were no soldiers in the crowd at this point.

Navy personnel were smashing windows on the ground  
floor of stores on the east side of Barrington.  
I moved up and down the west side from the Canadian  
National Telegraphs building to the Capital Theatre.  
Proceeding southward on Barrington St. I watched the  
Navy and some Army smashing windows and saw some  
looting.

Q. How many army personnel were breaking windows?

A. Just 2.

Q. What windows were they breaking?

A. I can only name one of the stores - Sieberts  
Tobacco shop, 401 Barrington Street.

Q. How many windows did you see broken by Army personnel?

A. 5 windows.

Q. Were they all on the same side of Barrington St?

A. Yes, they were all on the east side of Barrington.

- 208 -

- Q. Between what streets?
- A. Between Prince and Blower Sts.
- Q. How far were you away from these soldiers when they were breaking these windows?
- A. I was directly across the street at Sieberts Tobacco Shop.
- Q. How did they break the windows?
- A. The younger used his feet and the older used a flag-pole.
- Q. Had these windows been previously broken?
- A. No.
- Q. Were they main store windows?
- A. Yes - they were show windows.
- Q. What did you do when you saw the soldiers breaking windows?
- A. I crossed the street when the younger of the two was standing by himself and talked to him. I told him that I had watched him for about 15 minutes breaking store windows along the street. I urged him to proceed with his chum and both of them leave the district.
- Q. How many windows did you see the younger soldier smash?
- A. I didn't see him smash any main main windows.
- Q. What were the total number of windows smashed by these two soldiers?
- A. 5.
- Q. Over what period did this take place?
- A. About 15 minutes.
- Q. In what condition were these soldiers?
- A. Both drunk.
- Q. Were they very drunk?
- A. The older was very drunk.
- Q. Why did it take them 15 minutes to smash 5 windows?
- A. I think they were enjoying their experiences and were taking their time going along the street.

- 210 -

- Q. Did you see them entering these stores?
- A. Yes. I saw them entering Sieberts Tobacco Shop.
- Q. Did you see them coming out?
- A. I saw the older of the two come out, but not the younger. The older of the two was carrying cartons of cigarettes and throwing them to the crowd.
- Q. Did you see soldiers going into any other places?
- A. No, sir.
- Q. What happened when you spoke to the younger of these soldiers?
- A. When he was finally persuaded, he saluted and went into the store to get his comrade. I didn't see him again and presumed he had left the scene completely or had been swallowed up by the crowds.
- Q. During the whole of 8 May 45, did you see any other Army personnel breaking windows or looting stores, other than those you have mentioned?
- A. I saw one soldier leaving Tip Top Tailors with, I would say, 8 suits in his arms.
- Q. Where are Tip Top Tailors located?
- A. On the west side of Barrington St about 3 doors from Sackville St.
- Q. When was that?
- A. About 1600 hrs.
- Q. Were there any other people carrying articles out of that place at that time?
- A. No, sir.
- Q. How far were you away from him when you saw him?
- A. He passed about 5 yards from me and went into the crowd.
- Q. What did you do?
- A. I just stared in amazement.
- Q. Where did he go?
- A. He disappeared.
- Q. What was the composition of the crowd?
- A. Chiefly civilian 60%, Navy 30%, Army 10% - I saw no Air Force

- 211 -

- Q. What were the 10% of this crowd, who were soldiers, doing?
- A. They were merely spectators.
- Q. During the whole of 8 May 45 did you see any other persons breaking windows besides the two soldiers you have already mentioned?
- A. During the 8th May I saw Navy personnel smash approximately 10 store windows on the east side of Barrington Street and 5 on the west side, from 1530 - 1630 hrs.
- Q. In other words, at the same time these two soldiers you mentioned were breaking a few windows, you saw sailors breaking other windows?
- A. Yes sir.
- Q. Did you see any civilians breaking windows?
- A. No sir.
- Q. How were the sailors breaking windows?
- A. With their feet.
- Q. Did you see any sailors breaking windows with two-by-fours?
- A. No sir.
- Q. Did you see any disturbances of the peace around the T. Eaton Co. store?
- A. At about 1730 hrs I saw sailors remove boards from the large Eaton Store windows facing on Granville St.
- Q. Were there any soldiers involved at that place at that time?
- A. No sir.
- Q. You definitely say you saw 2 soldiers break 5 windows. Can you tell me how many windows they broke in the block from Prince St to Sackville St?
- A. 2 windows. They were on the east side of Barrington St.
- Q. What badges were these soldiers wearing?
- A. The one I approached was wearing Army Service Corps flashes.
- Q. Could you identify him if you saw him again?
- A. Yes.
- Q. Could you identify the older soldier if you saw him again?
- A. Yes.
- Q.

- 212 -

- Q. Did you ask either of the soldiers their names?
- A. No I didn't.
- Q. When did you leave the crowd?
- A. At about 1730 Hrs.
- Q. Did you go downtown again?
- A. Yes, at about 1930 hrs.
- Q. Did you see any other disturbances? What did you do?
- A. I looked into the stores at the damage done. I saw one disturbance. A soldier wearing Royal Marine flash thrown out of a store on Water St carrying what I thought was a .22 rifle.
- Q. Who threw him out?
- A. I believe two members of the staff of the store. He was very drunk. He got back on his feet and threatened one of the clerks. He said "I'll be back with the Navy at 11 o'clock", and promptly went down the way and vomitted. I could identify him again.
- Q. Did you see any other incidents involving army personnel?
- A. No sir.
- Q. Have you anything further to tell us of what you saw that day?
- A. No sir.
- Q. What class of persons in your opinion, did most of the looting?
- A. From what I saw, they were divided half-and-half between civilian women and navy and a few children. I have already mentioned the only 2 soldiers I saw.
- Q. When you went downtown again at 1930 hrs what was the situation?
- A. The streets were clearing of people. The Navy patrols were doing a very fine job.
- Q. Did you see any army personnel downtown at this time?
- A. I don't recall seeing any army on the streets at this time.
- Q. When did you go home?
- A. At 2015 hrs. I overstayed the curfew by 15 minutes.

- 212 a -

Q. Will you produce prints of pictures taken of the disturbances in Halifax and Dartmouth, N.S. on the 7 - 8th May 45?

A. Newspaper clippings already filed as Exhibit "A" show fairly complete pictures which were taken by various persons of these disturbances.

We have also been able to procure prints of some of these and other pictures which are examined by the court and filed as follows:

NNN.1 Pictures of events evening of 7 to 8 May 45

NNN.2 General pictures of disturbances of 8 May 45

NNN.3 Pictures of crowd before Hollis St and Sackville St Liquor stores.

NNN.4 Pictures of crowd before Keith's Brewery, 8 May 45.

FIFTYTH  
WITNESS: 50

Capt. Gerald S. Clark, Officer Commanding,  
No. 12 Special Employment Platoon, having  
been duly sworn states:

- Q. You were the Officer Commanding supplying the guards posted at New Wellington Barracks on 7th-8th May?
- A. I was Sir.
- Q. Have you received a communication from Lt.-Col. Agnew, D.E.M.E., to the effect that he placed a soldier, who had been found in possession of loot, in the hands of a guard at New Wellington Barracks on the 8th May 45?
- A. Yes Sir.
- Q. Will you tell us about the communication you received?
- A. Col. Agnew spoke to me on the morning of the 9th May stating that he had placed a soldier under close arrest who was found in possession of articles alleged to be loot consisting of an electric razor and miscellaneous barbering equipment. Col. Agnew stated that he had given this alleged loot to a guard in the guard house at New Wellington Barracks at approximately 2200 hrs 8th May 45. At the same time he had handed over this soldier to the same guard to be kept under close arrest. He did not deliver the man to the Cpl. i/c of the guards but to one of the other guards. He did not receive a receipt for the body or for the loot. On the morning of 9th May at approximately 1000 hrs, I contacted Col. Agnew and advised him that I could find no trace of the alleged loot nor was I able to obtain any information regarding the soldier which he had placed under close arrest and in custody of the guard. At approximately 1030 hrs, Col. Agnew came to my office and we proceeded to the guard house and interviewed all guards who had been on duty on the 8th May.
- Col. Agnew stated that he felt sure that F.88854 Pte. Perry, J.F., whom he then saw, was the guard to whom he had handed the soldier and loot but that he could not swear to it. Pte. Perry was immediately placed under close arrest in the custody of the Cpl. i/c of the guard, and charged under Sec. 40 of the Army Act with two offences; first, neglecting to place under arrest a soldier after being ordered to do so by Col. Agnew; second, failing to properly guard confiscated property entrusted to his custody. At this trial, the accused swore that he had no knowledge of this matter and that he could produce witnesses whom he named to substantiate his contention. I therefore dismissed the charge. After hearing evidence of these three witnesses, I dismissed the charge for lack of sufficient evidence.
- Q. Did you ask the Commander of the Guard about it?
- A. Yes I did. He said he had seen no such instance. I also made a careful check of the guard house and could find no evidence of alleged loot.
- Q. Was there a guard report for that period?
- A. Yes Sir.



- Q. Did it mention any of these incidents?
- A. No Sir. The loot from the 8th May which had been kept in the guard house didn't contain any articles mentioned in the statement from Col. Agnew.
- Q. How big is the guard house?
- A. There are 8 cells. There is a corridor and four cells on each side.
- Q. Where did the guards stay on the 8th May?
- A. In the guard room
- Q. What is the room you enter used for?
- A. Just a receiving room.
- Q. Would the whole guard and the Cpl. of the guard be in the receiving office at all times on the 8th May?
- A. Not at all times.
- Q. How many were on duty in that guard house on the 8th May?
- A. A Cpl. and two men. The gate guard was augmented by two men from R.C.E.M.E. and from the Engineers.
- Q. Where did the three witnesses for the defence come from?
- A. Two from No.6 Coy. RCME and one from No.6 Coy. ES & W. RCE.
- Q. What were these three men doing in the guard room?
- A. They were not in the guard room but at the gate at the time the accused, Pte. Perry was on duty, from 2000 hrs until 0200 hrs 9th May.
- Q. What evidence did they give in the defence of Perry?
- A. They stated that they had been with the accused constantly from 2000 hrs 8th May until 0200 hrs 9th May and during that time they had not seen Lt.-Col. Agnew give the accused any soldiers or loot.
- Q. Did they claim they did not see Col. Agnew the night of the 8th May?
- A. They made no statement to that effect.
- Q. Did you verify that Perry was on duty about the time Col. Agnew handed this man to the guard and he was the guard?
- A. Yes Sir.
- Q. Did Perry see Col. Agnew that night?
- A. I checked Perry very closely on that and he said he had not seen Col. Agnew that night.
- Q. Did you check all the guards?
- A. I did Sir. I checked the Cpl. of the guard and he said he had not seen Col. Agnew giving the soldier or the loot over to the Guard.

- 215 -

FIFTY-  
FIRST  
WITNESS 51

Pte. Jean Dickie, R.C.A.B.C. (CHAC),  
having been duly sworn states:

- Q. What are your duties?
- A. I drive for the District Chaplains. I am the only driver.
- Q. Did you have an occasion to take Dist. Chap. (RC) Lt.-Col. MacLellan and Dist. Chap. (P) Lt.-Col. Cocks to down town Halifax on the 5th May?
- A. Yes, I did Sir.
- Q. Did you stop your car on Hollis Street at any time?
- A. Yes Sir
- Q. About what time?
- A. It was directly after the ceremony on the hill about 1530 hrs.
- Q. On what part of Hollis St. did you stop?
- A. We went down town by Spring Garden Road, down Barrington St. to Bishop and on to Hollis, and turned left on Hollis facing North, just North of Bishop. We only went for a short distance on Hollis.
- Q. Why did you stop?
- A. There were so many people on the street we couldn't get any further.
- Q. What did you see?
- A. Well, there were a lot of people dashing around and some people were carrying liquor.
- Q. What kind of people were there?
- A. There were civilians, Navy, Army, but I dont remember seeing any Air Force.
- Q. About how many Army personnel were carrying liquor?
- A. I dont remember seeing Army personnel carrying liquor. I was watching people around my car. I had the windows up.
- Q. Did you see any other vehicles on the street?
- A. Yes, there was a truck in front of us facing North.
- Q. How far in front of your car?
- A. About 25 feet or a bit more.
- Q. What was this truck you saw?
- A. It was an Army truck. I think it was a 800 cwt.
- Q. Did you get out of your car at all?
- A. No Sir. I kept the windows closed.

000551

- 216 -

- Q. Did you see any number of distinction marked on this truck?
- A. Yes. This one had 120 marked on it.
- Q. On what part.
- A. It was the Unit mark and the figures were 120 on the tailboard of the truck.
- Q. Did you see any other distinguishing marks on the truck?
- A. Yes there was a number on the left side of the truck.
- Q. What was the number?
- A. GL 121.
- Q. Before you pulled up beside the truck, what did you see around the truck?
- A. A group of soldiers, one CWAC in the back of the truck, and other people standing around.
- Q. Was there anybody with the girl in the truck?
- A. I don't remember.
- Q. How many soldiers were standing around the truck?
- A. I don't remember.
- Q. What were they doing?
- A. I saw one of them putting a carton, which I thought, was liquor into the truck.
- Q. Where were they taking these cartons from?
- A. I didn't notice where they came from. They were standing around with liquor on the sidewalks. This soldier passed the liquor over the tail board.
- Q. How many soldiers were putting cartons in the truck?
- A. I actually only noticed one soldier putting a carton into the truck.
- Q. When you first saw this soldier who later put the carton in the truck, where was he standing?
- A. Behind the truck.
- Q. Where did he go after he put the carton in the truck?
- A. I don't know. We were only there about 5 minutes just to look the crowd over.
- Q. What did the soldiers around the truck do while you were there?
- A. Nothing.
- Q. Could you see into the truck?
- A. No Sir.
- Q. Did you see any soldiers or civilians approach the truck with cartons in their hands?

000552

- 217 -

- A. No
- Q. Do you know who the soldiers were?
- A. No
- Q. Do you know what Unit they belong?
- A. No
- Q. Do you know the CWAC girl who you saw in the truck?
- A. No
- Q. Did you ever see her before?
- A. I think I saw her in our barracks
- Q. Have you seen her since?
- A. No
- Q. Could you pick her out if a parade were arranged?
- A. No, I don't think so.
- Q. What did she do during the 5 minutes you were there?
- A. Just standing up in back of the truck.
- Q. During the whole of the 5 minutes you were there, you only saw one carton being put in the back of the truck. Is that correct?
- A. Yes
- Q. Did the soldiers you saw appear to be drunk?
- A. They were quite cheerful but were not drunk.
- Q. Can you tell the difference between the ordinary soldier's dress and the Provost Corps?
- A. Yes
- Q. Were these soldiers wearing white belts or leggings?
- A. No
- Q. Did I understand you to say you saw the CWAC in this truck previously in the barracks?
- A. Yes, I thought I did.
- Q. Did you see any officers standing in the vicinity of your car?
- A. Yes, two officers on the sidewalk, just watching. They didn't seem to be paying attention to the case being loaded in the truck.
- Q. Did you take a note of the GL 121 on the truck?
- A. Yes, I was told by one of the Padres.
- Q. Are you sure that this is the number?
- A. Yes, this is the number I wrote down. (shown in pocket notebook)

- Q. Are you sure that it was a 500 cut you saw?
- A. The reason I think so was because I learned the difference of vehicles on the drivers course.
- Q. What did you do after the 5 minutes you were there?
- A. I pulled up back of the truck and turned about and came back up Bishop St. and Barrington Sts. to H.Q.
- Q. What rank was the girl on the truck?
- A. I believe she was a Pte. I didn't notice the ranks of the other soldiers.
- Q. Can you describe the CWAC on the truck?
- A. No, I dont remember.
- Q. What did the Senior Chaplains seemed to be concerned about on the streets?
- A. They debated whether or not to get out to stop the mob or go back home.
- Q. What else did you see during the day of 8th May?
- A. I didn't see very much. I went back to barracks as soon as I could.
- Q. What did you see at Barracks?
- A. Some of the girls were drinking and appeared mad because they could not get out.
- Q. Did you have a drink?
- A. No Sir, I dont drink. I was on duty that day.
- Q. Did you see any instances of people handling liquor in through the fence around the CWAC barracks?
- A. I was at Cathedral Barracks between 6 and 7 p.m. I was just outside the dry canteen which is the only canteen we have. Some of the girls wanted to get out and were made because they couldn't get out; others who had been down town wanted to stay in. We had been down town and didn't want to see any more.
- Q. How far is the dry canteen from the fence?
- A. About 4 feet. It circles all of Cathedral Barracks. Outside the fence were a few sailors who were drunk and had liquor on them. They wanted to slide it through the fence to the girls. Some girls wanted this and others didn't. One sailor put through a bottle of hard liquor to one girl and she throw it back on the street and smashed it.
- Q. How many CWAC personnel saw this going on?
- A. I dont know. There was a fairly large crowd.
- Q. What happened then?
- A. There was much said. The girls who wanted to get out were made at us for being opposed to them for getting out.

- Q. Were the girls inclined to take the liquor from the sailors?
- A. They were a bit under the influence of liquor themselves at that time. We suggested something to take their attention, by making sandwiches and coffee in the canteen and a YWCA worker that stays at the barracks went over to the canteen and played the piano for a sing song. That worked for a little while.
- Q. What happened to the sailors?
- A. I didn't notice. I think they drifted along. They were quite angry when the liquor went back over the fence and hit the street.
- Q. Did the sailors try to get over the fence?
- A. No. I remained in camp for the rest of the evening.
- Q. Is there anything else you saw in the nature of a disturbance?
- A. No Sir.
- Q. When did the picket arrive?
- A. I dont know. After the sailors left the girls went back into their huts. The sailors just drifted along. They were only there about 10 minutes.
- Q. When you pulled your car up by the truck, was there a driver in the truck?
- A. I dont remember.
- Q. Was the tailboard up?
- A. Yes
- Q. How many cases were in the truck at the time you were there?
- A. I couldn't see in it.

WITNESS: 52

David Oland Sr., 32 Regina Terrace, Halifax, N.S.  
being duly sworn, states:

- Q. What is your position with Keith's Brewery?
- A. Master Brewer.
- Q. Where there any disturbances of the peace involving Keith's Brewery on Monday the 7th May 45?
- A. No.
- Q. Will you tell us what you know concerning the disturbances of the peace at Keith's Brewery on the 8th May 45?
- A. I got a phone call from a man who lives next door to the brewery stating that they were breaking in to Keith's. This was approx. a quarter to 2 or 10 to 2 on the 8th. I immediately called the plant and got in contact with our Second Engineer who was on duty and he told me they had been breaking in. He was quite confused with I told him that I would be down immediately. I communicated/Colonel Oland who owns the business and told him the matter and said that I was going down to the plant at once.

I drove down Morris St. and along Water St. and stopped in front of the National Fish Plant on Water St. south of our plant. Our plant is on Water St. between Bishop and Saulter Sts. There were hundreds of people to be seen around the plant and I got out of the car and walked along. The man who was on duty was some distance from the plant -- he had fled. We had 2 men on that day, the regular watchman and we had an engineer. The man who I met was the day man, as we say. The engineer was not there. When I got to the premises I met the engineer. He hadn't left the premises. There were hundreds of people around the plant. Regarding the proportion, there was a mixture of civilians and sailors mainly and they were pouring back and forth into the entrances to the plant from the street. I hadn't got into the plant yet. I went in with the crowd and it seemed that I was not able to do much to prevent them but I went up in our south yard of our plant and they were breaking in a door and windows. And when I say they, I mean various individuals. It was also very easy to come over down Hollis St. over the back fence into our premises. And then I saw some Shore Patrol. A little while later the Shore Patrol were trying to clear the inside individuals out of the yard. There was an officer in charge, a Lieut. MacKenzie, I believe. Some while later the City Police arrived and they finally got the crowd cleared out of the premises by which time they had cleared out one floor in the MacLean Building, that is the floor that was stripped. This is a combination shipping and storage room and is located on the side of the plant facing Saulter St.

- Q. Did any one enter the large main warehouse at the back of the shipping room?
- A. Quite definitely, I saw individuals breaking in there. There is a couple of windows and an old doorway and they were breaking in.
- Q. Who were these individuals.
- A. Unfortunately, I don't know, I would say both navy and civilians. I didn't see any army, only saw one air force man in the plant and as for the army there were very few.

- Q. The breaking was not done by the army?
- A. I didn't see any army doing any breaking.
- Q. Did you see any army personnel carrying liquor away?
- A. I don't know, I wouldn't like to say I did or I didn't, I may have. I don't remember.
- Q. Was the breaking in and removing from the large warehouse as serious as in the front room, what would you say to that? To what extent was entrance made in the large main warehouse?
- A. Well through all exits and doors. There were 3 ways to get into that warehouse, there was from Saulter St., on the north from inside the main office, and also from the South Yard. I think that warehouse was entered from all 3 points, that is the main warehouse.
- Q. Was much liquor removed from the large warehouse?
- A. It was to the best of my knowledge, it was cleaned out. There was a small room in the warehouse and that was entered also but I don't know what lost there was. There was some left in it.
- Q. Prior to the raids being made where was the most of the liquor in the brewery?
- A. It was in the shipping and storage room, the front entrance of which faces on Saulter St. There is a second storey to this building which contained beer and it was not touched. There are only 3 depositories of beer in the building. The second storey was not broken into.
- Q. Would you go ahead.
- A. I think I left off where I was saying the City Police, yes, there were a number of Naval Shore Patrol too, I don't know about the Provost Corps, I'm not sure there may have been army there but I don't remember. They finally got them out of the building, pushed them back into the South Yard and after an interval got them out around the gates and outside the fence. And even after that the crowd hung around and heaved bottles around, one through the main window into the office. But the main looting was over by then.
- Q. What time was it over by?
- A. The main looting was over by 4 or 4:30.
- Q. After the crowd had been cleared was there any recurrence of looting later on that day?
- A. Not that I know of. We had no trouble after having cleared this section --- the main shipping room and the storage room on the same floor. We had trouble with individuals coming in from Hollis St. over the fence into the yard and also trouble with individuals breaking in through the South Arch Gate from Water St.
- Q. Who were these individuals?
- A. Various ones both civilians and service men and when I say service men, I mean all inclusive --- navy, army.



Q. How many army individuals did you see at that time coming into your warehouse?

A. Very few, the proportion was small I would say.

I might say too, that we were very grateful, thankful, that no machinery or equipment was touched --- or damaged.

Q. Will you tell us, generally, what precautions you took before the 8th May 45, with regard to protecting the brewery?

A. Well, we planned to have ~~of~~ a number of extra men on duty to take care of any unexpected trouble but came Monday, the 7th and we had no trouble and we, I think, all believing that ~~th~~ we would not be troubled and since there was no trouble on Monday night and we put a man on day and night so we thought the storm had passed us by. We were like a lot of people caught off guard.

Q. Did you make any request to the City Police for assistance on the 8th after the looting began?

A. I phoned the City Police as soon as I got down town to the plant and they said that they would do their best.

Q. How many members of the City Police were actually on duty at your warehouse that day, on the 8th.

A. I remember seeing 3 Sergeants at the same time and there must have been 8 or 10 police men there at one time. I would say 8 to 10, that would <sup>be</sup> truly a maximum at any one time.

Q. And you don't remember how many Provost there at any one time?

A. I don't remember.

Q. Can you distinguish from an Army Provost and an ordinary soldier? They wear a different coloured arm-band and white belt and anklets.

A. I was looking for the armbands of red and black. I was particularly looking for Provost Armbands and I wasn't paying particular attention to the different coloured belts. Regarding the Provost Corps down at Keith's, You know I kind of think or figure in my mind whether I saw any there at the time or not, I don't remember.

Q. Did you hear from any of the other people, your men, that the army provost were helpful to you? Have you received any reports from any of your employees as to, with regard to, the help given by army provost to your plant that day? What reports have you received, or what did your employees say?

A. Truthfully I can't say that I remember. I never took the trouble to find out.

There is one other thing that I may say. The outstanding thing that hit me in the face after having been down there a couple of hours was the lack of direction. There were plenty of men down there, to do a job they needed one man to lead them.

Q. Will you tell us what you know concerning the disturbances at Oland & Son, Agricola St. Brewery?

A. On the 8th May 45. I got up there approximately 6:30 P.M. after leaving Keith's and Sons, things were quietening down and I went up above. By this time there was still crowds

around for some time. Largely civilians, they were around the plant.

Q. Did you see any service personnel?

A. Some but not a great many.

Q. What were the service personnel?

A. Mainly navy. I met a number of your provost corps, your officers, who's names I have forgotten or can't remember. They were on duty at the plant and there was quite a number I say soldiers, a few were provosts, but I mainly think they were called in from outside and shortly after that the sound car went by with Mayor Butler, and I think Admiral Murray, calling all service personnel back to barracks and announcing the curfew.

And the remarkable thing was that as soon as that car went by the people started to stream to their homes, it was the curfew announcement. I should say that this was about 20 to 30. It was very effective. That showed that most of the people, in my mind, were just curious or spectators.

Q. Did you see any actual looting at the Agricola St. plant?

A. There was no looting at Olands. As I understand it, the gate was partly smashed in, but there was a force of, I don't know, they were provost, Naval shore patrol, that were on the grounds, they had been tipped off and they were ready and there was no looting of liquor at that plant.

Subsequently, we had forces of Army on each night as you probably know, there was no further trouble.

FIFTY-  
THIRD  
WITNESS: 53

Major A.I. Lomas, Managing Director of Henry Birks and Sons, Halifax, N.S.  
Being duly sworn, states:

- Q. Where is the Birks store in Halifax located?
- A. On Barrington St., between George and Prince Sts.
- Q. Do you know anything concerning the disturbances in Halifax on the 7th May 45, from personal knowledge?
- A. No sir, I don't.
- Q. Will you kindly tell us what you know concerning the disturbances of the peace in Halifax on the 8th May 45?
- A. At approx. 2 P.M. I received a telephone call from the janitor of the adjoining building to the effect that our 4 windows had been broken in. Then I got together as many of my staff as I could, went down town to the store with the idea of putting up the boards which we had previously made.

The boarding that we made was only shoulder-high boarding it wasn't boarding to protect our entire building. We only made the same kind of boarding as we did for the time the King and Queen were here.

We put those up and then retired to the interior. Then on receipt of news from numerous friends and business men along Barrington St. I realized that the situation from a controlling stand-point was hopeless and we began to carry our merchandise, silverware and other valuables to the vaults and stores down stairs and locked it up.

We thought the attack on us had gone down and we were alright until they made an attack on our south door. We couldn't see the personnel because we were behind the shutters.

My wife and family had accompanied me down. Again we weren't aware of the seriousness of the situation and I had allowed them to accompany me down. I felt that the crowd was moving and I said to the rest of them -- I'm going to take them up to the garage, that is my family. The boards had been taken down from some windows and I said to them -- If you see an opening in the crowd see if you can put the boards up again. By the time I got up to the garage and back again. The crowd had attacked or the attack had come on our north door. Four or five sailors and one in particular, led the attack. I can't tell you whether he was a boy or an under-sized man. And somebody opened the door and there was a parade in and out. I saw no army or air force going in. I saw no personnel of the services carrying out anything. It was the civilians that carried out the loot. I couldn't see any navy carrying loot.

I left then and went over to the Police Station and asked the group of Shore Patrol and Civilian Police to come up, they both said it was hopeless. I then went back, and if you can imagine anything worse, I stood there helplessly watching them carry it out.

Q. What was the general nature of the stuff they were able to carry out?

A. Handbags and such, cheap stuff, that we hadn't been able to carry out or down into the cellar. We left the stock which was under neath the counters, we did n't think they would go there. But they emptied out underneath our counters and what they didn't carry out the smashed.

Then I carried out what I had in mind and I carried my wife and family home. I had a phone call almost as soon as I got there. It was a Petty officer in the navy -- he said I saw your name there and I phoned you, they are gone now would you come back and take over here. My assistant was still with me and we went back and took over control.

Q. How long did the actual looting last?

A. I had lost track of time but I would say not over an hour and a half, from the time they got in until we got back at approx. 6 or 6:30.

Q. Will you give us a rough estimate of the valuables taken?

A. I can't. We have taken an inventory but our books are kept in Montreal. Most of our really valuable articles and stuff had been placed in the vaults. Very little of the valuable merchandise was left out. The valuable merchandise that was on display had been removed from display and moved to the basement, and they didn't go there. A carpenter that was with us had made the suggestion that we pull the main switch which we did and they never found there way to the basement. The main switch was pulled when the looting began and that left little light. It was dark down there in the basement, there was a little light from the street coming through the front windows. He just made the suggestion but it was very good, it wasn't the money it saved us so much, it was the merchandise which you can't get now. It save d us a lot.

Q. Were the store fixtures damaged?

A. I don't think there were 10 pieces of glass in the counters that were left in one piece.

Q. Was that deliberate?

A. What put the fear <sup>into</sup> me was this lad who took a hold of the broken brass grillwork on the door and just twisted it off as if it was just a piece of tin and he used it to smash up the windows and the rest of the fixtures.

Q. Did you have any recurrence of trouble after that first hour and a half of looting?

A. No sir. The curfew had come into effect then.

Q. Did you see any other disturbances that evening?

A. I worked there until after half past 12, midnight, and then of course the streets were clear, the curfew had did that.

Q. Were any army personnel actively engaged in the Birks' store?

A. There were no service personnel carrying out anything during the time I was watching from across the street.

Q. Did you see any member of the Army?

A. I was across the street but I saw none.

Q. In your opinion were not to blame for the damage to Henry Birks and Sons Store?

A. No sir.

- 227 -

FIFTY-  
FOURTH

WITNESS: *Mr. W. Roy Eisnor, 104 Quinpool Road, Halifax, N.S.*  
The witness, being duly sworn, states:

Q.1. What is your name?

A. Mr. W. Roy Eisnor, 104 Quinpool Road, Halifax, N.S.

Q.2. What is your occupation?

A. Merchant; owner of Bloomfield Mens' Wear, 217 Agricola St.

Q.3. What do you know about the events of 7 May, 1945.

A. When we heard the Victory news, we closed shop at about 11 a.m. and took our goods out of the shop window and decorated the window with flags. During the rest of the afternoon and evening I saw no disturbances of the peace.

Q.4. Why did you take the goods of the shop window upon closing the store?

A. We had heard that most merchants were taking their goods out in case of the windows' being pushed in by the crowds. We did not anticipate any other disturbances.

Q.5. What do your know about events of 8 May, 1945?

A. I think I heard about the distrubances of the evening of 7-8 May before I went to the Church Service at the Garrison Grounds at 10 o'clock. After this service, we went to out own church service, as all churches were holding services at about 11 a.m. There was a good attendance and the same seemed to be true of other churches.

After church we made a tour of down town Halifax but saw no disturbances, although there were quite a few on the streets. This was when I took some movies. I lunched at home, which is about a twelve minute walk from my store, drove to the country and returned about 5:15. Then I went down to my father's store on Gottingen Street. The windows of my father's store were broken just as we turned the corner. I took some movies just as we turned this corner, on Gottingen Street looking north, my father driving the car. I was in the back seat. After taking a few feet of film, I took over the car to get it away out of the crowd. I then returned to my father who told me to go to my own store on Agricola Street as he had heard there was trouble up in that vicinity. Before the movies were taken, the crowd, with Navy personnel leading and civilians following, moved from north-west Gottingen Street across to my father's store. A Naval chap broke the window. Three Navy chaps led; one broke the window and grabbed a jacket out of the window and later put it on under his gabardine. The three appeared to be Ordinary Seamen, who wore a round rig.

I then parked the car and came back but my father told me then to go to my own store on Agricola Street where he had heard there was trouble. Upon arriving at my own store on Agricola Street, I found that there was no trouble at it, but the liquor store in the same building had been broken into. As soon as I had parked the car, I went over in front of my store and stood there for a few minutes

# 228 -

while the crowd passed by. I stood there watching. I saw Navy and I think there was the odd Army, and lots of civilians. Most were coming out with goods. I am not sure whether I saw any Army men carrying bottles or cases of beer, or not. A few minutes after, a civilian in blue overalls, made motions of breaking my store window. He was intoxicated and after a talk with him he said he would leave, which he did.

A short time after that four Navy personnel sat down in front of the store on the sidewalk near the telegraph pole, and were drinking from bottles, and started to eye the store windows. For some time I talked to one of the sailors in particular, who seemed to be the ringleader, or the one intent upon action. My cousin and manager had joined me and also tried to reason with them. The sailors moved from the front of the store a couple of times and we thought we had them pacified, but they returned two or three times. One time, when my cousin saw a sailor with a bottle in his hand behind his shoulder as if to throw, he put his hand on the sailor's shoulder and remarked something to the effect, "you don't want to throw that through the window, do you". The sailor drew back a little further and said, in effect, "you wouldn't try to stop me would you", in a menacing tone.

We heard a loud thump on the Bloomfield Street window of my store and moved to see if the window was broken, but it was not.

After that the sailor hurled the bottle once and hit the woodwork of the door; a second time and hit the door again, and possibly a third time, before breaking the glass in the front door. No shop-front windows were broken at that instant, and as they crowded in my cousin and I tried to stop them.

As I remember it, the crowd was composed of sailors, a great many children, and civilians. I remember seeing no Army or Airforce personnel at this time.

My cousin and I were pushed out of the way and the crowd that got into the store at first, not being able to come out through the door, came out through the shop-front windows by breaking them; they scattered in all directions. I noticed one man in a black felt hat who appeared intoxicated, breaking the south front window of the store from the outside, getting a small cut from the glass on his cheek, below the left ear. This man was later seen by the Air Raid Warden of platoon number 9, Norman Lloyd, breaking the inside mirrors and the glass in the show-cases, with a tie-rack as a weapon.

During this time I was outside trying to salvage some of the goods from the people.

I stopped one Petty Officer and tried to take some goods away from him. He wore the Voluntary Service Medal. When I grabbed him I asked him if that was what he got his badge for. He looked shame-faced and went away.

- 229 -

I also saw a tall Chief Petty Officer come out of the store and go down Agricola Street with loot in his arms.

I also saw a man wearing a soldier's uniform, which I was told later might have been a Reserve Army uniform, carrying goods from my store across the street. I followed him a bit, and saw him enter a rear door of a building. This rear entrance is next to the school yard off Ferne Street. I have reported this to the civil police. I saw this man definitely do this once, and I am told he made several trips from my store. I would say he was sober. I do not believe I could identify him.

After the crowd cleared I entered the store, and with the help of the A.R.P. Warden, took a Navy chap out of the office in the rear of the store. He was sitting amongst a lot of book matches, which had evidently fallen off the shelves, and with a bottle in one hand, was trying to light the matches with the other.

While all this was happening, my mother and my wife were watching from across the street.

At this time there was quite a large crowd made up principally of service personnel and civilians. Mostly Navy, with a few Army personnel, comprised the service personnel. Very little traffic was able to pass at this time.

My store was broken into about 6:15. Shortly before that time, I saw an Army jeep arrive near the liquor store. It bore a Nova Scotia license #9-12-08. This information I have given to Lieut. MacCarthy. I did not see where the men in this jeep went. The driver wore a leather jerkin. They all got out of the jeep at the same time.

My store on Agricola Street was completely looted. Mirrors, show-cases, and store windows were destroyed. My damages total approximate \$18,000 for stock, and \$1,225 for fixtures. Our ledgers were in the safe, but invoices, statements and letter files, along with all other office equipment, were destroyed. One telephone was stolen and the other used as a hammer. Two typewriters were stolen, one of which was later recovered, damaged, by a lady from a child down the street, and returned to me. The adding machine was broken. The cash register was said to have been taken out on the street car tracks and banged up and down several times. No money was stolen.

In the course of cleaning up we came across two articles of interest. One was a wedge-shaped Army cap without badge, with the initials "F R" on the lining - the "F" reversed and tied to the leg of the "R". The other article was an identification bracelet with number 2303, and name George A. Miller, C.P.O., R.C.N., on the back; and on the front "Hands off, he's mine - your wife, Gwen"; with a Navy crest. These articles were given to Lieut. MacCarthy of the Army.

Q.6. Will you tell us what you saw of the activities of the civic police, R.C.M.P., Army Provosts, and Navy Shore Patrol, at the time of the looting of the Agricola Street



- 230 -

Liquor Store, your father's, and your own store?

- A. At my father's store on Gottingen Street I cannot remember seeing any police, civic or service.

At the Agricola Street building I saw a truck with "RCN" on it, and Navy Shore Patrol men standing by it. On the back of the truck were several wooden cases. I saw a Navy Shore Patrol man get a case and put it on the back of the truck. When the truck drove away, later, it had very few in it, all the occupants wearing the armbands and leggings of the Navy Shore Patrol. No attempt was made by them to interfere with the looting of the my store, or to control their own personnel.

I am told that before I arrived, the Navy Shore Patrol made an attempt to stop the disturbances in the rear of the liquor store, and that one man got a very bad cut. They made no attempt to stop the looting when I saw them.

I can't remember whether I saw any of the Army Provost that day, or not.

There were no R.C.M.P. or civic police in sight.

- Q.7. How many cases of breaches of discipline of Army personnel did you see on the 8th of May, apart from the one specific case which you have mentioned?

- A. None that I recollect.

I took some movies during that day which include the looting of my father's store on Gottingen Street.

I might say that a large percentage of my customers are Navy personnel, but I did not see any of my customers that day at our store.

- 231 -

FIFTY-  
FIFTH

WITNESS 55

Captain N.E. Whelpley, attached  
A.23 C.A. & A.A. T.C., Eastern Passage, N.S.,  
having been duly sworn, states:

Q. Did you see any of the disturbances of the peace  
in Halifax, N.S. on 7th May 45?

A. No sir.

Q. Did you see any disturbances on the 8th May 45?

A. Yes sir.

Q. Will you tell the Court briefly what you saw?

A. I was off duty on the afternoon of 8th May and  
arrived in Halifax around 1500 hrs. I proceeded  
up George Street where I met a small crowd which  
said they were going to break into the Buckingham  
street store of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission.  
This crowd was composed mainly of civilians, quite  
a number of Navy and I only remember seeing one  
soldier and I did not see any Air Force. There  
could be about 50 or 75 people in this crowd.  
I followed along behind to see what was going on.  
They were going north on Water Street and turned  
up at Buckingham Street.

When I arrived at the corner of Buckingham and  
Barrington Sts. I saw a large crowd outside of  
the liquor store, and when I went up there, I saw  
a large group of civilians and naval personnel  
going in through one window and coming out through  
the other carrying liquor of all sorts, mainly  
beer.

I went back to the corner of Barrington St and  
there a civilian gentleman came out of Aaron's  
Clothing shop and asked me if I would help clear  
the looters from his shop. I went in and between  
the two of us we managed to get the people out  
of the shop, who were mainly civilians and naval  
personnel and one soldier, the latter left  
immediately upon my entering. He had no loot with  
him when I saw her and had no loot when he left  
the store. The civilians were quite sober and  
left when I asked them. The Naval ratings were  
under the influence and a little persuasion and a  
few pushes were all that they needed.

I then went across to the other corner of Barrington  
Street to the Progress Stores because I could see  
a large crowd inside the store taking clothing and  
equipment, such as a typewriter and cash register.  
On entering the store I could see that the crowd  
was mainly civilians with 2 or 3 naval ratings,  
but no soldiers were there.

I cleared the store and took up a position in one  
of the windows facing Buckingham St and attempted  
to stop any further looting. After I had been there  
about an hour I noticed a sober soldier not carrying  
anything walking along in the middle of the street  
and called to him to help me keep the crowd from  
entering the Progress Store.

This was impossible because all the windows had been broken and the door forced, which gave 5 means of entrance to the building. After repeated attempts to enter, made by naval personnel some of whom were armed with broken beer bottles, we withdrew from the building as without further help it was a hopeless task to save anything.

I didn't know that this condition existed all along Barrington Street at that time and went to a phone in the building next door and got in touch with the Provost Corps. They said to stay where I was and do what I could to stop any further looting.

By this time the Progress Store was fairly well cleaned out. I then went to the Fit-Rite Store near the corner of Buckingham and Barrington St and found an Army Artillery Sergeant guarding the building. He told me his father owned the store and the two of us stood in the entrance to stop the looting and this store lost no merchandise whatever. While we were standing in the entrance we could see windows being smashed by Naval personnel, using empty bottles, stones, etc. I saw no army personnel or no civilians doing any actual breaking of windows.

We relieved naval personnel and civilians of between 20 and 30 bottles of mixed liquor, which the Sgt and I stored in the Fit-Rite Store. I stayed there until 2330 hrs, when I was picked up by the Provost vehicle and taken to my home which is in Halifax. I saw no other disturbances the rest of the day.

- Q. Did you see any army personnel at the time you saw naval personnel breaking windows on Barrington Street?
- A. Just the one soldier I have mentioned. He was walking in the middle of the street when I called and asked him to help me guard the Progress Store. We held the crowd off as long as possible, but when naval ratings with broken bottles in their hands slashed at us we decided to leave before any undue bloodshed was caused.
- Q. How long were you in front of the Progress Store warding off attempts to enter, before you asked this soldier to help you?
- A. About an hour.
- Q. How ere you dressed?
- A. In battle dress.

- 255 -

Q. Did you have much difficulty clearing these stores?

A. It was not very difficult to persuade the Navy to leave these stores and when they went out they stayed out as a rule, but due to the fact that a large crowd of civilians were standing outside the windows waiting for an opportunity to enter, it was almost impossible for one or two persons to keep the buildings completely cleared.

Q. During the time of the disturbances which you have mentioned, did you see any city police there?

A. I saw one of the mounted city policemen, who was not mounted and didn't have a horse, walking along Barrington Street.

Q. Was he helping to put down the disturbances?

A. No, he appeared to be mixed in with the crowd and appeared to be under the influence of liquor.

Q. Did you see any members of the Army Provost during the disturbances?

A. I saw a number of Provost Corps who were mainly patrolling the streets in vehicles in the late afternoon. They were apparently going around the streets getting army personnel to return to their barracks.

Q. Did you see the Navy Shore Patrol that day?

A. The Navy Shore Patrol was in evidence, but as far as I could see, they didn't attempt to stop any of the rioters from looting.

Q. How many Shore Patrol did you see?

A. I would say I saw about 10, in two bodies of five each. These are the only Service police I saw all day. This of course concerns only one corner of Barrington Street.

- 234 -

FIFTY-  
SIXTH  
WITNESS: 56

Lt.Col.T.R. Moighen, Officer Commanding, A-23 Coast and Anti-Aircraft Artillery Training Centre, Eastern Passage, being duly sworn, states: N.S.

Q. How long have you been Officer Commanding, A-23 C.&A.A.A.T.C.

A. Since 8th May 45.

Q. What is the total strength of your command as of the 7th May 45?

A. 69 Officers and 628 O.R.s.

Q. Have you your battery strength too?

A. 43 Officers, 526 O.R.'s.

Q. What were the numbers of personnel under command out of barracks not on duty in Halifax and Dartmouth on the 7th and 8th May 45?

A. On May 7th 45, morning: nil, afternoon: 2 Officers and 6 O.R.s, evening: 3 Officers and 70 O.R.'s.  
On May 8th 45, morning: 8 Officers and 10 O.R.s, afternoon: 16 Officers and 180 O.R.'s., evening: 16 Officers and about 125 O.R.'s.

There was a movie in the camp that evening which was well attended, the evening of the 8th.

Q. The figures you have given were passes allowed?

A. That is the basis of the figures.

Q. What personnel knowledge have you of any army personnel under your command, or that were otherwise involved in the disturbances of the peace in Halifax and Dartmouth on the 7th and 8th May 45?

A. I have no personal knowledge.

Q. What cases have been reported to you of personnel under your command as having been involved in the disturbances of the peace in Halifax and Dartmouth on the 7th and 8th May 45?

A. There was one man attached to me for rations and quarters and discipline who was apprehended by the civil police in Dartmouth and was sentenced to 6 months in jail, he was B44375 Bombadier Marshall, G.S., of the 21st A.A. Regt.

There was one other man, D61433 Gunner Gervais, J.L., of the 21st Ack Ack Regt. attached to me for rations and quarters only, whom was apprehended by the civil police in Dartmouth and sentenced to 6 months in jail.

These are the only cases that I know of or that were reported to me.

Q. What instructions or orders did you receive from higher authority relating to V-E Day prior to 7th May 45?

A. On the 10th Apr 45 I received a notice from H.Q. M.D.No.6 summoning me to a meeting at that H.Q. on 13th Apr 45 to discuss the operation of Messes and Canteens on V-E Day.

Q. What was decided at that meeting?

A. At the meeting it was generally recommended that messes and canteens be left open but that it would be left to the discretion of the Commanding Officers. But I did not submit my suggestions to the D.O.C. and I never received any further information on the subject.

Q. Did you receive any other orders such as those, from higher authority other than those which you have just mentioned?

A. None.

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you prior to midnight May 6th @ 7th 45 relating to V-E Day? other than routine?

A. Following this meeting at District H.Q.s I determined to endeavour to provide entertainment in the camp under my command on V-E Day.

I called a meeting of the senior officers. We made certain plans and then I called a muster parade on 16th Apr 45 and outlined those plans to all ranks.

Q. What did those plans consist of?

A. I told them that when V-E Day was announced all personnel would be paraded on the square with the band. We would have a short service and then we would march into the wet canteen for free beer. That if the announcement came in the morning we would work as usual in the afternoon. That in the evening we would have an all ranks dance in the drill hall and that we hoped to make arrangements for a number of C.W.A.C. personnel to be conveyed in from Halifax.

This dance was planned to take place on the evening of the day that V-E Day was announced, providing that it didn't come too late in the afternoon or evening. This was actually held on the evening of the 7th.

I announced to the troops at this muster parade that I would not restrict their passes on that day, that those who were entitled to them on that day would get them. I stressed to them that they would have more entertainment in the camp than they would have outside. I urged them to make suggestions to their representatives and I set up a committee for that purpose.

Following that I sent officers to contact No. 17 and 10 Adm. Units C.W.A.C., to endeavour to get C.W.A.C. girls for the dance, with the result that practically all agreed to come to the dance.

We went to the Nova Scotian Liquor Commission to get an extra supply so that we could keep our men in the camp and we did get this liquor.

Q. What orders were issued and what arrangements did you make on May 7th 45 relating to V-E Day, other than routine?

A. Somebody came into my office at roughly 1045 hours and told me that the announcement of V-E Day had come over the radio. I then tried to reach H.Q. M.D.No.6 to confirm this but I was unable to do so. I then heard the sirens and whistles of the boats in the harbour, which had previously been determined as a signal by the papers I had read. I then had to decide

- 236 -

whether it was V-E Day or not. From the actions of the men around there I decided it was really V-E Day.

Q. Did you previously receive any instructions from H.Q.M.D. No. 4 as to the basis on which V-E Day would be officially announced?

A. No I did not.

Q. Continue.

A. So then I issued my instructions as previously outlined. All personnel would parade on the square including the 2 Padres. We all went down to the square, had the P.A. system set up and we sang 2 hymns, we had two short prayers, one from the R.C. Padre and one from the Protestant Padre, and a short address and then with the band we all marched to the wet canteen for a free beer.

At 1200 hrs. this was stopped and the O.R.'s paraded to their various mess halls for the noonday meal. I then went to the mess halls and told them that they would carry on with normal duties in the afternoon but that they would be broken off at 1600 hrs. I didn't want them to be lying around with nothing to do. 1700 hrs. is the normal supper hour, they would usually be broken off at 1700 hrs.

I forgot to say that when they paraded on the square I repeated the plans for the dance in the evening and that we had roughly 200 cwaes coming over for the party.

During the course of the afternoon we confirmed arrangements with the C.W.A.C. by telephone, we arranged a convoy of carefully picked drivers, at least half of whom were officers, to leave the training centre at 1700 hrs. and go to Halifax. We also made special arrangements with the Ferry Commission that when we appeared they would reserve the whole ferry for us, and put us on in one lot. The dance commenced at 2000 hrs. at just about which time the convoy returned from Halifax with the girls. The dance continued until midnight. The C.W.A.C. from Halifax were then placed in the trucks again and convoyed back to their barracks, although the rioting was pretty well on in Halifax by this time, they were taken to their barracks.

There were no disturbances or incidents of any nature in my camp that day and I was in camp all day. That is all for the 7th.

Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on May 8th 45 other than routine?

A. On the 8th I issued the order that the day would be treated as Sunday, with skeleton staffs only on duty, the whole in conformity with a telegram or letter from H.Q. M.D. No. 6. It was phoned to us and then we got the confirmation the following day. This has the same information that is contained in the telegram that has been filed as Exhibit "B". I received the call about 1550 hours on the 7th May 45.

Q. Continue?

A. These are the only orders and arrangements made by me on May 8th 45 other than routine till we came to the evening when we were ordered to despatch a detachment to Dartmouth. At 1745 h



- 237 -

the D.A.A.C.1 of H.Q.M.D.No.6 called the Orderly Officer and ordered all personnel confined to barracks and he requested a party of approx. 40 Officers and N.C.O.'s to report at the Liquor Store Dartmouth to assist the civil authorities. At 1750 hrs. the D.A.P.M. called the Orderly Officer and confirmed the above order but directed that the party should report to Provost H.Q. in Dartmouth, but did not give the location of the Provost H.Q. in Dartmouth. At 1840 hrs. a party consisting of 2 officers and 35 O.R's left for Dartmouth where they arrived about 1910 hrs, under the command of Capt. Paquet with them for vehicles they had a jeep and 2 or 3 16000 weights. At 1950 hrs. this party had reported to Provost H.Q. in Dartmouth and were instructed to start patrolling the streets in their vehicles directing army personnel to go back to their barracks, they took a lot of drunks in and left them at the H.Q. and despatched them in parties to their barracks. Dartmouth is about 8 miles from A-23. The party returned to A-23 at about 0100 hrs. 9th May 45.

- Q. What orders were issued and arrangements made by you on May 9th and after that, other than routine?
- A. On the 9th I had a muster parade at 1500 hrs. and I counted for all personnel except the 2 of the 21st A.A. Regt. whom I have previously named and who were in Jail in Dartmouth. We had of course notified the 21st A.A. Regt.
- Q. Do you know whether any of the personnel under your command or attached to you for rations and quarters brought back from Halifax and Dartmouth any liquor, clothing or merchandise on or after the 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. Well I saw none. The quarters, of course, are inspected every morning, none was reported to me. But, of course, my camp is situated in an isolated area and there are any number of places around the camp or in the bush where such stuff could be hidden. I heard no stories or rumours that a lot of the loot came into camp.
- Q. What disturbances of peace did you see personally in Halifax?
- A. In Halifax, and Dartmouth on the 8th May 45. At 1330 hrs I left A-23 by car for Halifax. On the ferry I was warned by an R.C.A.F. driver that it was unwise to take the car into Halifax so I sent it back on the next boat and proceeded to the Garrison grounds on foot, where I was to meet my wife and child. On the way to the Garrison Grounds I saw crowds in Downtown Halifax and a certain number of them were carrying cartons of beer. I wasn't particularly noticing but I didn't observe any army personnel.

At 1530 hrs. I left the Garrison Grounds with a civilian and in his car we drove to the business section. We left because of the crowds and because I had my wife and child with me. At 1720 hrs. I phoned the Training Centre and was told that it was quiet. At 1730 hrs. I saw a truck with Army Provost and came to me and they said that all officers were to report, but couldn't tell me where to report. I then called the 2 i/c in the Training Centre and was advised that a party of 69 were to be sent to Dartmouth. I then called Major Rutherford and arranged for transportation to drive back to the Training Centre. At 1840 hrs. I call at H.D.6 to get



the general situation. I saw it wasn't the place for me. I called again and was advised that the party had left the Training Centre.

At 1925 hours I arrived in Dartmouth. I saw a crowd leaving the liquor store and I was told by the R.C.M.P. and the local magistrate that the liquor store had been broken. I then proceeded through the city and found my party of men standing, my detachment, from A-23, standing on the corner with no orders, their officer had gone to try and locate the Provost H.Q.s and get their instructions. I went to the Provost H.Q.s and was told then that their orders were to get the army personnel off the streets. I then went on ~~to~~ to the Training Centre, I arrived there roughly at 2030 hrs. I inquired of the men and found that everything was quiet and that most of the men were attending the movie. Then I went back to Dartmouth where I arrived I arrived at roughly 2120 hrs. I went to Provost H.Q. and then to the City Hall where shortly after my detachment also arrived. A composite party of Naval Shore Patrol, R.C.A.F. personnel, my detachment, about 2 R.C.M.P. and a few army provost was then made up, placed under the command of a R.C.A.F. Elight Lieutenant who commanded by far the largest crowd of the party. They proceeded up the main streets of Dartmouth and cleared the streets of personnel and breaking up the riots. My detachment returned to Provost Headquarters at 2330 hrs and I sent half the party back to camp and then I went back to the training centre too, the rest of the party soon arrived and they were fed and then they went to bed.

FIFTY-  
SEVENTH  
WITNESS: 57

Capt. P.A.B.R. Paquet, A.23 C. &  
A.A.A.T.C., having been duly sworn  
states:

Q. What are your duties at A.23 C. & A.A.A. T.C.?

A. I am attached to the Trained Soldiers Battery,  
A.23 C. & A.A.A.T.C.

Q. Will you tell us what you know concerning the  
disturbances in Dartmouth on 8th May?

A. I was attached to A.23 C. & A.A.A.T.C. in Feb. 1945.  
At 1800 hrs on 8th May 1945, I was ordered to  
proceed in command of a detachment to Dartmouth,  
N.S. and to report to the officer or N.C.O. i/c  
of the Dartmouth Provost Detachment for special  
duty. At 1840 hrs, I left A.23 T.C. with one  
officer and 28 O.R.'s. At 1910 hrs, we arrived  
at Dartmouth, N.S. On arrival at the Dartmouth  
Provost H.Q., nobody gave me instructions until  
30 minutes later when the Sgt. i/c Dartmouth  
Provost Detachment arrived. I received instructions  
from him to patrol the city of Dartmouth and  
advise all Army personnel to return and report  
to their respective Units at once.

I sent three vehicles and 8 men in each to patrol  
the street and advise all Army personnel to return  
to their respective Units. I stayed at the  
Provost H.Q. for about 10 minutes after that.  
I then went with one Lieut. to look around the  
town. I went to the Dartmouth Ferry and over  
there I noticed that there was a disturbance.  
Two Navy ratings were breaking show windows  
followed around by the crowd. This was about  
2000 hrs.

Q. What was the crowd composed of?

A. About 90% civilians; 10% Navy. I saw one soldier.

Q. What was he doing?

A. He was with the crowd looking around.

Q. Did you see him do any breaking of windows?

A. No

Q. Did you see any other Army personnel?

A. I don't remember.

Q. Did you see anybody going into the stores?

A. Yes, I saw a crowd going into the shoe store near  
the Ferry. They came out carrying merchandise.  
A few minutes later a detachment of Municipal Police  
arrived to restore order.

Q. By what time were all the Army personnel removed  
from the streets of Dartmouth?

A. By 2030 hrs we couldn't see any Army personnel  
on the streets of Dartmouth. After the episode  
at the shoe store, I returned to Provost H.Q.  
where at 2130 hrs I received instructions to

report to the City Hall with all my men at once, which I did. It was decided to organize a parade of all the Service personnel available and Service Police to march through the main streets of Dartmouth to stop the disturbances. The R.C.M.P. co-ordinated and led the parade. The Service personnel in this parade were under the command of an R.C.A.F. officer and he advised us that when we were parading through the streets of Dartmouth we would tell everyone that Martial Law had been proclaimed and tell everyone that they must get off the streets. I don't know the name of the RCAF officer. This was shouted to the people by Service personnel on each flank of the parade.

Q. What effect did this parade have?

A. A good effect because, maybe 90 minutes after, we couldn't see anybody on the streets.

Q. Where did the parade go?

A. Through all business sections.

About 15 minutes later I was ordered by Lt.-Col. T.R. Meighen, O.C. A.23 T.C. to return to Dartmouth Provost H.Q. I did so with my men and met Col. Meighen there. Col. Meighen told me to go back to A.23 T.C., after I had waited an hour and the streets become normal again. I went back to A.23 T.C. with all my men and arrived about 0130 hrs.

Q. During the whole of the time you were in Dartmouth did you see or had you any official reports of Army personnel breaking or entering places of business?

A. ~~Ex~~ No Sir.

Q. Did you see or did you receive any official reports of Army personnel carrying liquor or merchandise?

A. No Sir.

Q. Do you know anything concerning any disturbances of the peace in Dartmouth on 8th May by Gnr. Gervais and Bdr. Marshall?

A. At approximately 2000 hrs. I was at the Dartmouth Provost H.Q. and I noticed there was a soldier there holding 2 pairs of shoes. I asked him a few questions also where he got the shoes. The answer was that somebody had given them to him. These were the only things I saw in his possession. I told him that these shoes were not his property. I asked him to give me the shoes and to stay here at Provost H.Q. His name was Gnr. Gervais. I asked Lieut. Dale, who was with me, to take full particulars.

Q. Had this soldier come in from A.23 T.C. to Dartmouth with the detachment that you brought?

A. I don't know, Sir.

While I was questioning him, the Sgt. i/c the Provost Detachment at Dartmouth told me that Gervais was wanted by the City Police, so Gervais went away with the Sgt. to the City Hall. I think the Sgt. i/c the Provost Detachment took the boots with him to the City Hall.

Q. What do you know about the case of Bdr. Marshall?

A. Nothing Sir.

Q. Was Bdr. Marshall among the men you brought to Dartmouth?

A. I dont know Sir.

Q. Did you have any trouble with the soldiers you brought in your detachment?

A. None at all.

Q. How did they act?

A. As they were supposed to act.

Q. Where did you get your instructions after arriving in Dartmouth?

A. From the Sgt. i/c Dartmouth Provost Detachment.

Q. Did you get any from the Dartmouth City Police?

A. No Sir.

Q. Did you furnish all the assistance requested of you by the Sgt. i/c Provost Detachment?

A. Yes Sir.

FIFTY  
EIGHTH  
WITNESS:58

F.51076 Sergeant MELDRUM, C.A.,  
No. 37 Provost Coy, RCO i/c Dartmouth Detachment,  
being duly sworn, states:

- Q. What were your functions on the 7 and 8th May 45?
- A. I was the Sgt in charge of the Dartmouth Provost Detachment, at Dartmouth, N.S.
- Q. How long have you been in charge of this detachment?
- A. Approximately 3 months.
- Q. How many men were serving under you on 8 May 45?
- A. 8.
- Q. Were there any disturbances in Dartmouth 7th May?
- A. None, sir.
- Q. Will you tell us of your activities on the 7th and 8th May 45?
- A. I came on duty at 0900 hrs 7 May 45. At approximately 1100 hrs I heard over the radio that the war in Europe had been ended. All members of my detachment immediately reported for duty at H.Q. Dartmouth, N.S. as previously arranged.
- I contacted the Chief of Police, Dartmouth and advised him that all members of my detachment were standing-by and that we would periodically patrol the streets of Dartmouth by motor transport. We were instructed to co-operate with the Dartmouth City Police.
- Q. What instructions or orders did you receive from higher authority regarding V.E. Day, before 7th May?
- A. I produce a letter dated 9 April 45 from the DAFM MD 6 to all detachments, and Part I Order by Major C.R. Loxway, O.C. 37 Provost Coy dated 9 April 45. These are examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "HHH"
- Q. Go on with your activities please?
- A. At 1330 hrs I received a call from Lieut. J.T. Brown, Adjutant 37 and 38 Provost Coy asking whether or not reinforcements were required for the detachment. At this time conditions in Dartmouth were quiet and did not warrant any additional Provost. However, arrangements were made for 5 additional men to report to this detachment in the evening and should conditions change, he would be notified and arrangements made for additional provost to be sent across to the detachment at Dartmouth.
- At 1900 hrs, 7 May 45, 5 Provost reported from Coy H.Q. to assist at this detachment. This would bring the strength of my detachment up to 14 members. All was quiet in the town of Dartmouth during the 7th May and as there was no sleeping accommodation available for the additional 5 men, they returned to Coy H.Q. in Halifax at 0100 hrs 8 May.

Up until 0330 hrs 8 May my detachment patrolled the streets of Dartmouth and I was periodically in touch with the Chief of Police to ascertain whether he requested any assistance and in order to keep informed of the situation in the town.

At 0800 hrs 8 May I sent out patrols periodically to cover the Dartmouth area.

At about 1300 hrs I contacted Lieut. J.T. Brown of Provost H.Q. by telephone and asked if it was possible to get reinforcements for the Dartmouth detachment for the evening of 8 May 45. I was advised that the matter would be looked into and if at all possible the reinforcements would be furnished that evening. I asked for 6 reinforcements because of the disturbances that had taken place in Halifax 7-8th May 45.

All remained normal in the town of Dartmouth up until about 1600 hrs at which time I noticed civilians and naval personnel arriving from Halifax by Ferry and carrying what appeared to be cases of liquor or beer. I did not see any soldiers among them. I passed this information on to the Chief of Police, and at that time the possibility of stepping the Dartmouth Ferry was discussed.

At about 1630 hrs I contacted Coy H.Q. and requested that additional Provost be supplied for my detachment. I was informed that no further reinforcements were available owing to the serious situation in Halifax. I advised the Chief of Police of this and at that time he asked me to provide one Provost to go on duty at the liquor store in Dartmouth at 1800 hrs. I detailed one man to go on duty there.

At 1730 hrs I received a call from the Chief of Police requesting aid at the liquor store immediately. He stated that a crowd was breaking into the liquor store. I proceeded immediately with 6 men of my detachment, to the store. On arrival at the Liquor store I saw a crowd of approximately 500, which consisted chiefly of civilians, about 25 Navy and 2 or 3 Air Force, but I did not see any Army personnel.

I noticed that the front door had been battered off its hinges and as I entered the store with my detachment, 2 civilians and one sailor rushed out of the door. I don't remember whether they were carrying anything. On entering the store I saw the Manager of the Liquor Store, 4 town police and about 6 Naval Shore Patrol. The Shore Patrol and the town police arrived at approximately the same time as we did. By the time I got in the store I think all the rioters had been ejected from the store and only a small quantity of liquor had been looted.

The front door was replaced and iron bars put across it. We all helped in replacing the front door.

At about 1740 hrs I called Coy H.Q. in Halifax from the Liquor store and advised them that the store had been broken into and that the situation in general was becoming serious as a crowd was milling around outside and threatening to break in.

I was advised to carry on as best possible and arrangements for assistance were being made. The crowds outside were very noisy and were egging on about 6 sailors and 2 Air Force men who were attempting to batter down the front door with a creosoted railway tie.

At about 1750 hrs the door gave away and the crowd which had swelled to about 800 was held back until about 1800 hrs at which time the town police suggested it was time to leave as the situation was out of hand, and as the crowd could not be held back any longer we vacated by the back door. Meeting no resistance, the crowd surged in and cleared the store out. My men and I returned to Detachment H.Q. to await further requests from the Chief of Police.

I again contacted Coy H.Q. in Halifax and advised them of the situation. I was advised that 50 men were on the way to report to my detachment from A.23 T.C. and instructions were received to clear the streets of all army personnel. I instructed my personnel to systematically patrol the streets of Dartmouth and instruct all Army personnel to return to their units or homes immediately. These patrols were all motor transport patrols. The co-operation received from Army personnel on the streets was excellent.

I was advised by the Chief of Police that action had already been taken to stop the Dartmouth Ferries at about 1830 hrs.

At about 1900 hrs, 50 men arrived from A.23 in two lorries. A.23 T.C. is approximately 5 miles away from the Town of Dartmouth. These men were broken up into 2 parties and two of my men were despatched with each party with instructions to clear the streets of all Army personnel.

By 2000 hrs the main streets were cleared and the two lorries proceed to Eastern Passage to return the men they had taken off the streets to their respective units. Two air force personnel were taken to the airport in these lorries. It is believed that most of the soldiers were taken to A.23 T.C. This was done to facilitate clearing the streets - they were not drunk.

At about 1900 hrs I was patrolling the streets of Dartmouth and I noticed a soldier on Portland Street, G.23209 Gnr LeBRUN, W. of 4 AA Bty RCA, who was very drunk. I stopped him and instructed him to proceed to his unit, but he refused to go. He was then ordered to get into the station wagon but refused and rushed down the street. This soldier was not taken into custody as it was considered inadvisable to start a fight at this time as there was no fighting on the streets and everybody had stopped to witness the incident.



- 245 -

One of the two airmen with Gnr LeBrun agreed to return to the Airport and get into the station wagon - LAC Michaud would not get in. However he leaned into the vehicle and told me he had come over from Halifax that afternoon to raid the liquor store in Dartmouth after participating in other breaks in Halifax; he also said he had helped batter down the door of the Dartmouth Liquor Commission store with a railway tie and shoved his blackened hands to substantiate his statement. He was very drunk.

Both Gnr LeBrun and LAC Michaud were picked up later by the A.23 T.C. lorries and taken to the airport at Eastern Passage and let out. I passed on the information given me by LAC Michaud, to the Air Provost Marshal at Eastern Passage Airport on 10 May 45. The Air Provost Marshal later advised me that both Gnr LeBrun and LAC Michaud had been taken into custody at the Air Force canteen at Eastern Passage at 2200 hrs 8 May 45. They advised the 4 AA Bty that Gnr LeBrun was held by them and he was later picked up by the 4th AA Bty. No charges were laid on either on those two cases.

On 11 May 45 I made a patrol to the 4th AA Bty and picked Gnr LeBrun out in identification parade and questioned him as to his activities on 8 May 45, but he wouldn't admit taking any active part in the raids either in Halifax or Dartmouth, however, he did admit being with LAC Michaud, LAC Couturier and LAC Pilon most of that afternoon and evening in Halifax and Dartmouth.

At 2010 hrs 8 May 45 I was asked by the Chief of Police to investigate a report of an injured sailor in the Dartmouth Park. I proceeded to the Park where a sailor was found with head injuries which had been dressed with a first field dressing by two Arty soldiers. It was observed that he was off the HMCS Algonquin and that another drunken sailor who was also present was off the same ship. Both were taken to the ship and turned over to the Ship's officers, who suggested that the injured sailor be taken to a doctor. I proceeded to H.Q. M.I.R. but the M.O. was not present, so the injured sailor was turned over to the Naval Shore Patrol at their detachment H.Q. My men continued to operate from the town hall from 2000 hrs until 2045 hrs, during which time it was observed that the crowds on the main streets, Portland and Commercial, consisted mainly of civilians and naval personnel with a few air force, but again no army at all on the streets.

At about 2130 hrs I was requested by the Chief of Police to assist in clearing the main streets of Dartmouth with my men. I called my detachment and instructed all but two of my men to report to the Town Hall immediately.



- 246 -

At about 2145 hrs, 50 Air Force personnel arrived from the airport under the command of 2 of their officers, to assist.

At 2200 hrs the air force personnel, soldiers from A.23 T.C., town police, my detachment and the RCMP fell in in front of the Town Hall and then proceeded south on Ochterloney St to Commercial St, turned east and proceeded down Commercial St to Portland St. We were on foot.

The rioters on the street were told, I believe, by a member of the RCMP who were leading the parade, that Martial Law had been declared and to get off the streets at once. I heard this from the back of the parade.

This broke up the crowds and the people began to disperse, and by 2245 hrs the streets were practically cleared. I followed directly behind this parade in a jeep and as loot was taken from passing rioters it was thrown into the jeep and taken to the Police Station.

At about 2300 hrs this parade was split up at the Town Hall into 3 groups and the streets patrolled until a heavy rainfall at 2345 hrs.

At 0030 hrs 9 May 45 one patrol of 20 navy personnel from HMCS Dundee and another patrol off another ship proceeded to the Dartmouth Ferry. Each patrol was placed on one of the ferries with RCMP and the two Dartmouth ferries commenced again. No Army Provost were requested on these ferries.

Members of my detachment returned to our H.Q. at 0100 hrs 9 May 45 from the Town Hall as our services were no required any longer. We maintained our normal night patrol, in fact the whole detachment stood by until 0400 hrs. From then on there were no disturbances of any kind Wednesday, Thursday or Friday.

- Q. Do you know of any specific instructions of breaches of discipline of Army personnel on 8 May 45, other than those which you have referred?
- A. None, sir, except Gnr Gervais, L. of A.23 T.C. who was sentenced to 6 months in the County Jail by Magistrate Murray on 9 May on a charge of property damage in Dartmouth 8 May 45, and B.44375 Bdr Marshal, G.S., who received a similar sentence from the same Magistrate.
- Q. What arms and ammunition do you have in the Dartmouth detachment?
- A. None, sir. We have no billies.
- Q. Were there any fires in Dartmouth 8 May 45?
- A. No, sir.

FIFTY-  
NINTH  
WITNESS: 59

Norman Dudley Murray, Stipendiary Magistrate for  
the Town of Dartmouth N.S.  
being duly sworn states:

- Q. How long have you been Stipendiary Magistrate there?
- A. Fourteen years with the exception of service in this war.
- Q. Will you tell us what you know concerning any disturbances of the peace on the 7th May 1945.
- A. There were none.
- Q. Would you be good enough to tell us what you observed and did during any disturbances of the peace in Dartmouth on the 8th May, 1945.
- A. I came into the picture after I had received a report from the Chief of Police Mr. Lawlor that the liquor store had just been broken into. I went to the Town Hall spoke to the Chief and practically immediately went to the Dartmouth Ferry and arranged with the Ferry Commission and stopped the service.
- Q. About what time?
- A. Shortly after 6 P.M. There were two boats on the service at that time. They were unloaded and sent out into the stream to await further orders. They were held in the stream for approximately seven hours. Each boat that came in, I would say, held about five hundred people. Many ordinary citizens -- men, women and children, and a large number on each boat of Naval personnel, perhaps twenty air force and, I would say, not over a dozen soldiers on each. Of the civilians a few appeared to be drunk and boisterous, a considerable number of civilians, including women, were carrying unwrapped merchandise. Some of it was silverware. Many of the naval personnel were in various stages of undress, drunk, noisy and laden with unwrapped merchandise and in some cases carrying liquor commission cartons and boxes. I went from there to the Town Hall and very shortly afterwards to Boland's Warehouse which is situated along side the liquor commission store, but Boland's loading entrance is on another street -- the street behind the liquor store.

The looting had stopped there then. I saw many people, including naval personnel, men, women and children but no soldiers or air force, coming away from that vicinity carrying large lots of groceries, apparently mainly corn flakes in large cartons. The liquor store was completely emptied of liquor at that time and completely wrecked. I saw, in travelling around, many people carrying liquor away cases and boxes away from that vicinity. I took some from some service personnel -- but not army personnel.

During the evening many plate glass windows were broken in the town and several stores were looted. I was around the town till approximately 11 P.M.

From my observations I would say that the ring-leaders were, or appeared to be, naval personnel "egged" on in some cases by civilian men and women.

The town became quiet shortly after the arrival of a squad of men from A-23 Training Centre, who were soldiers. They assisted the town police in clearing the streets. Up till that time the Mounted Police had received assistance, from the best of their ability, from the local Provost Corps detachment stationed in Dartmouth. The army authorities met all our demands for assistance and the personnel they supplied were very competent and co-operative and had no hesitation whatsoever in doing what they were told to do by the civil authorities. Army patrols were supplied for the next two or three days in the numbers and at the times when requested by the civil authorities and carried out efficiently whatever duties they were asked to carry out by the civil authorities.

As far as <sup>soldiers</sup> army personnel is concerned there have been two men convicted by me of charges arising out of the riot. Both were charged with breaking plate glass windows and both were sentenced to six months imprisonment. Both were artillery men, named Corvis and Marshal. There is a charge pending against one Times who has not yet been tried, the charge is also breaking Plate glass windows. His trial is set for Monday afternoon next. He is at the Placement Wing No. 6 District Depot. There were few soldiers noticeable on the streets during the riot and looting, none of them gave any trouble. I can say that after the army authorities, represented by the Provost Corps, went around and told the men to get off the streets I don't recall seeing any.

- Q. Have you mentioned all the instances of specific soldiers being involved in breaking of windows or the looting of stores, or liquor stores, in Dartmouth?
- A. I have received complete reports from the Chief and the remainder of the Police Force in the town and believe that I am in full possession of the facts. I know of no other complaints against military personnel.
- Q. Will you tell us, what, in your opinion, was the cause of the disturbances in Dartmouth?
- A. The Dartmouth disturbances was, in my opinion, an overflow and aftermath of the Halifax disturbances and was caused by the example set in Halifax and the fact that persons who had been damaging property and looting in Halifax came to Dartmouth after the two looting episodes in Halifax.

I have noticed in the last year since I came back to civil life, that there has been great resentment, particularly by Naval personnel, against the Nova Scotia Liquor laws, the Nova Scotian weather and the fact that our housing and entertainment facilities are not equal to those of New York or Paris. In addition, during the period since I resumed my position of magistrate, I have noticed on many occasions that naval officers do not appear to be interested in the disciplinary action or punishment of their men but are mainly interested in getting them out of trouble. I have not had nearly as many army personnel as naval personnel, they did not seem to get into as much trouble.

- 249 -

My experience with army officers has been that they have carried out whatever I can see to be their duty under the army regulations, that is to say, to attend court, produce records and report back to their units. I have had no experience with army officers trying to get their men off without being tried or making any complaints about the treatment by the civil authorities. That remark also applies to the air force.

- Q. By what time on the evening of the 8th do you consider that the disturbances had ceased in Dartmouth?
- A. The worst of it was over by 1030 P.M. After that it was just a matter of watching for stragglers and stopping further enthusiastic people from looting.
- Q. Could you tell us the approximate total number of persons charged before you arising out of the disturbances in Dartmouth on 8th May?
- A. About 80, so far. The majority of whom were civilians. But there was one air force and three army and the balance navy.

.....  
Norman Dudley MURRAY,  
Stipendiary Magistrate for  
the Town of Dartmouth, N.S.

- 250 -

SIXTIETH  
WITNESS: 60

John J. Lawlor, Chief of Police, Town of Dartmouth N.S.

being duly sworn states:

- Q. How long have you been chief of Police?
- A. Since 1937 and on the Police Department of Dartmouth since 1922.
- Q. Tell the court what you remember concerning the circumstances surrounding the disturbances in Dartmouth on the 8th May 1945.
- A. I arrived at the office approximately 2 o'clock in the afternoon of May the 8th and received a report of various disturbances alleged to be going on in Halifax.

The ferry is operated by a commission which is clear of the control of the town council and therefore they were the men who authorized the operation of the ferry.

The Dartmouth Ferry is the only means of carrying vehicles between Dartmouth and Halifax but there is a smaller auxiliary ferry operating for the purpose of carrying pedestrians. By road it is 17 miles between Dartmouth and Halifax, and by ferry it is one mile.

I endeavoured to contact the Chairman of the Ferry Commission, who is the mayor of the town, but I was unable to do so. I tried to contact various other members, they were out of town because at that time there was a public holiday. I finally contacted Charley MacLean, deputy chairman, along with several other members and we held a meeting at approximately 4 P.M. in Charley MacLean's house, Dartmouth, and discussed the possibility of tying up the ferry in the event that it became necessary. We made certain arrangements there at the time that we thought would be adequate.

After leaving Mr. MacLean's house and arriving downtown at approximately 4 P.M. conditions had changed to such an extent that the arrangements we made in tying up the ferry were not going to be adequate. I returned to the office and when I arrived there Mr. Mattattall, chairman of the Dartmouth Police Commission, was at the office and we contacted Mr. MacLean, Deputy Chairman of the Ferry Commission, and informed him that the ferry would have to be tied up sooner than we anticipated.

While those arrangements were being made I received a report that a number of navy men were gathering in front of the liquor store and several others were gathering recruits for the purpose of breaking into the liquor store. They were gathering them from the various naval personnel who had been around the streets. I despatched Sgt. Simon and Officer Boyle of my force, who were on duty, to the liquor store. They were joined by Officer Haditon and Officer Rogers. I notified the shore patrol and acquainted them with this news and the military authorities and the R.C.M.P. Shortly after I received a report from Sgt. Simon that when they arrived at the

liquor store the store had been already entered. A number of number of naval personnel were inside and they cleaned the store of unauthorized persons. They formed outside again, navy personnel a few air force and a number of civilians, and they rushed the store and the police were unable to hold it so they retired out through the back.

Officer Rogers in the melée was hit with a thrown bottle and is off duty with a fractured skull at the present time. It is not serious.

Shortly after the remainder of my men arrived on duty and they were sent down to see if anything could be done but the store was then practically looted and Boland's warehouse adjacent to this store had been broken open ~~xxx~~ apparently in the search for liquor. Things had been strewn around. This warehouse is a wholesale grocery warehouse ~~in~~ next door too and in the rear of the liquor store.

Just about the time I received this report Mr. Mattattalland Mr. A.C. Pettapies, they are both members of the town council were in my office. I asked them to endeavour to get in touch with the authorities in Halifax for assistance. I called Mr. Murray and we went to the ferry to get the boat tied up as she was still operated. Mr. Murray and I in a car driven by Constable McNeen of the R.C.M.P. drove out Osterloney St. along Commercial St. to the Dartmouth Ferry. On the streets quite a number of people were gathered mostly made up of Navy personnel, civilians and a number of airforce. Up till that time other than the liquor store and Boland's Warehouse there had been no looting. The only thing being carried by ~~ky~~ anybody were packages presumed to contain liquor. Some were carrying bottles openly which no doubt contained liquor. When the ferry was tied up, which was approximately at 6:30 P.M. the people coming off the boats consisted of civilians, navy next, I would say air force next and the army least of all. I had no recollection of seeing any army personnel drunk in that vicinity. I distinctly remember seeing two or three chaps around by the entrance to the ferry, wearing the red patches on their shoulders, and those several were definitely sober. Some airforce were drunk, one in particular had his coat open, his head bare and a quart bottle, which I presumed to be beer, drinking out of the quart of beer. No arrests were attempted at that time because it was doubtful if they could be maintained. Of the people coming off the boats some were carrying parcels others just merchandise, sailors, one was carrying a suitcase, could have been coming off leave, on one man was a quantity of new clothing thrown over his arm and several other with various kinds of merchandise.

Then I returned to the office where I was informed that a number of men had been promised from A-23, which is a military establishment. They were requested by one of the councillors through the District Officer Commanding, I had asked them when I left the office to get in touch with those and as councillors they would have as much



authorities I would have. When I returned to the office they informed me that, I think 125 soldiers were on their way here. From then on it was a matter of reports of this place broken in and that place being broken in and I despatched my men out to deal with various things. I saw several army officers that had arrived from A-23, was introduced to them but I am not in a position to give you their names. From then on in the course of things there was various reports coming in, people coming in offering suggestions and there was confusion as things were going on. I was getting reports from the men as to how things were going.

At approximately 9 P.M. Flight Lieutenant Stainer of the R.C.A.F. arrived with a number of air force personnel to assist. We then made up two parties of air force, the A-23 personnel army, our own lads and while I remember seeing Sgt. Meldrum of the Provost there I can't just point each individual there. We made up two parties, my own lads and the others, and they were sent down the street in two parties to come on the mob from each side, that is one side from each other. Sgt. Meldrum of the local Provost Detachment stationed in Dartmouth was also operating with the Dartmouth Police and assisted in every way possible that he could, with the amount of men at his disposal, from the time I first called him at the break of the liquor store until things were under control. After sending those two groups down the street I received word back that the crowd had been broken up and that the situation was then under control. That would be approximately at 10:30 P.M.

I would say the time that the crowd was completely out of hand would be from 7 P.M. till 1030 P.M.

- Q. What arrests did you and your force make of army personnel, arising out of the disturbances on 8th May?
- A. There was one, Gervias, a man from A-23 who was arrested for property damage and breaking a plate glass window and was sentenced to six months in the county jail. And Pte. G.S. Marshal, who's number I think was B44375, property damage and breaking plate glass window he was also sentenced to six months in the county jail. And a charge which is now pending, for property damage on the same night, against one Wilfred Tines, coloured, F58580, who is at present in the county jail pending arrival of this charge on Monday next. He was arrested at Hut 61 at the District Depot and I received him from Captain Ed. Gray. This man would have been tried on the 14th but three civilians who are charged with him for the same offence were not in custody and it was adjourned until the others were brought in.
- Q. Was the curfew imposed in Dartmouth?
- A. Yes, the curfew was maintained until Saturday the 12th. On Friday it was lifted until 11 o'clock and on Saturday to 12:30.

- Q. Did you have any disturbances on the 8th May and afterwards?
- A. No we did not.
- Q. When the curfew was imposed was it observed?
- A. That night one, on the 8th, I received a report from one of my boys asking me what I thought of putting the street lights out for a little while in order to chase some of the spectators off the streets. I had the street lights put out for approximately twenty minutes and it had some effect and gave my boys a chance to work.
- The curfew on Tuesday night I suppose had some effect in so far as the various members of the services, those who were not implicated were ordered off the streets and that meant many more were taken off the streets.
- Q. What, in your opinion, was the cause of the disturbances in Dartmouth on May 8th?
- A. I believe the trouble we had in Dartmouth was an overflow from the trouble alleged to have taken place in Halifax both on Monday and Tuesday. As to the underlying cause of it, I would not like to state.
- Q. What kind of assistance did you get from the Army Provost and other Army personnel on the 8th May?
- A. I would say that we had the fullest co-operation from the personnel that were sent there to assist us, that is the Provost and Army personnel, both on Tuesday the 8th May and for the remainder of the week. All our requests were met and the various army officers gave us good cooperation and carried out any duties that were asked of them.
- Q. What is the general situation between the officials of the town of Dartmouth and the army men? The general situation existing between the city authorities in Dartmouth and the Army?
- A. I would say that they were good.
- Q. Could you tell us how many of your own force you had to assist you that evening of the 8th May?
- A. After six o'clock there was nine men other than myself.
- Q. What is the population of Dartmouth?
- A. Approximately 20,000. I might say that in 1939 we had four men.
- Q. What would the population be if you included those within an area of four miles?
- A. I would think it would reasonably add an additional 10,000. We don't have to police this area but we have to content with people coming through or into Dartmouth.

.....  
John J. Lawlor, Chief of Police,  
Town of Dartmouth, N.S.



SIXTY FIRST  
WITNESS:

Major M.O. Element, D.S. & T.O., M.D. No.6,  
having been duly sworn states:

- Q. How long have you been D.S. & T.O. in M.D. No.6?
- A. Approximately 6 weeks
- Q. Can you tell us of the general activities of your Branch on the 7th-8th May?
- A. This was fully covered in the testimony of Major R.A. Young, O.C., No. 6 Coy. R.C.A.S.C., who has appeared before the Court.
- Q. What do you know personally and what did you see in connection with disturbances on the 7th-8th May 45 in Halifax?
- A. The 7th May was a full day of work as far as I was concerned. I spent the evening in the Officers Mess. I have no personal knowledge of the disturbances in Halifax on the night 7-8th May. On the 8th May, I was on duty all morning and in the early afternoon I proceeded to the V.E. Day Thanksgiving Service at the Garrison Grounds. About 1500 hrs, I walked through the business section of the city purely as a spectator and spent around half the time taking in the scenes. I proceeded back to the H.Q. Officers Mess where I spent the remainder of the evening.
- Q. What did you see during the time you were down town that afternoon?
- A. It was a matter of the Services, mostly Navy, who were drinking bottles of beer and hard liquor on Barrington St.
- Q. Did you see any Army personnel?
- A. A very small smattering of Army personnel.
- Q. What were they doing?
- A. Just mixed in the crowd.
- Q. Where was this crowd on Barrington St.?
- A. In the vicinity of the Capitol Theatre.
- Q. What were they doing?
- A. Just milling around.
- Q. Did you see any of the looting?
- A. The only actual looting I saw was that of the Hollis St. Liquor Store. I saw Service personnel, mostly Naval and civilians, some Army, carrying what appeared to be cases of beer and whiskey. They were carrying it out of the store down the street.
- Q. How many Army personnel did you see carrying liquor out of the store?
- A. Around four.
- Q. Were there any Army Provost at the scene then?

- A. I didn't see any. There were no RCMP, Shore Patrol, or city police at the scene.
- Q. How long were you there?
- A. About 5 minutes.
- Q. What did you do when you saw the four Army personnel carrying cases out of the store?
- A. Nothing.
- Q. Did you report it to anyone?
- A. No.
- Q. Why not?
- A. It was far too general. Everybody was doing it.
- Q. Would it have been possible for you to interfere while this was going on?
- A. Definitely no.
- Q. In what condition were the Army personnel you saw?
- A. Some appeared to be under the weather.
- Q. What was the condition of the Naval personnel and civilians?
- A. The Naval personnel were doing quite well. Some were under the weather.
- Q. Would you estimate the size of the crowd which was surrounding that store?
- A. At least 500 people.
- Q. Out of this crowd of 500 people, how many Army personnel did you see, including the four you stated carrying liquor out of the store?
- A. Approximately 12.
- Q. What were the other 8 doing?
- A. By-standers.
- Q. I show you picture which has been filed as part of exhibit "ZZZ" which purports to be a crowd in front of the Hollis St. Liquor Store on the afternoon 8th May 45 and would ask if the Major whose picture appears in the right foreground is you?
- A. Yes I was passing by at the time and saw the scene which I have described to you.
- Q. Did you see any of the crowd in front of the Mail Order Office for liquor, which is immediately South of the Hollis St. Liquor store.
- A. Yes.
- Q. What was this crowd composed of?

Page 256

- A. This crowd had the same composition as that in front of the Hollis St. Liquor Store. This was all part of the one big crowd to which I refer.
- Q. Did you see anyone actively engaged in carrying cases from the Mail Order Office?
- A. I saw them bring it out of the store.
- Q. What was the composition of the crowd bringing liquor out of the Mail Order Office.?
- A. Mostly Naval and civilians. I saw no Army personnel actively engaged in carrying it out of the store. I don't remember seeing anybody inside the store from where I was standing on the street.
- Q. Are you now able to identify any of the Army personnel you saw removing cases of liquor from the Hollis Street Liquor Store?
- A. No
- Q. Who is the Army Officer walking along with you on the street as shown in the picture?
- A. Major Hyman, Public Relations Officer, M.D. No.6.

-257-

SIXTY-SECOND  
WITNESS:

Lt.-Col. H.F.C. Cocks, District Chaplain(P),  
M. D. No.6, having been duly sworn states:

Q. Did you see any of the disturbances in Halifax on Monday, 7 May 45?

A. I did not.

Q. Did you see any of the disturbances on the 8 May?

A. In view of the discussion on the platform after the Thanksgiving Service, I gleaned that a serious situation had broken out down town and I suggested to Lt.-Col. McLellan, District Chaplain (RC) that we proceed in our car to Keiths Brewery, and if possible, speak to the Service men and to suggest to them that they were rather foolish in pursuing the disturbances. On arrival we found we could not get near the Brewery on account of the crowd and the matter had gone too far for us to do anything. On the way down town, we saw sailors carrying cartons of beer; the first we notice were opposite Bellevue, old District H.Q., corner Queen and Spring Garden Road, at approximately 1530 hrs. And as we passed the cemetery on Barrington St. we saw several groups of sailors in the cemetery drinking beer. On arrival at Hollis St. we found the crowd too dense to get near the Brewery.

Q. What was the composition of the crowd?

A. Practically all civilians, some sailors and a few soldiers. We discussed the matter and decided it was absolutely out of the question. We watched the events for about 10 or 15 minutes and then returned to H.Q. reporting what we had seen to the District Officer Commanding.

Q. Did you see any specific incident on Hollis St. before you returned to H.Q. ?

A. Yes, I noticed an Army truck immediately ahead of me parked on the street, the driver out of the truck. There were Service men inside the truck including one CWAC. It was a covered truck, rather dark inside, and as far as I could see there were two or three sailors inside and a couple of soldiers.

Q. Who was outside the truck?

A. One sailor came along with a carton of beer and I think it was a L/Cpl. with him.

Q. Where were they coming from?

A. From the brewery.

Q. How many cases in all did you see being placed in the truck?

A. Two or three cases.

-258-

Q. Did you see any distinguishing mark on the truck?

A. Yes, GL 121.

Q. Where was that?

A. On the cab door on the left hand side of the truck. I asked the driver to drive pass the truck so I could see the number. As we drove up by the truck, I noticed there was nobody in the cab.

Q. Did you speak to those in the truck?

A. No Sir.

Q. Would it have been possible?

A. It would have.

Q. Could you identify any Service personnel you saw?

A. No, I didn't know them and haven't seen them since.

Q. How many trips did the L/Cpl. make?

A. One.

Q. And the sailor?

A. The sailor put the beer in the truck and then got in.

Q. What badges was the L/Cpl. wearing?

A. I didn't notice.

Q. What was the condition of those in the truck?

A. They seemed perfectly sober.

Q. Could you tell us how many cases you saw in the back of the truck?

A. I couldn't see inside.

Q. Have you any idea what type of truck it was?

A. It was a medium size truck, mostly likely a 1500 cwt.

Q. And you think there were 6 persons in it?

A. Yes Sir.

Q. How far was the truck from your car when you saw people in it?

A. A car length.

Q. Were the people standing or sitting down?

A. They were standing, except the GWAC. She was sitting on the tailboard.

-259-

- Q. What was the mood of the crowd coming away from the brewery?
- A. Very jovial. Everybody seemed to be happy and definitely not ugly.
- Q. Are you certain that the cases which you saw were being brought from the Brewery?
- A. No. They were being brought from the North and could have been brought either from the brewery or the Hollis St. Liquor Store.
- Q. Did you get out of your car?
- A. I did not.
- Q. Did you ask the driver of your car if she knew the CWAC who was in the truck?
- A. I believe I did and she did not know her.
- Q. Did you have any occasion to go down town again that day?
- A. I went down again after dinner.
- Q. What did you see then.
- A. Nothing out of the ordinary.
- Q. About what time was this?
- A. Approximately 1945 hrs.
- Q. Were there many people on the street then?
- A. Not a great deal. Things had quieted down.
- Q. What were they doing?
- A. Nothing in particular. Some were quite far gone, others were doing the same as I was doing.
- Q. Did you see any Army personnel carrying away articles or liquor?
- A. I did not.

HALIFAX V-E DAY DISTURBANCES

STATEMENT BY D.O.C., H.D. 6  
27th May 1945

- Brigadier D.A. White, DSO, District  
Officer Commanding, M.D. No.6, having  
been duly sworn states:

1. The City of Halifax on May 7th, 1945, according to a statement made by Mayor Butler, had a civilian population of approximately 130,000 as against 75,000 before the war.

The numbers of Naval and Air Force personnel within the City at that time are unknown to me, though I believe the Navy had about 16,000.

The Army personnel within the City limits consisted of approximately 4489 male troops and about 840 CWAC. The Army also had, outside the City limits but within about fifteen miles of Halifax, situated in Fortresses, A-25 Training Centre, Bedford Camp, etc. approximately 2920 male soldiers and 70 CWAC.

The great majority of Army personnel were over age or of low medical category and unfit to go overseas as infantry. Most of them were employed in various services, offices, fortress duties or at the District Depot.

2. Looking forward to V-E Day celebrations, there were various meetings from Sept 1944 until May 1945 attended by Administrative officers and Cdn Provost Corps officers. All those officers and their records are available to the Court.

As V-E Day approached, all reports to me indicated that Army personnel was not likely to cause any great confusion and that the C Pro C in Halifax was ample as to quantity and quality to handle the Army responsibility. Plans for V-E Day had been discussed at several of the D.O.C.'s Monday morning meetings and I was satisfied that C.O.s in Halifax were making special arrangements to provide every possible attraction within the barracks and quarters of the troops in order that they would have a happy and orderly celebration.

There was no warning of any kind from the civil authorities or the other Services to give any indication of any possible serious disturbances.

3. Monday, 7th May 45, brought confusion in the morning when radio announcements and newspaper Extras declared that Germany had surrendered. Civilians stopped work and the official word was anxiously awaited. Special instructions had been received from NDHQ in telegram, "Ranks 7454".  
Admiral Murray, R.N., was in the chair.

4. At 1308 hrs., 7th May 45, Brigadier Ferguson, NDHQ, informed me by telephone (record of conversation has been submitted to you) that the Acting Prime Minister would make the announcement shortly and that the balance of that day and all the next day would be a holiday. About 1400 hrs. the British Bureau of Information announced that Tuesday, 8th May 1945, would be V-E Day. It was not until 1700 hrs., Halifax time, that Mr. Hsloy spoke on the radio.

Page 2

Statement by D.O.C., M.D. 6  
27th May 1948

5. Monday evening, 7th May, the City celebrations, including the fireworks, were carried out and appeared very successful. Many thousands were on Citadel Hill, where I went with Major-General Ganong.

6. During the night - late Monday and early Tuesday morning - the disturbances of which you heard took place in downtown Halifax. Tuesday morning reports to me indicated that the Army had not been involved to any extent and that civilian and naval personnel had formed the bulk of the crowd.

All reports indicated that there was a general feeling of relief that the big V-E Day celebrations had worked off the pent-up feelings and there was a general feeling that it was a relief to have it over. No doubt the long period of looking forward to victory and the feelings that had been played up in the human minds by the radio and the press in connection with the celebration of victory had created feelings that might reasonably be expected to require expression.

Tuesday

Monday morning was quiet and a beautiful day.

7. About 1230 hrs., Tuesday, 8th May 48, after attending Church Service, I went to my office and at that time reports indicated all was quiet and there appeared no reason to expect trouble. I went to my quarters for lunch.

8. About 1350 hrs., 8th May, I arrived at my office, meeting numerous officers and their wives arriving for the Memorial Service.

About 1400 hrs. the AA & QMG reported to me that the Provost Marshal had asked, and received authority, to collect all Provost personnel on duty at the Garrison Grounds and at District Headquarters and to send them downtown along with Provost reserves to assist the Provost personnel downtown where serious trouble was reported. As witnessed by a crowd of about 15,000 civilians, about 40 Provosts ran to the gate of the Garrison Grounds where they fell in smartly and were marched to the street where they embarked in transport and left for downtown.

I moved to the platform for the Service.

9. About 1425 hrs. Mayor Butler of Halifax arrived on the platform. I presumed he was coming to attend the Service but later ascertained that he had arranged to meet Admiral Murray there at that time. He brought alarming reports of disorders downtown. Most of his conversation was with Admiral Murray and the Admiral spoke to me regarding whether or not the Service should proceed. He realized that if the Service were stopped at that time, the enormous crowd gathered would probably move downtown and make matters worse.

I conferred with District Staff Officers who were on the platform and a direct report was received from Lt.-Col. Clarke, DAPN, confirming that the disturbance was serious. He agreed to return downtown and bring back a further report by the conclusion of the Service.



-262-

Page 5

Statement by D.O.C., H.D. 6  
27th May 1945

It was decided to hasten the Service and then march the parade down through the troubled area. The Service commenced about 1440 hrs. and ended about 1457 hrs.

The Service had been arranged with the concurrence of the Joint Services Committee, of which Admiral Murray is the Chairman, and he, as Senior Officer, had issued the orders for the Service and had appointed a Naval officer in command of the parade.

10. At the conclusion of the Service, Colonel Oland came on the platform and informed me that the crowd amounted to several thousand and was threatening Keith's Brewery. I gathered that they were mostly naval and he was appealing particularly to the Admiral for help. I mentioned to the Admiral that before the parade went downtown the officers should be carefully instructed. He said he was doing that and he issued the instructions through the parade commander. I believe he also consulted a number of Senior Naval officers on the platform. I had presumed he was arranging reinforcements for the Shore Patrol to handle the sailors. About this time Lt.-Col. Clarke re-appeared and reported that he had been inside Keith's Brewery and that the crowd was very large and out of control.

I instructed the Army Staff Officer with the parade to have the platoon of CWAC and the platoon of returned overseas men, many of whom had not been medically examined, report to barracks instead of going down with the parade.

As soon as the Lt.-Governor and the parade had moved off I went to my office, arriving probably about 1525 hrs.

11. Reports were handed to me and telephone messages came in from responsible citizens reporting the damage and that their premises were being attacked. I was both alert and alarmed.

About 1540 hrs. Major Crowell came to my office saying the Mayor had sent him to ask for a meeting with the Heads of the Services. After considerable telephoning, including conversations by me with the Mayor and by Maj. Crowell with the Mayor, and by me with the Admiral, the meeting was arranged in the D.O.C.'s office for 1630 hrs.

12. I was surrounded by my three Senior Staff Officers - Col. Duncanson, Col. i/c Admin., Lt.-Col. North, AA & QLG, and Lt.-Col. Bell, GSO-1. Admiral Murray, RCN, was in the chair.

I felt our first responsibility was to look after our own men. I considered the DAPH as the Army authority in charge and considered that with his Provost personnel he could handle the Army and presumed the Navy and the City police, with their reserves, would handle the sailors and civilians.

I was disturbed as to what might happen as a result of a large amount of beer from the Brewery getting into the hands of the crowd and I was nervous in case fire should be started, as the fire hazard in Halifax is very great due to the buildings being mostly of wood. I was also mindful of the fact that if the situation deteriorated there might possibly be a requisition from the civil authorities for Aid to Civil Power.

-263-

Page 4

Statement by D.O.C., M.D. 6  
27th May 1945

13. At approximately 1600 hrs. a warning order was sent by Col. Duncanson, H.Q., M.D. 6, to Brigadier Colquhoun, O.C. No. 1 Training Brigade Group, Debert Military Camp, advising him to be prepared to send troops in case they should be required in Aid of Civil Power.

14. Reports and messages were coming in and numerous officers who had been downtown were sending in reports. At about 1630 hrs. the meeting assembled, minutes of which have been placed before you. Admiral Murray was in the chair, as the Senior officer, and in addition I considered it suitable as his Service was most extensively involved. The Mayor explained the situation and asked for help. Members of the Safety Committee suggested martial law but the Mayor felt this would mean blood shed and it seemed generally agreed that it should be possible to do something short of calling for Aid to Civil Power. I formed the opinion that the Mayor and the Attorney General, who were present with their legal advisers, were aware of the necessary procedure in the event of it becoming necessary to requisition Aid to Civil Power.

I was willing to order Army personnel back to barracks but realized that the numbers were comparatively small and believed that this action alone would not break up - and might aggravate - the trouble, whereas the ordering in of all Service personnel appeared to me more suitable. The Admiral did not seem to favour such action but considered the rioters should be rounded up.

I felt that the Navy and the City must have some Reserves to the Shore Patrol and the City police, particularly as I had heard someone speaking of a strong Naval detachment in one of their barracks under Capt. Robertson. I was hoping to hear any minute that reinforcements had arrived and that the Shore Patrol and City Police were re-gaining control. All this time I felt confident that the C Pro C would not only be able to handle their responsibility as to Army personnel but were undoubtedly lending strong support to City and Naval police.

The bulk of the discussion was between the civic authorities and the Admiral. The subject of calling upon the military authorities for Aid to Civil Power was actively discussed. It was my thought that this would be too slow in stopping the riots and that a clearing of the streets should be possible with simultaneous action by all authorities.

I was becoming more alarmed in view of additional reports of the looting of liquor stores and with so much liquor about the danger of great fires presented to me a very grim picture.

15. As no definite decision had been reached, about 1730 hrs, I suggested that the Mayor announce on the radio that the V-E Day celebrations were over and that all citizens should return to their homes and that at the same time the Heads of all Services should send out orders for all Service personnel to report to their barracks or billets. I also suggested that the Mayor announce that a curfew would be in effect at eight o'clock and that all must be indoors by that time.

-207-  
Page 5

Statement by D.O.C., M.D. 6  
27th May 1945

This was accepted instantly. Admiral Murray offered to go in a sound-truck, if one could be found, to make the announcement to Service personnel. The Mayor offered to go with him to make the announcement to the civilian personnel.

16. I immediately ordered a Staff Officer to send orders by telephone to all units in Halifax to send out all available officers with transport to bring in the soldiers.

17. At 1745 hrs, after consultation with Colonel Duncanson, I informed the Attorney General, the Admiral and the Air Vice-Marshal that I proposed to order a thousand armed troops from Debert Camp to move into Halifax to No. 6 District Depot to be available in case it might become necessary for the Attorney General to request Aid to Civil Power. They all agreed and the order was sent. In actual fact, Aid to Civil Power was never requested either in writing or verbally.

18. You have already heard from witnesses that the above plan quickly cleared the streets and the riots were broken.

The troops left Debert at 1910 hrs and were met at Bedford by Lt.-Col. Bell, Staff Officer, M.D. 6, and given maps and preliminary instructions. The head of the column reached District Depot at 2205 hrs and the complete column was in the Depot by 2230 hrs.

19. During the evening I requested NDHQ, Ottawa, to obtain, if possible, a further 60 Provosts as it was realized that the strenuous events would exhaust the men already in Halifax and relief would be needed. About 1700 hrs, 9th May, 30 Provosts arrived by plane from Camp Borden. About 2300 hrs, 9th May, a further 30 Provosts arrived by plane from Camp Borden.

20. On May 9th there were constant meetings and discussion and preparations against any further possible outbreaks. Reports were also received of disturbances of a smaller nature in other cities and towns in M.D. 6. Most of these disturbances were centred on attacks or attempted attacks on liquor stores.

21. As investigation is now under way by the Royal Commission including the situation regarding liquor stores, restaurants, transportation, theatres, amusements and the attitude of the citizens of Halifax toward Service personnel, I do not consider it necessary for me to make any statement in regard to these matters.

22. Consideration is being given to precautions against outbreaks in the future and Army representatives are attending a meeting on Monday, 28th May, called by the Mayor of Halifax to coordinate plans.

23. I understand that witnesses have already reported to you regarding action taken against members of the Army for breaches of discipline during these disturbances.

24. In conclusion I might state that immediately after the disturbances I visited units, commencing with the C Pro C, thanking the great bulk of the Army personnel

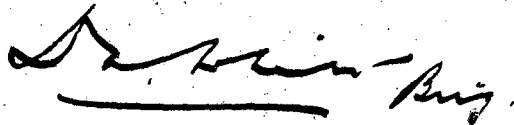
000600

-265-

Page 6

Statement by D.O.C., M.D. 6  
27th May 1945

who had kept out of the trouble and had conducted themselves properly. I pointed out the necessity to avoid friction between the members of the Services and the citizens of Halifax, as well as between personnel of the different Services, and appealed to all to conduct themselves as good soldiers and good citizens.



(D. A. WHITE) Brigadier  
District Officer Commanding  
Military District No. 6

- 266 -

RULINGS ON TECHNICAL MATTERS

1. The Court has complied with R.P. 125A (see Ex. A-4).

2. The Court has not considered it necessary to have the testimony re-read to the witnesses or have them sign same, as shorthand reporters were sworn in to take all the testimony.

3. In view of the extent of the evidence, the Court has waived the necessity for ruling and initialling the backs and black spaces of each of the pages of testimony.

4. Civilian witnesses could not be compelled to appear before the Court, but certain civilian witnesses appeared and were heard. By letter of 25 May 45 (Ex. A-3) the President of the Court requested the D.O.C. M.D. 6 to endeavour to make arrangements to have certain important civilian witnesses mentioned therein appear before the Court. This was acknowledged by letter of 26 May 45 (Ex. A-3) which stated that Brig. R.J. Orde, J.A.G. was of opinion that in view of the investigation now under way by the Royal Commission it was unnecessary to have these civilians heard by this Court, and that the D.O.C. concurred in this view and therefore was not proceeding with the arrangements requested.

5. The Court, for convenience in reading the Proceedings, has added a Table of Contents, List of Witnesses and a Chronological Summary of Events (also produced as Exhibit "U") to the front of the Proceedings.

## FINDINGS OF THE COURT

The Court, having carefully considered and weighed the evidence, makes the following Findings on the various points set out in the Terms of Reference:-

### I. "TIME, PLACE AND NATURE OF SUCH DISTURBANCES"

1. Disturbances of the peace took place in Halifax and Dartmouth, N.S., on the 7th and 8th May 45. These occurred principally in the main business sections. On the general public announcement over the radio at about 1100 hrs on the morning 7 May 45, in connection with the cessation of hostilities in Europe, the public in general and a percentage of Service personnel considered that a holiday was in order. Crowds assembled in the downtown section of Halifax and orderly jubilation reigned until about 2300 hrs when a large crowd of civilians, allegedly led by Navy personnel over-turned a police patrol motor vehicle and partly wrecked and burned a streetcar. Both these incidents occurred at about the same time on Barrington St. (Ref. is made to newspaper clippings in Exhibit "A" and pictures in Exhibit "NNN-1". Evidence given before this Court on these incidents is lacking in some respects due to civilian witnesses not being available to this Court).
2. The vandalism spread and the crowds, led by Navy personnel, attacked and partly looted the N.S.L.C. stores on Hollis, Sackville and Buckingham Sts. and broke some windows of business stores.
3. The looting was stopped by the efforts of civil police assisted by Navy Shore Patrol and Army Provosts. By about 0230 hrs, 8 May 45, liquor stores were cleared of all personnel and the crowds were dispersed.
4. The rest of the night was quiet, but the Halifax morning papers of 8 May and local radio stations, gave very great prominence to the disturbance. (Ref. Exhibit "A").
5. The morning of 8 May 45 passed peacefully with civic addresses and a concert held on the Garrison Grounds, followed by Thanksgiving Services at 1100 hrs in the various churches of Halifax.
6. In the afternoon of 8 May 45 a Joint Services Thanksgiving Service was held on the Garrison Grounds at which spectators estimated at about 15,000 attended. This service commenced at 1435 hrs and ended at about 1500 hrs.

- 2 -

7. Before this Thanksgiving Service started, other crowds had commenced gathering at about 1330 hrs in the downtown sections of the city. These crowds were mostly composed of civilians, a large number of Navy personnel and a few Army and Air Force personnel, generally led by those of the Navy. A series of incidents took place during the afternoon and early evening. The series of disorders commenced by the breaking of front windows and doors of liquor stores, merchandise shops and other business establishments. (For area covered refer to map, Exhibit "YY-4"). The breaking into the liquor stores and the breaking of many other business establishment windows and doors was followed by the looting of these stores. The downtown Brewery, known as Keith's Brewery, was also broken into by the crowd and looted.

8. The looted beer and other liquor in considerable measure, was consumed on the streets in an hilarious manner, resulting in a percentage of drunken personnel carrying on with the breaking, entering and looting.

9. The looting was followed by wanton destruction of store equipment and fixtures.

10. The breaking and first entry was done mostly by Navy personnel and the looting by civilians and Navy. The evidence adduced shows only five soldiers actually involved in breaking into premises. (Ref. Lt-Col McLellan, page 186; Capt Cockman, page 208; Magistrate Murray, page 248). By about 2000 hrs 8 May 45, according to the most reliable testimony, Army personnel had been cleared from the streets.

11. A disturbance in Dartmouth, N.S., occurred on the afternoon and early evening of the 8th May 45, consisting of the breaking, entering and looting of the N.S.L.C. store and a few places of business.

12. The sequence of events was similar in Dartmouth to that of Halifax and the entire affair might be considered as a sequence to the disturbances of Halifax and carried out by similar personnel who were following the example already seen or participated in, in Halifax.

13. The stopping of the Ferry service between Halifax and Dartmouth, coupled with the assistance given to the local police by the Navy Shore Patrol, Army Provosts, R.C.A.F. Service Police and other Army personnel, reasonably and quickly stopped the Dartmouth disturbances.

14. The Royal Commission of the Dominion Government, now sitting, is charged with

determining the legal responsibility for the disturbances and the damages resulting therefrom which are matters beyond the Terms of Reference of this Court and no Findings therefore can be made by this Court on these matters. It appears that the property damage was fairly heavy but that there were relatively very few cases of bodily injury.

II. "WHETHER ANY MILITARY PERSONNEL WERE INVOLVED IN ANY BREACHES OF DISCIPLINE AND IF SO, THE NAMES OF SUCH PERSONS INVOLVED AND THE CONDUCT OF SUCH PERSONS."

15. Only a relatively very small number of Army personnel were involved in the disturbances. There were isolated cases of Army personnel being involved but none acting in groups or as leaders.

16. There were some cases of looting by soldiers, but the participation by soldiers consisted mainly in consuming and the carrying away of beer and liquor. The evidence shows that nearly all of the breaking of windows and doors and the first entering into liquor stores and shops was done by personnel in Naval uniform supported and followed by civilians.

17. A considerable amount of the beer and hard liquor taken from the liquor stores and Brewery was passed around indiscriminately to civilians and Service personnel who irrespective of time and place consumed the same.

18. The names and details of specific Army personnel who have been found to be involved in the disturbances by being in improper possession of liquor and/or goods and for other breaches of discipline, are shown in Exhibit "AA" filed by Lt-Col. F.J. North, AA & QIG, H.D. 6.

19. The evidence also reveals that there were a small number of Army personnel involved in similar disturbances, who have not been identified. A digest of references in the evidence to these personnel is attached to the Findings as Appendix "1".

20. In general, infractions of discipline in the nature of simple drunkenness and drinking in public were not dealt with as military or civil offences, because such behaviour seemed to be the general practice of those in the downtown areas during "the celebrations." Tolerance was the order of the day. The Chief of Police of



Halifax had intimated on 5 April 45 that arrests would not be made on V.E. Day for minor offences or simple drunkenness (Ref: page 131B).

### III. "THE PRECAUTIONS TAKEN PRIOR TO SUCH DISTURBANCES"

21. NDHQ telegram Ranks 7454 dated 28 April 45 (Exhibit "T") containing instructions regarding observance of and precautions to be put into effect for V.E. Day was received by HQ MD 6 at 0200 hrs 29 April 45.

22. Prior to the receipt of this telegram, no orders had been issued by HQ MD 6 to the Formation and Unit Commanders. There had been general discussions relating to V.E. Day at general meetings in Halifax, which were attended by representatives of the civic and service authorities (Ref: page 260, para 2). At several of the D.O.C's. Monday Conferences with MD 6 staff officers, Heads of Services and representatives of the Halifax Fortress (Ref: Exhibit "C") there had also been certain preliminary discussions regarding the proposed Thanksgiving Service in Halifax, the conduct of wet canteens, entertainment and the principle of keeping men in Unit areas on V.E. Day (Ref: Lt-Col Bell, page 40-41 and Brig White, page 260). The discussions referred to, covered only units in the Halifax Area.

23. On receipt of telegram Ranks 7454 on 29 April, no action was taken by HQ MD 6 to pass on the information and instructions contained therein to Units in the District and no instructions other than those above referred to, were given regarding V.E. Day until after the long distance telephone call from Brig. Ferguson, D.A.G., NDHQ, to the DOC MD 6 at 1308 hrs 7 May, which gave additional information to instructions contained in Telegram Ranks 7454.

24. The testimony shows that the reasons for not taking any action on receipt of telegram Ranks 7454 were:-

- (a) It was classed Top Secret.
- (b) It stated that no publicity was to be given.
- (c) It stated that the arrangements were tentative.

(Ref: Col Duncanson, page 21 and Lt-Col North, page 33).

25. No action was taken in connection with telegram Ranks 7454 until 1445 hrs 7 May at which time telegram A.8782 (Ref: Exhibit "B") was sent out to units giving effect to telegram Ranks 7454. The lack of orders from HQ MD 6 before 7 May resulted in a considerable amount of confusion and uncertainty in the Units as to what was expected

of them in the nature of precautions and the time that the V.E. Day celebrations or the holiday period should start.

26. The message sent on 7 May was not complete enough for the Units to give adequate instructions to their personnel and there was not sufficient time to permit the Units to plan the precautions indicated therein.

27. Most Units had made adequate plans for the orderly celebration of V.E. Day and for proper precautions within their Units.

28. The Provost Corps made adequate arrangements to control Army personnel and these arrangements were later carried out effectively.

29. The lack of preliminary instructions by H.Q. M.D. No. 6 to Units in the District was not a contributing factor to the disturbances in Halifax or Dartmouth.

#### IV. "THE ACTION TAKEN DURING SAID DISTURBANCES"

30. Personnel of Nos. 37 and 38 Canadian Provost Coys were on duty during all of V.E. celebrations and all requests made by the civil authorities for assistance were complied with.

31. At about 1730 hrs 8 May 45 all soldiers were ordered to return to their barracks or billets by the D.O.C., M.D. 6. Patrols of officers and Provost patrols assisted to effect this order. An announcement to the effect that all Service personnel were to return to barracks and billets was also made by Rear Admiral Murray from an R.C.A.F. Sound Truck which toured the city, and at 1930 hrs all soldiers, with the exception of a few odd individuals, were off the streets of Halifax (Ref: Lt-Col Clarke, DAFM - page 128). Between 2000 and 2030 hrs Army personnel were off the streets of Dartmouth (Ref: Capt Paquet - page 239 and Sgt. Meldrum - page 244).

32. H.Q. M.D. 6 ordered all soldiers in Halifax and Dartmouth confined to barracks and to remain confined until further orders.

33. A warning order to make troops available at immediate call in anticipation of a request from the civil authorities for the use of troops in Aid of the Civil Power, was sent to Debert Military Camp by H.Q. M.D. 6 at 1600 hrs, and at 1745 hrs, 1000 troops were ordered dispatched to Halifax. These left Debert at 1910 hrs and began arriving in Halifax at 2210 hrs.

34. All beer, liquor and loot found in possession of Army personnel was confiscated and later delivered to proper authorities.

Naval Patrol, C. Pro. C., RCAF Service Police and Liquor Commission. At this meeting it was decided to station composite police groups at Liquor stores and the bonded warehouse to be on duty at 2000 hrs 8 May 45 as it was considered no trouble would occur before dark.

41. It is the opinion of the Court that the disturbance on the night 7/8 May, indicated the necessity of immediate additional precautions, which were not taken.

42. On 9 May 45, following the serious riots on 8 May 45, the following precautions were taken:-

- (a) At the request of the Halifax Police Department, strong guards and piquets were supplied by C. Pro. C. Halifax, augmented by other Army personnel, to guard vulnerable points - N.S.L.C. Main Office, bonded liquor warehouse and Oland's Brewery.
- (b) A Force of 82 officers, 1264 ORs from Camp Debart, N.S. under command of Lt-Col Thomson, E.D., was held at N. 6 District Depot in Halifax in order to be available if a requisition for Aid to the Civil Power, signed by the appropriate civil authority, was received by the DOC MD 6. This was never requested.
- (c) A detachment of 4 officers and 56 ORs from A.32 C. Pro. C. T.C., Camp Borden, Ont., arrived by air transport on 9 May 45 to relieve and assist 37 & 38 C. Pro. Coys.
- (d) Personnel of all Units in Halifax, Dartmouth areas were CB'd from 1730 hrs 8 May 45 until 1200 hrs 12 May 45.
- (e) The D.O.C. participated in several general meetings with Heads of other Services and civilian authorities on the 9th and 10th May 45, in which further precautions against outbreaks were decided upon and the question of Aid to the Civil Power was thoroughly clarified (ref. pp 10, 11, 12). The Mayor of Halifax called another similar meeting for 28 May 45. (ref. p.250, para. 22).

#### VI. "SUGGESTIONS AND RECOMMENDATION AS TO DISCIPLINARY ACTION"

43. The circumstances surrounding the Halifax disturbances were very exceptional; the civil authorities were unable to meet the situation; personnel in Navy rig led in most of the incidents; civilians took advantage of the opportunities made to break the law; Shore Patrol, C. Pro. C. and RCAF Service Police personnel assisted the Civil Police and the RCMP in

attempts to guard and protect public and private property to the necessary neglect of their major function of the enforcement of discipline. The enforcement of discipline in connection with simple drunkenness was suspended; there was no plan of joint police action, and it was a Victory in Europe celebration period.

44. In spite of all the difficulties, Army control of Army personnel was good; the C.Pro.C. did very good and effective work, and the clearing of the streets of soldiers was rapid on the order of the DOC being issued. The C.Pro.C. also gave valuable assistance to the Civic Police of Halifax and Dartmouth.

45. Disciplinary action was taken in known cases other than those of simple drunkenness.

46. The Court is of the opinion that no further disciplinary action is indicated other than that taken or under way.

47. No one in authority, civil or military, anticipated that disturbances might occur on the 8th May 45 until after 2000 hrs on the 8th May 45, and no special plans were made to meet the disturbance that did start about 1330 hrs 8 May 45, apparently led by Navy personnel. The Court is of the opinion that in deference to the seniority of the Naval Commander, action was delayed even after the disturbance was well under way.

48. Newspaper clippings (Exhibit "A") do not contain any criticisms against the Canadian Army in connection with the local disturbances. The few civilian witnesses heard by the Court offered no criticism against the Army and commended the general behaviour of soldiers and the action taken and assistance given by Army authorities. (Ref: Magistrate Murray - pages 247 and 248; Chief of Police Lawlor - page 253; Mr. Lomas - pages 225 and 226; Mr. Isnor - page 230).

49. The Court is of the opinion that Brig. D.A. White, DSO, District Officer Commanding, Military District No. 6, could not be expected to have taken more drastic or more prompt action and no criticism should be directed against this officer in connection with the Halifax or Dartmouth disturbances or the unlawful participation of Army personnel in such disturbances.

50. The Court draws attention to the foresight, planning and control of,

Major H. V. Kearney, OC, 21 Coy. V.G.C.  
(Ref: page 158)

Lt-Col H. D. Rice, Dist. Sig. Offr, M.D. 6  
(Ref: page 74)

and to the unsound decisions and orders of Lieut. A.P. MacCarthy in sending Security Section personnel on patrol duty in Halifax with Arms and Ammunition and at the same time giving instruction that weapons were not to be used. (Ref: Lieut. MacCarthy - pages 58 & 59 and Lt-Col Bell, G.S.O. I - pages 46 & 46A).

VII. "SUGGESTIONS AND RECOMMENDATIONS AS TO  
ANY OTHER MATTERS WHICH THE COURT MAY  
DEEM FIT TO MAKE"

---

1. UNIFIED COMMAND

51. During the disturbances in Halifax, N.S. and Dartmouth, N.S. on 7 and 8 May 45, the three Services were under three Service Commanders each independent and no single one invested with full authority and responsibility in the case of an emergency. A degree of deference to Admiral Murray is indicated as existing during the Halifax disturbances. The Court is of the opinion that in cases of emergency in Districts and Areas, where more than one Service is stationed, that a unification of command should automatically take place and one Service Commander be invested with full authority and responsibility. The Court is of the opinion that immediate consideration should be given, and if decision is favourable, that orders be issued to make this principle applicable throughout Canada at an early date.

2. ONE SERVICES POLICE FORCE

52. During the disturbances 7 - 8 May 45 in Halifax, it will be noted that there was an entire lack of co-ordinated planning and action by the police of the three Armed Services in the control of Service personnel. This was probably due to the so-called "unwritten law" existing between the three Services which calls for each Service normally looking after their own personnel, notwithstanding CARO 3252 (Reference Exhibit "SSS").

53. It is the opinion of this Court that the present system of three separate police services for the Armed Forces is not economical and the Halifax Disturbances have shown that in times of serious trouble, the lack of joint action under one police commander results in inefficiency, delays and weakness. The Court recommends that consideration be given to the feasibility of having one Policing Force for all three of the Armed Services in place of the Naval Shore Patrol, the C. Pro. C. and the RCAP S.P.

3. PRE-PLANNING

54. In the case of Halifax, there was no joint plan made for combating serious disturbances by the civic authorities in connection with an overall situation, nor was any combined plan made by the Service authorities to meet a Service situation or to assist the civil authorities in an overall situation.

55. The lack of a plan to efficiently use the combined and available law and order

- 276 -

- 10 -

enforcement personnel, civil police, RCMP, Naval Shore Patrol, C. Pro. C. and RCAF S.P., resulted in slow and inefficient operations during the disturbances of the 8 May 45.

56. The lack of a unification of control, direction or command of all enforcement personnel resulted in no one in authority making an appreciation of the situation, formulating plans and having the same executed. If such had been possible the Court is of the opinion that constituted authority might have controlled the situation at an early time and possibly prevented the second disturbance of 8 May 45.

57. The Court recommends that consideration be given to the advisability of instructions being issued by NDHQ to all concerned which would ensure that adequate arrangements and plans be made to meet possible disturbances of a serious nature in Districts or Areas where Service personnel are stationed.

APPENDIX 1  
(to Findings)

ARMY PERSONNEL INVOLVED IN DISTURBANCES

1. Identified. Details of all known cases of identified Army personnel as having been involved in disturbances on 7th and 8th May 45 are listed in Ex. "AA".
2. Unidentified. A digest of references in the evidence to instances of unidentified Army personnel as having been involved in the disturbances of 7th and 8th May 45 follows:-

PAGES

- |        |   |
|--------|---|
| 44     | I saw a soldier carrying a case of beer on Argyle Street.   |
| 93     | I confiscated liquor in possession of Army personnel on streets, and ordered them to return to barracks. I saw no soldiers carrying loot in form of clothes or merchandise.   |
| 95     | Saw 1 soldier on street with loot other than liquor. He was arrested, placed in Guard House and loot delivered to a member of the Guard. The soldier later disappeared and the loot could not be found. Full investigation has taken place ( See pages 95, 178, and 213). |
| 139    | Saw a few soldiers carrying liquor.   |
| 149    | Saw a few soldiers carrying liquor in cases and bottles.  |
| 155-6  | Five soldiers followed crowd into Keith's Brewery and removed beer.   |
| 175    | There were 12 broken panes of glass in barracks of No. 6 Dist. Coy. R.C.A. S.C.   |
| 186    | Soldier, drunk, broke laundry window with fist.   |
| 187    | Some soldiers inside New Wellington Barracks were taking cartons through fence from civilians outside.  |
| 195    | A few Army personnel were carrying cases of beer and bottles of liquor on sidewalk on Barrington St.  |
| 200    | A few soldiers were carrying liquor along Water St.   |
| 200    | Saw some soldiers carrying clothing, shoes, etc. along Barrington St., Hollis St. and Bedford Row.  |
| 204-5  | Saw 2 soldiers carrying liquor out of Hollis St. Liquor Store.  |
| 208-10 | Saw 2 drunk soldiers breaking 5 windows on Barrington St. and removing articles from tobacco shop on Barrington St.   |

- 278 -

- 2 -

- 210 Saw soldier removing 8 suits from tailors on Barrington St.
- 221-2 Saw a few Army personnel going into Brewery.
- 229 Saw man wearing soldier uniform, which I was told later must have been a Reserve Army uniform, carrying goods from my store across the street.
- 254 Saw four Army personnel carrying cases from Hollis St. Liquor Store.
-



**proposed V-E Day Thanksgiving service:**

"The Committee recommend that this service be held at 1430 hours following the announcement of cessation of hostilities. This hour would not interfere with special services planned by all churches for 1100 hours, and would not interfere with the normal messing of all ranks. The Committee recommends this service be a combined service of all faiths and that the service, limited to half an hour, be arranged by senior Padres.

**CLOSING OF BARS**

"The Committee discussed the V-E Day Celebration Committee's request that all bars remain closed on V-E Day.

The Committee felt that the Service bars should remain open as these would encourage personnel to remain in camp and less likely to congregate in unruly gangs down town and could, therefore, be the means of extended control."

28 APRIL 1945 - on this date a "Top Secret" message was received from N.D.H.Q. regarding plans for V-E Day celebrations. I produce copy of this message. This is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit "T". In this it was stated that:

"V-E Day plans are of necessity indefinite.  
Discussions must only be on a Top Secret level."

Insofar as I am aware, this message was not repeated to Units in MD 6, because of its security grading, namely "Top Secret".

In the course of this message, it was stated that if the announcement should be made before 1000 hours local time the remainder of that day would be considered a holiday. If the announcement were made after 1000 hours local time, the remainder of that day and the next day would be considered a holiday.

4 MAY 1945 - In view of the progress of the war in Europe, and Press reports which indicated that V-E Day was imminent, the matter was again discussed in the Joint Services Committee, Atlantic Coast, meeting No. 167. The sole reference to V-E Day in the minutes of this meeting are as follows:

"Instructions received from N.S.H.Q., A.F.H.Q. and N.D.H.Q. for V-E Day were tabled and noted. Arrangements for the Joint Services Memorial Service on this day were finalized."

Attached hereto copy of the instructions referred to, which is examined by the Court and filed as Exhibit B-1.

Though there was no reason to suppose that any serious disturbances would occur in Army establishments or garrisons, therebeing nothing in Unit morale reports, or Situation reports to indicate that such should be anticipated, yet the D.O.C., on several occasions, referred to the matter of V-E Day celebrations at his weekly conferences with Staff Officers, Heads of Services and Commanders of local Units. The tenor of these discussions was, that in this District it was desired that V-E Day should be celebrated in a happy but sober manner by Army personnel, and that any tendency towards disorderly conduct was to be avoided. The matter of supplies of beer for Army Canteens was discussed and O.C.'s were advised to give this matter thought beforehand.

Some officers present were of the opinion that all canteens and bars should be closed on V-E Day. This view, however, was opposed by the majority of those present, who felt that

Signed at **Halifax, N.S.** this **1st** day of **June** 194 **5.**

*[Signature]*

**Major-General** PRESIDENT  
(Signature)

**Commander, Camp Borden**

(Unit)

*[Signature]*

**Brigadier**

(Signature)

**District Depot No. 6, N.S.**

(Unit)

*[Signature]*

**Lt-Col.**

(Signature)

**A-14 C.I.T.C., Aldershot, N.S.**

(Unit)

*[Signature]*

**Lt-Col.**

**No. 1 Trg. Bde. Gp., Debert, N.S.**

*[Signature]*

**Major**

**D.A.J.A.G., NDHQ.**

**Officer detailed  
from office of  
JAG**

MEMBERS

NOT TO BE PUBLISHED

THE INFORMATION GIVEN IN THIS DOCUMENT IS NOT TO BE COMMUNICATED, EITHER DIRECTLY OR INDIRECTLY, TO THE PRESS OR TO ANY PERSON NOT HOLDING AN OFFICIAL POSITION IN HIS MAJESTY'S SERVICE.

*Copy*

MILITARY COURT OF INQUIRY  
INTO DISTURBANCES IN HALIFAX AND  
DARTMOUTH N.S. ON 7TH AND 8TH  
MAY 1945

VOLUME "II"

LIST OF EXHIBITS

EXHIBITS A1 to WWW

C. R.

For retention in C.R.  
with the H. Q. file on the  
disturbances in Halifax &  
Dartmouth 7-8 May 45

R. S. Lemauve  
Capt.

9 Mar 46

PA to AG

000617

## LIST OF EXHIBITS

- A Newspaper clippings from Halifax newspapers from 1 May 45 to 21st May 45. (These are attached only to Original proceedings and are in a separate volume.).
- A.1. Convening Order
- A.2. Terms of Reference
- A.3. Letter 25 May 45 from President of Court to D.O.C. M.D. 6 and answer 26 May 45 from DOC MD 6 to President of Court.
- A.4. Compliance with R.P. 125A.
- B Teletype A 8782, 1445 hrs 7 May 45 from Comdg 6 to units in MD 6 relating to V.E. Day.
- B.1 Letter, 17 Oct 44 from Secy Chiefs of Staff Ctee to Secy, Joint Service Committee, Atlantic Coast, re V.E. Day ceremonies.
- C Extracts from minutes of DOC's Monday morning conferences of 2nd, 9th and 30th Apr 45.
- D DOC's notes of certain events of 7 May 45 including telephone conversation at 1306 hrs between DOC and Brig. Ferguson, AGs Branch NDHQ.
- E Minutes of General Meeting held in DOC's office 1630 hrs 8 May 45.
- F Text of statement of Admiral Murray on the sound truck while proceeding through Halifax at 1735 hrs 8 May 45 and text of Proclamation from Mayor of Halifax over radio at 1845 hrs 8 May 45.
- G Report from A.23 C. & A.A.A. T.C. re V.E. Day.
- H Telegram O 781, 8th May 45, from Comdg 6 to Defensor Ottawa re arrival of troops from Debert on 8 May 45.
- I Telegram O 782, 2335 hrs 8th May '45, re C.B.
- J Record of phone conversation at 0855 hrs 10 May 45 between DOC 6 and Brig. Ferguson NDHQ re aid to civil power.
- K Minutes of meeting of unit commanders in office of DOC MD 6 at 1120 hrs 10 May 45.
- L Telegram A 9078 from Comdg 6 to Secretary NDHQ requesting action to be taken re soldiers in possession of plunder.
- M Special District Order MD 6, 11 May 45, thanking troops for behavior during disturbances and subsequently.
- N Telegram A 9149 from Comdg 6 to all units of MD 6, lifting C.B.
- O Telegram A 9125, 1105 hrs 11th May '45, from Comdg 6 to units of M.D.6 lifting restrictions on leave and furlough.

- 2 -

- P Telegram, 11th May '45, from AG Ottawa to DOC 6 re action on personnel involved in disturbances VE Day.
- Q.1-4 Press releases from PRO MD 6 to local press on 9, 10, and 11 May 45.
- R Advertisement in Halifax Mail 18 May 45 re Canadian Restaurant Association explaining why Restaurants closed V.E. Day.
- S Orders by Col. i/o Admin. MD 6 for V.E. Parade and Thanksgiving Service, and Order of Service attached thereto.
- T Telegram Ranks 7454 dated 28 Apr 45 from AG Ottawa to all DOSC and Cmds relating to V.E. Day.
- U Chronological summary of events 7 - 8 May 1945.
- V Diagrammatic chart showing all units and strengths of units in MD 6 as at 9 May 45.
- W List of confiscated goods arising from disturbances on V.E. Day.
- X Circular, 9 May 45, from AA&QMG to all units in MD 6 re breaches of discipline and disturbances.
- X.1 Further circular, 11 May 45, from AA&QMG to all units re breaches of discipline.
- X.2 Further letter, 13 May 45, from AA&QMG to all units re breaches of discipline during disturbances.
- Y Same as "X"

- 
- AA Summary of all breaches of discipline reported to HQ MD 6 arising out of disturbances 7 to 9 May 45.
- AA.1 Correspondence relating to unauthorized use of DND vehicle on 8 May 45 by H.616524 Cnr Tarnowski, P.
- BB Letter, 13 May 45, from AA&QMG to Chief of Police of Halifax requesting details of military personnel arrested and action taken.
- CC Letter, 13 May 45, from AA&QMG to Chief of Police of Dartmouth requesting details of military personnel arrested and action taken.
- DD Letter, 19 May 45, from AA&QMG to Attorney General of Nova Scotia, re arrest and conviction of Cpl Albert Paulin, No. 6 ES & W Coy RCE, affidavit and statement under oath.
- DD.1 Correspondence relating to notification by Magistrates to the Army authorities regarding Army personnel charged before civil courts.

- 3 -

EE Minutes of meeting of sub-committees of the Halifax Civil Committee for V.E. Day celebrations on 8 March 45.

FF Letter, 31 Mar 45, from Director of Civil Defence, Halifax, N.S. to Col. F.J. North, AA&QMG, M.D. 6 re V.E. Day.

GG Correspondence, 6 Apr to 11 Apr 45, from Mr. A.S. Mahon, N.S.L.C., to D.O.C. re closing of liquor stores and suggestion re Army canteens.

HH Letter 13 Apr 45 from DAAG 1 to DOC MD 6 re meeting of unit commanders at H.Q. MD 6 to discuss messes and canteens on V.E. Day.

II Letter, 3 Oct 44, from Chief of Police, Halifax to DAPM, MD 6, enclosing copy of minutes of meeting held in office of Chief of Police 21 Sep 44, relating to V.E. Day and minutes thereto attached.

JJ Letter, 25 Sep 44, from DAPM MD 6 to OC 37 Provost Coy MD 6 regarding instructions for VE Day.

KK Minutes of meeting, 5 Apr 45, at Police H.Q. between certain civil and service authorities relating to V.E. Day.

LL Letter, 9 Apr 45, from DAPM MD 6 to all Provost Units in MD 6 re instructions for V.E. Day, and Pt. I Orders 9 Apr 45 by O.C. No. 37 Provost Co. M.D.6

MM Letter, 7 May 45, from DAPM to OC 37 & 38 Provost Coys MD 6 re V.E. parade and thanksgiving service.

NN Letter, 5 May 45, from Chief of Police, Halifax to DAPM enclosing program of events by civilian authorities for V.E. Day.

OO Same as "K".

PP Same as "X.1".

QQ Same as "I".

RR Disposition of 37 & 38 & 45 Provost Coys with reinforcements from A.32 C.Pro.C. on 7 May 45.

SS Disposition of Provost in Halifax on 7 May 45.

TT Letter, 9 May 45, from Halifax Fortress to Chief of Police, Halifax, showing articles of clothing handed in to Halifax Fortress.

UU Letter, 15 May 45, from Staff Capt., Halifax Fortress, to Chief of Police, Halifax, re loot recovered.

VV Report from Staff Officer Halifax Fortress on Kit Inspection and recovery of loot.

- 4 -

- WV Details of army personnel under Halifax Fortress  
Commander involved in disturbances 7 - 8 May 45  
with charge sheets.
- WV.1 Statement by Commander Halifax Fortress of all  
personnel not on duty in Halifax 7 - 8 May 45.
- XX Statement from Staff Captain Halifax Fortress re  
reception of Telegram O 782, Order C.B. on 8 May 45.
- XX.1 Reports to Commander Halifax Fortress from units in  
Halifax Fortress Area regarding disturbances  
of 7 - 8 May 45.
- YY Maps (They are only produced with Original of proceedings  
and are in a separate volume).
- YY.1 Map of N.S. showing disposition of troops in MD 6.
- YY.2 Map of Halifax and adjacent area showing disposition  
of troops.
- YY.3 Map of Halifax & Dartmouth showing strength and  
disposition of troops.
- YY.4 Map of Halifax and Dartmouth showing areas and  
building damaged on 7 - 8 May 45.
- ZZ Part I Order MD 6, 7 May 45, re V.E. Day.
- 
- AAA Letter, 1 May 45, from OC 6 Coy RCME to Regimental  
officer of the Coy re V.E. Day.
- BBB Reports from officers of No. 6 Coy. R.C.E.M.EI, detail-  
ing activities re V.E. Day.
- CCC Details of CWAC personnel of No. 17 Adm Unit and 106  
Depot CWAC, involved in disturbances 7 - 8 May 45.
- DDD Same as "O".
- EEE Telegram, A.9650, 16 May 45, from Comdg 6 to units  
of MD 6 re lifting of curfew and granting of passes.
- FFF Letter, 4 May 45, from Dist Signals Officer to  
Signals Section re V.E. Day.
- FFF.1 Circular from Dist Sigs Offr, MD 6 to units re V.E. Day.
- GGG Extract of Part I Orders 5 - 9 May 45 of 6 Ordnance  
Depot RCOC re V.E. Day and discipline.
- HHH Same as "LL".
- III Details of personnel of 21 AA Regt involved in  
disturbances on 7 - 8 May 45.
- JJJ Telegrams received by 21st AA Regt from Halifax Fortress  
relating to V.E. Day and C.B., discipline and  
disciplinary action.
- KKK Circular, 4 May 45, from OC 21 AA Regt RCA to all  
Bty & Troop Comds, covering instructions on V.E. Day.
- LLL Messages issued by 21 AA Regt RCA re V.E. Day and  
disciplinary action.



- 5 -

MMM Messages issued by 21st AA Regt RCA relating to V.E.  
Day and disciplinary action as referred to.

NNN Pictures. (These are only attached to Original Proceedings  
and are in a separate volume.)

NNN.1 Pictures of events of evenings of 7th to 9th May 45.

NNN.2 General pictures of disturbances of 8 May 45.

NNN.3 Pictures of crowd before Hollis St. Liquor Store  
and pictures of crowd Before Sackville St. Liquor  
Store.

NNN.4 Pictures of crowd before Keith's Brewery 8 May 45.

OOO Messages issued by 21st AA Regt on 9th May and there-  
after.

PPP Reports from Battery Commanders of 21st AA Regt. RCA.

QQQ Copies of orders received by, and messages issued by,  
1st Halifax Coast Regt. RCA relating to V.E. Day.

QQQ.1 Reports from unit Commanders of 1st Halifax Coast Regt.

RRR List of liquor confiscated and returned to M.S.L.C.  
by 6 Ord Depot, RCOC.

SSS Routine Order 3252 covering powers of Provost Service  
(Navy, Army, Air Force).

TTT Telegram, 7 May 45, from Comdg 36 (R) Bde Gp to OCs  
Reserve units in MD 6 giving authority to wear  
uniform on V.E. Day.

UUU Report by DMO showing work by Halifax Military Hospital  
on 7, 8, and 9 May 45.

VVV Report by DMO showing patients treated in Halifax  
Military Hospital 7 - 8 May 45 as a result of  
disturbances, exclusive of ordinary admissions.

VVV.1 Report by DMO showing patients treated 7 - 8 May 45  
in M.I.R. in Halifax area as a result of V.E. Day.

WWW Administrative Instructions No. 2, 1800 hrs 3 May 45 by  
O.C. 1 Trg. Bde Gp Debert NS re V.E. Day celebration

EXHIBIT "A"

NEWS PAPER CLIPPINGS FROM HALIFAX PAPERS

1st May 45 -- 21st May 45, ARE ATTACHED ONLY TO

THE ORIGINAL COPY OF THE PROCEEDINGS.

COURT OF INQUIRY

EXHIBIT "A.1"

A COURT OF INQUIRY, composed as under, will assemble at Halifax, Nova Scotia, at the call of the President for the purpose of inquiring into and reporting upon a matter to be placed before it.

President .....Major-General A. C. Spencer,  
C.B.E., E.D.,  
Commander, Camp Borden, Ont.

Members .....Brigadier A. R. Roy, O.B.E.

Lt.-Col. E. A. Chater, E.D.,  
A-14 C.I.T.C., Aldershot, N.S.

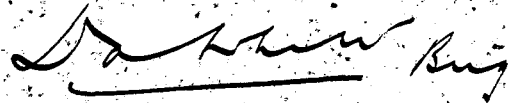
Lt.-Col. M. H. Troy, R.C.A.,  
No. 1 Trg Bde Gp.

Major L. O. Carroll, D.A.J.A.G., N.D.H.Q.,  
is detailed to assist the Court pursuant to K.R.(Can.)  
627.

Evidence is to be taken on oath.

The Court will sit at such times and places  
as the President may direct.

The Proceedings, in triplicate, are to be  
forwarded to this Headquarters without delay.



(D. A. WHITE) Brigadier  
District Officer Commanding  
Military District No. 6

Halifax, N.S.  
14 May 45.

Copies to:

President (1)  
Each Member (1)  
District Orders (1)  
War Diary (1)  
File (1)

HC/120-2-1 (AQ)

TERMS OF REFERENCE

TO

Major Gen. A.C. Spencer, CBE, ED  
Commander, Camp Borden, Ont.

You have been appointed as President of a Court of Inquiry composed as indicated in Convening Order attached hereto, which will assemble at Halifax, N.S. at the call of the President, for the purpose of inquiring into the and reporting upon a matter to be placed before it.

2. You will inquire into and report upon the circumstances connected with the disturbances of the peace involving Army personnel in the City of Halifax, NS, and Dartmouth, NS on or about the 7th May 1945 and subsequent thereto.

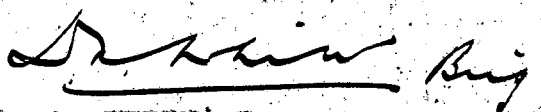
3. Your inquiry and report should include the following:

- (a) The time, place and nature of such disturbances
- (b) Whether any military personnel were involved in any breaches of discipline, and if so, the names of such persons involved, and the conduct of such persons.
- (c) The precautions taken prior to such disturbances
- (d) The action taken during such disturbances
- (e) The action taken afterwards to ensure against their repetition.
- (f) Suggestions and recommendations as to disciplinary action.
- (g) Suggestions and recommendations as to any other matters which the Court may deem fit to make.

4. The evidence is to be taken on oath.

5. The Court will sit in camera, and at such times and places as the President directs.

6. The Proceedings are to be forwarded to the D.O.C. MD 6 in triplicate.



(D. A. WHITE) Brigadier,  
District Officer Commanding,  
Military District No. 8.

Halifax, N.S.,  
15 May 45.



DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
ARMY

BelleVue Building  
25th May 1945

194

Brigadier D. A. White, D.S.O.,  
District Officer Commanding,  
Military District No. 6.

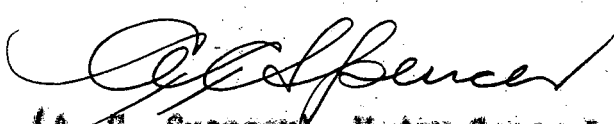
WITNESSES

Court of Inquiry - Halifax Disturbances - 7th & 8th May 1945

In view of the fact that the Court has now heard many witnesses who are members of the Canadian Army, but has heard only a few civilian witnesses, the Court considers it advisable to hear further civilian testimony in order to weigh it against that of the Army.

The Court understands that civilians cannot be compelled to appear before Courts of Inquiry, but requests, however, that you endeavour to make arrangements to have the witnesses listed hereunder appear in order that their testimony may be taken :

The Attorney General of Nova Scotia  
His Worship, the Mayor of Halifax  
The Chief of Police of Halifax  
Mr. Mahon, Commissioner of the  
Nova Scotia Liquor Commission  
The Manager or representative of the  
T. Eaton Co., Halifax  
Major Crowell, Chairman, Civil Defence Corps  
The Manager of the Sackville Liquor Store, Halifax  
" " " " Hollis St. " " "  
" " " " Buckingham St. " " "  
" " " " Agricola St. " " "  
" " " " Mail Order  
Liquor Store, Hollis St. "  
Mr. Oland of Keith's Brewery, Halifax, N. S.  
Constable V. W. Mitchell of the City of  
Halifax Police  
Mr. Uloth, Tramway conductor of the  
N.S. Lt. & Power Co.

  
(A. C. Spencer) Major-General  
President, Court of Inquiry

H.S. 150-1-2 (DOC)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

ARMY

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N.S. 26 May 45.

Maj.-Gen. A.C. Spencer, CBE, ED,  
President,  
Court of Inquiry,  
Bellevue Annex,  
Halifax, N.S.

WITNESSES

Court of Inquiry  
Halifax Disturbances  
7th & 8th May 1945

Your letter of 25th May requesting that arrangements be made to have certain civilian witnesses appear before the Court is acknowledged.

I have discussed this matter with Brigadier R. J. Orde, Judge Advocate General, who is here at present. He is of the opinion that in view of the investigation now under way by the Royal Commission it is unnecessary to have these civilian witnesses heard at the Military Court of Inquiry.

I concur with the view of the JAG and, therefore, am not proceeding with the arrangements requested.

I presume that you will continue with the military witnesses in the usual way.

(SGD) D.A. White Brig,

(D. A. WHITE) Brigadier  
District Officer Commanding  
Military District No. 6.

May 1945.

TO:

Major General A.C. Spencer, C.B.E., E.D.  
President of the Court of Inquiry, inquiry-  
into into and reporting upon disturbances  
of the peace in Halifax, N.S. and Dartmouth,  
N.S., on 7th May 1945 and subsequent thereto.

I have been made fully aware  
of my rights under R.P. 125a and fully under-  
stand them.

I do not desire to avail my-  
self of the right afforded me under R.P. 125a  
of being present throughout the inquiry and of  
making any statement and giving any evidence  
I may wish to make or give and cross-examining  
any witness, and of producing any witnesses,  
provided that, after all witnesses have been  
called, I am afforded an opportunity of reading  
the evidence as transcribed, and that I then be  
afforded an opportunity of making any state-  
ment and giving any evidence I may wish to give  
and of recalling and cross-examining any  
witness, whose evidence, in my opinion, may  
affect my character and military reputation and  
to produce any witness in defence of my  
character or military reputation.

D.A. White, Brig., DOC, MD #6

A.E. Duncanson, Col., i/c Admin.

F.J. North, Lt-Col., AA & QMG

F.I. Andrew, Col., OC # 6 DD

A.A. Bell, Lt.-Col., GSO 1

C.W. Clarke, Lt.-Col., DAPM MD 6

Halifax, N. S.

May 1945.

TO:

Major General A.C. Spencer, C.B.E., E.D.  
President of the Court of Inquiry, inquire-  
ing into and reporting upon disturbances  
of the peace in Halifax, N. S. and Dartmouth,  
N. S., on 7th May 45 and subsequent thereto.

I, the undersigned, have  
been afforded an opportunity of reading the  
transcript of all the evidence adduced before  
the Court of Inquiry into the disturbances of  
Halifax and Dartmouth of 7-8 May, and  
presided over by Major-General A.C. Spencer,  
C.B.E., E.D., and I do not desire to make any  
further statement or give any further evidence,  
nor to recall or cross-examine any witness, or  
to call any other witnesses. I am satisfied  
that I have been afforded an opportunity to  
exercise the rights set out in R.P. 125a.

Halifax, N. S.

D.A. White, Brig., DOC MD #6

A.E. Duncanson, Col., i/c Admin

F.J. North, Lt.-Col., AA&QMG

F.I. Andrew, Col., OC #6 DD

A.A. Bell, Lt.-Col., GSO 1

C.W. Clarke, Lt.-Col., DAPM

MD 6



Exhibit "B"

TELETYPE

HS/150-1-2 (AQ)

1445 P hrs 7 May 45

Cmdr Halifax Fortress (DRLS)  
Defended Port of Sydney  
OC 6 Dist. Sigs., R.C. Sigs. (DRLS)  
HQ Goose Bay  
No 6 District Depot (DRES)  
OC Ordnance Depot, Amherst NS  
A-14 C.I.T.C., Aldershot, NS  
A-23 C & AA ATC, Halifax (DRLS)  
No 60 C.I.(B) T.C., Yarmouth  
Embarkation Transit Unit (DRLS)  
A.A. Reinf. Camp, Bedford (DRLS)  
No 2 Transit Camp, Debert  
No 1 Inf. Trg. Bde. Group, Debert  
District Engineer Officer (DRLS)  
D.S. & T.O. "  
Dist Medical Officer "  
District Dental Officer "  
District Paymaster "  
District Provost Martial (37838) "  
District Ordnance Officer "  
R.C.E.M.E. "  
Barrackmaster, New Wellington Bks (DRLS)  
No 6 V.T.S. (DRLS)  
No 10 Adm Unit, CWAC (DRLS)  
No 17 Adm Unit, CWAC "  
No 106 Depot Coy., CWAC "  
OC 36 (R) Bde Group "  
OC 42 (R) Bde Group, New Glasgow, NS  
No 6 E.S. & W. Coy., R.C.E. (DRLS)  
No 6 Coy., R.C.A.S.C. "  
No 6 Coy., R.C.E.M.E. "  
No 6 Coy., R.C.O.C. "  
District Chaplain Officer "  
Audits "  
Treasury "  
No 1 Port Coy., RCASC (DRLS)  
No 26 Coy., C.D.C. "  
No 50 Coy., C.D.C. "  
No 35 Coy., C.D.C. "  
O 1/c Clerks, HQ MD 6  
Camp Adm Officer, Debert NS

A 8782 REMAINDER OF TODAY MAY SEVENTH AND ALL DAY  
EIGHTH WILL BE A HOLIDAY

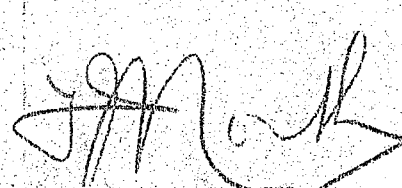
(2) ALL NORMAL DUTY MUST BE CARRIED OUT AND SECURITY  
MAINTAINED

(3) ADEQUATE STAFFS (SUNDAY PATTERN) WILL BE MAINTAINED

(4) ESSENTIAL SERVICES WILL BE MAINTAINED

(5) EQUIPMENT AND PROPERTY SHALL BE SAFEGUARDED

(6) THOSE EMPLOYED THESE TWO DAYS WILL BE GRANTED LEAVE  
LATER ON

  
COMMANDING SIX

Halifax, N.S.  
7 May 45

C  
O  
P  
Y

EXHIBIT B-1

RESTRICTED  
CSC 300

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
OTTAWA, CANADA

17th Oct. 44

SECRETARY,  
JOINT SERVICE COMMITTEE,  
ATLANTIC COAST

"V" DAY CEREMONIES

1. The Chiefs of Staff have been notified of Cabinet decision in connection with "V" day ceremonies on which guidance was sought in your A.C.5-30 of 16th September.
2. The Cabinet on 10 Oct. agreed that:
  - (a) Arrangements for local celebrations should be left to municipal authorities though some general guidance might be given by the government and provision should be made with respect to a holiday; and
  - (b) the cessation of hostilities would be appropriate occasion for giving official status to Canadian Red Ensign and that a draft Order in Council should be prepared for consideration and enactment at that time.
3. It was further agreed that the Under Secretary of State should represent the Cabinet with respect to enquiries and correspondence from local authorities.

(E.W.T. GILL)  
LIEUTENANT-COLONEL  
SECRETARY,  
CHIEFS OF STAFF COMMITTEE

EXTRACTS FROM MINUTES OF DOC's MONDAY MORNING CONFERENCES  
AT WHICH  
MD NO 6 STAFF OFFICERS, HEADS OF SERVICES AND REPRESENTATIVES  
HALIFAX FORTRESS WERE PRESENT

---

- 2 Apr 45: Major O.R. Crowell, of the Civil Defence Committee, has asked for the services of No.6 District Depot and A.23 T.C. bands on V-Day.
- 9 Apr 45: Irrespective of civilian plans for V-Day celebrations, the D.O.C. stated that our Chaplains would hold Memorial Services with the troops.
- Some discussion arose as to whether Wet Canteens should be open on V-Day. The general opinion of the meeting inclined towards the opening of the Canteens at various intervals during the day - but with limited supplies.
- 30 Apr 45: Col. A.E. Duncanson, speaking on V-E Day celebrations, said that a warning order would be given out today so that everybody would be prepared should the announcement come suddenly. There will be a joint parade on that day at 1430 hrs on the Garrison Grounds outside of Headquarters M.D.6 with Admiral Murray in command of the parade.

XXXXXX

Exhibit "D"

MONDAY 7th May 1945

During morning ( ) information received by radio of Germany's surrender.

Local newspapers published extras.

Message received ( ) from Navy asking if we manage Memorial Service 1430 hrs, 7th May. We replied "yes". Later message came advising that Air Force personnel had dispersed for holiday. Service cancelled for 7th.

1308 hrs. Brig. Ferguson, A.G. Branch, telephoned DOC and stated: "Mr. Illsley, representing Government is expected to speak on CBC at any moment. He will make the official announcement and telegram Ranks 7455 7454 will apply. The remainder of the day and all the next day will be holiday. Those who have to remain on duty will be given leave later". He also stated that the announcement had been scheduled for noon, Ottawa time, but was delayed, probably because they were waiting for Mr. Churchill.

14440 hrs. Radio reported "Ministry of Information England, announces tomorrow 8th, will be V-E Day"

1445 hrs. Teletype A.8782 File HS 150-1-2 (AQ) sent to units, reading as follows: A.8782 Remainder of today, May 7th and all day 8th will be holiday. (2) All normal duty must be carried out and security maintained. (3) adequate staffs (Sunday pattern) will be maintained. (4) essential services will be maintained. (5) equipment and property shall be safe guarded. (6) those employed these two days will be granted leave later on".

1510 hrs. Admiral Murray telephoned and informed DOC "Tomorrow 8th, will be official V-E Day.

1000 hrs Halifax time, Mr. Churchill will speak

1430 hrs Joint Services Memorial Service

1600 hrs H.M. The King will speak

1900 hrs Official time of completion of hostilities"

NOTE: Civilian personnel generally reported commenced holiday during this day, mostly in morning.

During evening, City Committee gave fireworks display on Harbour front. Large groups on Citadel Hill Quite orderly. During evening, trouble reported downtown with Sackville St. Liquor Store reported looted. See DAPM report re this.

# MINUTES OF MEETING

DOC's Office 1630 hrs 8th May 45

1. At the request of His Worship, the Mayor of Halifax, a meeting was held in the office of the D.O.C., M.D.6 at 1630 hrs, 8th May 45. Those present were:

Rear Admiral Murray  
Brigadier D.A. White  
Mr. McQuarrie, Attorney General  
Mr. Crowell  
Mayor Allen Butler  
Mr. Carl Bethune  
Mr. Walker  
Deputy Mayor J.E. Ahern  
Alderman Batesman  
Alderman Bugess  
Chief of Police Conrad  
Mr. A.S. Mahn, Liquor Commission  
Air Vice Marshal Morfee  
G.S.O. 1  
AA & QMG M D 6  
DAAG  
DAPM  
Navy, Army and Air Force  
Col. i/c Admin.  
Commissioner Eames, RCMP

2 The Mayor reported the situation in the City to be serious. Crowds had been rioting for several hours and had entered the Brewery on Water Street and now breaking into the Light & Power Building at the moment, had on damaged plate-glass windows all over the downtown area and were endeavouring to break into the Brewery at the North End. The Mayor requested that all Services be ordered into barracks. He estimated the crowds to be of about 5000 and reported them to be drunk and out of hand. THE MAYOR'S SPEECHES OF 1800 PM: 2200 PM: 2300 PM:

3. Admiral Murray stated that he was loathe to order all Services out of the City as the great bulk were behaving themselves but what he would prefer to endeavour to round up the rioters. 1000 rioters were seen in the City at the moment of the speech.

4. Chief of Police stated that he had not sufficient forces to act effectively. 1000 rioters were seen in the City at the moment of the speech.

5. Mr. Mahn reported that there were several liquor depots that were in danger and asked for protection on Agricola St. and Buckingham St. stores and the Cold Storage Plant. 1000 rioters were seen in the City at the moment of the speech.

6. The Chief of Police reported that he had only thirty to forty men on duty. The Admiral said that if protection was given to the liquor stores, such protection should be under the control of the Civil Police. The Mayor ~~stated that he was loathe to take any action that would result in putting the City under Martial Law.~~ The number of Police and Provost available was estimated as follows: 1000 rioters were seen in the City at the moment of the speech.

Civilian 140  
Navy 180  
Army 150  
Air Force 45

7. It was also reported that no civil defence personnel were available. It was agreed that phase one would consist of guarding vital points, phase two of trying to disperse the rioters.

- 13 The meeting adjourned at 1800 hrs, 8th May 45.  
Sgd. A.E.O. Duncanson, Colonel  
Officer i/c Administration,  
M.P.D. No. 6 and Hon. Secretary  
The meeting adjourned at 1800 hrs, 8th May 45.  
Sgd. A.E.O. Duncanson, Colonel  
Officer i/c Administration,  
M.P.D. No. 6 and Hon. Secretary

[illegible]

THE D.T.G.'S H.D.P. SE TERC KLE' DAN KOL 40' DHOZE BLOCHET  
DELOU A. POTTIER' S MOONING AND WERT TO THE OFFICE OF  
... THE ANCESTRY OF HIS "COLBERT" AND

NO 10 1117001 1030 MAR 24 1964

# PRINCIPLES OF PRINTING

C O P Y

EXHIBIT F

17.35 hours

May 8, 1945.

The Mayor of Halifax has declared V-E Day over as from 6 o'clock to-night and respectfully requests that all citizens remain in or near their homes after that hour. This is necessary, in order that the authorities may take the necessary steps to correct the situation. Senior Naval, Military and Airforce Officers concur in this action and Naval, Military and Airforce personnel are ordered to return to barracks, or billets immediately.

18.45 hours

May 8, 1945.

A Proclamation from the Mayor of Halifax

AS the Mayor of the City of Halifax, I deem the emergency existing in this city to be sufficiently grave as to instruct all persons to retire to their homes, barracks, or billets immediately. Any persons found out of their homes, barracks or billets after eight o'clock to-night, lay themselves open to the serious consequences of the law.

God save the King.

Allan M. Butler,  
M A Y O R.

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- A R M Y -  
COAST AND ANTI-AIRCRAFT ARTILLERY TRAINING CENTRE

Halifax, N.S., 14 May 45.

Headquarters,  
M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N.S.

"V-E" WEEK

Reference telephone conversation Capt. Harrington -  
Capt. Gillis.

1. Herewith detail of events occurring during the m/n week.
2. Several of our Officers and N.C.Os took steps on their own initiative to prevent service personnel from causing further damage and disturbance in Halifax. Particulars of this can be furnished if desired.

*T.R. Meighen*  
(T.R. Meighen) Lt-Col., RCA,  
Commanding Officer C & A A. rty (A23)  
Training Centre

HEP/RJ  
Enc.



Chronological detail of the events occurring week of  
7 May 45 to 12 May 45 affecting C & A.A. Arty (A23)TC.

Monday 7 May 45

1030 hrs - On receipt of VE announcement all personnel paraded to Square where C.O. issued instructions regarding observance of the VE day and a short religious service was held.  
1100 hrs - Personnel paraded to Wet Canteen for free issue of refreshments. All transport grounded except on authority of C.O. per Transport Officer.  
1300 - 1600 hrs - Normal duties continue.  
1600 hrs - Break off from duties.  
2000 - 2359 hrs - Dance for all ranks in Drill Hall.  
(250 CWAC from #10 and #17 Admin. Units transported by Unit Transport were in attendance. CWAC were returned to Barracks by 0100 hrs without incident.)

Tuesday 8 May 45

Official holiday for all ranks - skeleton staff retained on duty. No incident occurred in area of this Centre. Transport grounded as on Monday.

1745 hrs - all personnel confined to Barracks as per instructions received from H.Q. 6.  
1745 hrs - H.Q. 6 directed available troops to be despatched to town of Dartmouth to assist Civil authorities. Twenty-five (25) O.Rs with Officers and N.C.O's under command of Capt. P.A.B.R. Pacquet despatched by 1900 hrs and returned 0030 hrs.  
1930 hrs - RCAF station Dartmouth requested supply of tear gas. Twenty-five canisters were supplied at 20000 hrs. These canisters have not been returned.

Wednesday 9 May 45

Normal duties resumed.

1500 hrs - Muster parade held and all personnel accounted for except B44375 Bdr. Marshall, G.S. attached for all purposes from 21st A.A. Regt., RCA while on course, and D611433 Gnr. Gervais, J.L. attached for rations and quarters from 21st A.A. Regt. RCA. It has since been learned that Bdr. Marshall received sentence of 6 months in County Jail and that Gnr. Gervais is held in civil custody.

On instructions from H.Q. M.D. 6 a detail of 100 men with Officers and N.C.O's under command of Major A.Y. Young were despatched to town of Dartmouth at 1600 hrs. These Troops were relieved by a similar detail at 1900 hrs, remaining on duty until 0100 hrs.

Thursday 10 May 45 - 30 Men with Officers and N.C.Os were on duty in the town of Dartmouth from 1800 hrs to 0200 hrs.

Friday 11 May 45 - C.B. lifted at 1300 hrs. 30 men on duty in town of Dartmouth from 1800 hrs to 0200 hrs.

Saturday 12 May 45 - Kit inspection of all personnel held at 1330 hrs  
No loot was found. 30 men on duty in town of Dartmouth from 1800 hrs until 0200 hrs.

EXHIBIT H

W I R E    C O P Y

FROM            COMMANDING SIX

TO              DEFENSOR                    IMMEDIATE

O.781            REFERENCE TELEPHONE CONVERSATION DOC 6 TO MAJ GEN  
WALFORD STOP DEBERT B N STRENGTH 50 OFFRS 1050 ORs 115 VEHICLES  
ARRIVED 6 BISTRICK DEPOT AS FOLLOWS STOP ADVANCE PARTY 082205  
HOURS MAIN BODY 082230 P HOURS STOP LT COL THOMSON IN COMMAND

Signed-R.H. Linely, Major,  
for  
D.A. WHITE, Brigadier.

Exhibit Xi

M E S S A G E

HS/150-1-2 (AQ)

CONFIRMATION

Commander, Halifax Fortress  
O.C. No.6 District Depot  
OC A.23 C. & A.AA TC  
OC No.6 Dist. Coy. R.C. Sigs.  
O.C. Embarkation Transit Unit  
O C AA Reinf. Camp  
Barrack Master, New Wellington Bks  
O C No.6 V.T.S.  
O. C. No.10 Admin. Unit, CWAC  
O C No. 17 Admin. Unit, CWAC  
O C No. 106 Depot Coy. CWAC  
O C 36 (R) Bde. Gp. Halifax  
O C No.6 ES & W Coy RCE  
O C No. 6 Coy. RCASC  
O C No. 6 Coy RCOG  
O C No. 6 Coy RCEME  
O C No. 1 Port Coy RCASC  
O C No. 26 Coy CDC  
O C No 35 Coy CDC  
O C No 50 Coy CDC  
District Medical Officer  
District Dental Officer  
District Paymaster  
Cogswell St Hospital

I M P O R T A N T

O 782 NO LEAVE TO BE GRANTED TROOPS STOP ALL TROOPS  
TO BE ON DUTY OR CONFINED TO BARRACKS UNTIL FURTHER  
ORDERS

COMMANDING SIX

HALIFAX NS  
062335 P Hrs 45

EXHIBIT "J"

0955 hrs. 10 May 1945

TELEPHONE CONVERSATION - BRIGS. FERGUSON & WHITE

Form of Req. Sec. 80 Militia Act

from Attorney General. DOC decide how many troops.

Magistrate must be present and give order to officer  
in charge. He tells officer where to put troops.

Magistrate must be with the O/C Troops all the time.

He speaks for the civil power. 858-862 in K.R. (Can.)

SECRET

MINUTES OF A MILITARY MEETING AT HQ. M.D. 6  
1130 hrs. Thursday May 10th 1945

THOSE PRESENT WERE:-

Brigadier D.A. White, DSO D.O.C. M.D. 6  
Colonel A.E. Duncanson, DSO VD. Col. i/c Admn  
Lieut. Col. A.A. Bell, GSO 1  
Lieut. Col. F.J. North, AA&QMG  
Lieut. Col. Flowers, Representing Fortress  
Major J.L. Willis, DAGMG  
Lieut. Col. G.J. Clarke, DAFM  
Major J.F. Browne, GSO 3 Intelligence  
Lieut. Col. A. Thomson, O.C. Troops  
Major J.H. Parthing, 2 i/c Troops  
Captain G. Dwyer, Legal Officer  
Captain V.E. Hadland, CMSC (Secretary)

Commander E.P. Shaver, RCNVR Staff Offr. Chief of Staff  
(Admin) at about 1130 hrs.

Brigadier D.A. White, D.O.C. M.D. 6, pointed out  
several considerations which had to be settled.

It was decided that the Fortress Commander could handle  
any threat to magazines, gun sites and Military Properties under  
his Command with the Artillery personnel and Operational Infantry  
Units now under his Command. Lieut. Col. A. Thomson to be  
appointed O.C. Troops, in the event that the Attorney General  
should requisition Army personnel in aid of the civil power.  
Lieut. Col. Flowers and Lieut. Col. Thomson voiced their con-  
currence in this arrangement.

The O.C. Troops will receive his orders from the D.O.C.  
The D.O.C. will not issue such an order until he has the written  
requisition for Aid to Civil Power on the prescribed form from the  
Attorney General.

The O.C. Troops must receive signed orders from the  
magistrate to whom he reports. The D.O.C. warned Lieut. Col.  
Thomson that if this order and proclamation was not properly  
completed and death should result, then he, Lieut. Col. Thomson,  
would be criminally responsible.

The magistrate must read the "Riot Act" in public and  
conclude with the words "God Save The King" and wait for thirty  
minutes before troops can act.

Lieut. Col. F.J. North read Section 91 of the Criminal  
Code to the meeting.

Commander E.P. Shaver, RCNVR, Staff Officer to Chief of  
Staff (Adm) came into the meeting at this point.

It was pointed out to the meeting that HDMQ had only  
given authority for the Army to act as laid down in the pamphlet  
"Aid to the Civil Power" and that G.O. 316 of 1944 was not to be  
evoked until the former normal procedure had failed to be effective  
and only then on authority of HDMQ.

Lieut. Col. Thomson then gave Major J.L. Willis, DAPMC, lists of his requirements in vehicles, ammunition, grenades, Vary Pistols, rations, etc. etc. Arrangements for medical supplies and Doctors to be arranged with the DMO.

A good deal of discussion arose as to whether the O.C. Troops could send out parties under the Command of an officer in sufficient strength to deal with mobs breaking out in different parts of the city. Under the authority granted by NHQ, the Armed Forces must remain under the immediate control of the Commander at all times and in the presence of the magistrate. If broken down into detachments, each detachment Commander would have to have a magistrate present with him to authorize action.

The D.O.C. was of the opinion that certain liquor stores should be placed in protective custody by the Navy. It was felt that if liquor could not be obtained to inflame the crowd, trouble arising could be easily controlled.

Commander Shavor said that he would suggest this measure to the Admiral.

Lieut. Col. Clarke, DAPM, will arrange to have all surplus Provost personnel who are not required for certain vulnerable points, to report to Lieut. Col. Thomson as soon as the situation warrants, to act as traffic guides, etc.

At this moment, Brigadier Orde called the D.O.C. by telephone from Ottawa (time - 1254 hrs.)

The D.O.C. told the meeting that Brigadier R.J. Orde had cleared the question of Detachments. So long as a magistrate has accompanied the Officer, read the "Riot Act" and handed over the prescribed form, the Officer carried out his duty as he (the Officer) sees fit to restore order.

The D.O.C. then explained that it is not permissible to ask the Navy or Air Force for aid to the Civil Power as such Aid is only given by the Army and that the Attorney General should requisition aid from the Army in the case of riot, either real or anticipated.

EXHIBIT L

COPY OF CMDG SIX WIRE 101705P

FROM COMMANDING SIX HALIFAX

TO SECRETARY DEPT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE OTTAWA ONT

A 9078 ADVICE IS REQUESTED AS TO ACTION TO BE TAKEN IN REGARD  
TO SOLDIERS FOUND IN POSSESSION OF PLUNDER PRESUMED TO BE  
OBTAINED FROM THE LOOTING OF STORES ETC IN HALIFAX STOP A FIRM  
RECOMMENDATION AS TO WHETHER THESE PERSONNEL SHOULD BE DEALT  
WITH UNDER ARMY ACT OR TURNED OVER TO THE CIVIL AUTHORITIES

(SIGNED) F J NORTH LT COL

DISTRICT ORDER

BY

BRIGADIER D A WHITE, DSO.

DISTRICT OFFICER COMMANDING MD NO 6

HALIFAX N S 11 MAY 45.

---

SPECIAL DISTRICT ORDER

703

Now that the situation in Halifax and vicinity is returning to normal, I have reason to hope that the Curfew will be set at a later hour and therefore the Confinement to Barracks lifted and hours for the troops made to conform to those of civilians.

2. I wish to take this opportunity to express my gratification on the behaviour of the great majority of the troops. It is, unfortunately, true that a few soldiers misbehaved themselves and by taking part in the disturbance brought discredit on their comrades but in the main, members of the Army behaved themselves in a soldierly manner and are to be commended.

3. I wish also to express particular pride in the action of the Provost Corps and the Officers and ORs who assisted them. Their work was most difficult and was well done. I call on all ranks to conduct themselves in a disciplined and considerate manner to the Citizens of Halifax who have suffered great loss as a result of the recent disturbance.

4. In conclusion, I would point out to all that although in uniform they are still citizens and as such it is their duty at all times to obey civil authorities and help to maintain the peace.

Sgd.. D. A. White, Brig.

District Officer Commanding,  
M. D. No. 6



EXHIBIT "N"

HC 120-2-1 (AQ)

MESSAGE

COMMANER HALIFAX FORTRESS  
OC NO SIX DISTRICT DEPOT  
OC A23 C & AAA T C  
OF NO SIX DIST COY RC SIGS  
OC EMBARKATION TRANSIT UNIT  
OC AA REINF CAMP  
BARRACK MASTER NEW WELLINGTON BARRACKS  
OC NO SIX V T S  
OC NO 10 ADMIN UNIT CWAG  
OC NO 17 ADMIN UNIT CWAG  
OC NO 106 DEPOT COY CWAG  
OC 36 (R) BDE GP  
OC NO 6 COY ES & W RCE  
OC NO 6 COY RCASC  
OC NO 6 COY RCOC  
OC NO 6 COY RCEME  
OC NO 1 PORT COY RCASC  
OC NO 26 COY GDC)  
OC NO 36 COY GDC) DDO  
OC NO 50 COY GDC)  
DISTRICT MEDICAL OFFICER  
DISTRICT DENTAL OFFICER  
DISTRICT PAYMASTER  
COGSWELL STREET HOSPITAL  
DAPM

IMPORTANT

A 9149 REFERENCE O 782 DATED 5 MAY 45 CONFINEMENT TO  
BARRACKS NOW LISTED STOP CURFEW WILL BE AT 2200 HRS  
STOP ALL TROOPS WILL CONFORM TO CURFEW

COMMANDING SIX

HALIFAX-NS

11 1230 HrsP May 45

Sgd. P.S. Fielding, Lt.-Col.

EXHIBIT "O"

M E S S A G E

HC/120-2-1 (AQ)

COMMANDING HALIFAX FORTRESS  
OC NO SIX DISTRICT DEPOT  
OC A23 C AAA T C  
OC NO 6 DIST COY RC SIGS  
OC EMBARKATION TRANSIT UNIT  
OC AA REINF CAMP  
BARRACK MASTER NEW WELLINGTON BKS  
OC NO SIX V T S  
OC NO 10 ADMIN UNIT CWAC  
OC NO 17 ADMIN UNIT CWAC  
OC NO 106 COY CWAC  
OC 36 (R) BDE GP  
OC NO 6 COY ES & W RCE  
OC NO 6 COY RCASC  
OC NO 6 COY RCOC  
OC NO 6 COY RCEME  
OC NO 1 PORT COY RCASC  
OC NO 26 COY C D C  
OC NO 36 COY C D C  
OC NO 50 COY C D C  
DISTRICT MEDICAL OFFICER  
DISTRICT DENTAL OFFICER  
DISTRICT PAYMASTER  
COGSWELL STREET HOSPITAL

IMPORTANT

A 9125 REFERENCE O 782 DATED 8 MAY 45 STOP RESTRICTION  
ON LEAVE AND FURLOUGH TO OUTSIDE POINTS IN NOW LIFTED  
NORMAN LEAVE AND FURLOUGH FOR PERSONNEL PROCEEDING  
OUTSIDE HALIFAX MAY BE GRANTED

COMMANDING SIX

HALIFAX NS

111105P HRS MAY 45

Sgd. F.J. North, Lt.-Col.

EXHIBIT P 1

C O P Y

From: Public Relations Office,  
Military District No. 1,  
Ottawa, N. C.,  
9 May 45.

AC V VER NR 11 "IMMEDIATE"

FROM ADJUTANT GENERAL OTTAWA 111007Q

TO DOC MD NO SIX HALIFAX NS

GR 109 BT

RANKS 8195

para one REF YOUR A9078 DATED 10 MAY 45 arising from the victory

PARA TWO ON YOUR VERBAL RECOMMENDATION RECEIVED ON THE TELEPHONE

THE FOLLOWING ACTION IS APPROVED

(A) ARMY PERSONNEL ALREADY NOW OR HEREAFTER ARRESTED BY CIVIL  
POLICE FOR BEING IN POSSESSION OF PLUNDER WILL BE DEALT WITH BY  
CIVIL POLICE

(B) OTHER WILL BE DEALT WITH BY ARMY AUTHORITIES

PARA THREE SHOULD ANY PARTICULAR CIRCUMSTANCES ARISE WHICH WOULD  
CAUSE THE DOC TO DESIRE TO ALTER THIS ARRANGEMENT HE SHOULD USE HIS  
DISCRETION IN PARTICULAR CASES BUT NORMALLY THE ABOVE IS THE  
PROCEDURE TO BE FOLLOWED

PARA FOUR ACKNOWLEDGE  
BT 111220Q 16

...the parade through their lines in a 1 ep, and congratulated  
...on their splendid appearance. Following the brief inspection,  
...led away on a route march and presented Halifaxians  
...colorful picture as they were silhouetted against the sky  
...Hill.

No. 6 District Depot band, directed by RSM, M,  
...played for the inspection and led the parade in the  
...on Beakville street adjoining the Naval Yard  
...

EXHIBIT Q3

From: Public Relations Office,  
Military District No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S.,  
10 May 45.

FOR IMMEDIATE USE:

Special services of thanksgiving to God for Victory will be held at every training centre, camp and unit in Military District No. 6, military authorities announced today. This is in accordance with the proclamation that Sunday, May 13, be a National Day of Prayer. This day will be observed by unit arrangements.

Where bands are available, in addition to 'O Canada' and the National anthem, the National anthems of the United States and Russia will be played.

EXHIBIT Q 4

From: Public Relations Office,  
Military District No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S.,  
11 May 45.

Add to Story on lifting of Army C.B. and Special District  
Order issued today by Brig. D.A. White, D.O.C., M.D. No. 6.

Men of the Canadian Provost Corps who were so  
warmly praised by Brig. White were commended also by Lt.-Col.  
C.W. Clarke, deputy assistant provost marshal for M.D. 6, who  
directed activities of the soldier police.

Col. Clarke reported that until additional  
provost corps men were flown in from Camp Borden late  
Wednesday evening, men of Halifax detachments worked several  
times around the clock, going without sleep from 48 to 72 hours.  
"They did an untiring job of patrolling and aiding in general  
the civilian authorities."

Major G.R. Lorway is in command of local provost  
companies with Capt. B.L. Conway in charge of No. 37 Company  
detachments and Capt. M.E. Byers, incharge of No. 38 Company  
detachments.

**EXHIBIT "R"**

Extract from Halifax Mail dated 18 May 45

**WHY HALIFAX RESTAURANTS  
WERE CLOSED ON V-E DAY**

In justice to the restaurants of this city, and in view of the criticism arising from the fact they were closed on V-E Day, the public is entitled to know the facts.

On Apr 3rd, more than a month before V-E Day, a meeting of the Halifax Branch of the Canadian Restaurant Association was held to decide on a policy, and all members agreed that they would co-operate to the fullest extent to keep restaurants open on V-E Day, closing at 8 p.m. Among those present that this meeting were Chief of Police Conrad and Major Crowell.

Nothing as drastic as actually took place was expected; but the restaurants, who perhaps have more dealings with the public in general than any other type of business, realized the arrangements should be made for special protection in each restaurants belonging to the association.

A request for such protection was made in writing to the civil authorities under dated of April 12th, twenty-five days before V-E Day. A non-committal reply was received dated April 28th, to this letter.

With this lack of assurance of protection, the public will understand our problem. What type of retail business in the downtown district WAS open on V-E Day? With no help at work, and no special protection, how could the restaurants possibly stay open? One or two did try in vain to co-operate, with drastic results.....not from being overcrowded, but overpowered.

On the whole, restaurants in this city today have surprisingly little equipment to handle the abnormal wartime trade. In consideration of the public in general, and the services in particular, the restaurants could not take the chance of losing what limited equipment they had by opening on V-E day without protection.

The restaurant proprietors of this city, who have catered to 70% service personnel in the last 5 1/2 years, with no special priority, extra food, adequate help or equipment, feel they have done a good job. They feel this is appreciated by all the fairminded among civilians and service personnel alike.

(SIGNED) HALIFAX BRANCH,  
CANADIAN RESTAURANT ASSOCIATION

## ORDERS FOR V-E-DAY PARADE AND TRANKSGIVING SERVICE

-----

1. There will be Thanksgiving Service held at 1430 hours V-E-Day on the Garrison Football Grounds which will be attended by contingents of 500 from each of the three Armed Services.
2. The Parade will be under command of a Naval officer approved by Rear Admiral L.W. Murray, O.B.E., R.C.N., Commander-in-Chief, Canadian Northwest Atlantic.
3. Contingents participating will be in position on the Garrison Football Grounds by 1415 hours V-E-Day and formed up as shown on the attached sketch.
4. The Army contingent will be under command of Major J.A. MacDonald, North Nova Scotia Highlanders, with Capt. T.A. Wier, Halifax Rifles, 2 i/c, and will consist of 6 platoons of 2 Officers (Capt or Lieut) and 75 ORs each to be provided as follows:-

|                  |                     |
|------------------|---------------------|
| 5. No. 1 Platoon | #6 District Depot   |
| No. 2 Platoon    | #21 V.G. of C.      |
| No. 3 Platoon    | 21st A.A.Reg. RCA   |
| No. 4 Platoon    | #6 Coy. RCOC        |
| No. 5 Platoon    | #6 Coy. RCEME       |
| No. 6 Platoon    | #10 Adm. Unit, CWAC |
| Band             | #6 District Depot   |
6. O.C. #6 District Depot will detail a duty bugler to report to the Naval Officer-in-charge the parade at the Garrison Football Grounds at 1400 hours V-E-Day.
7. Dress for all ranks will be battle dress with anklets, web waist belt and field service cap. Arms will not be carried.
8. Platoons will be sized and be 25 file frontage.
9. Army units will assemble independently on the South Commons in time to move off at 1400 hours under command of Major MacDonald.
10. On completion of the ceremony contingent commanders will march their units to their assembly points and disperse.
11. D.A.P.M. in liaison with Navy and Air Force will arrange traffic control.
12. When formed the parade will stand easy by command of the parade commander (Navy). Before massed bands play "O Canada", "G" will be sounded on the bugle at which time the parade commander will bring the parade to attention standing them at ease on completion of "O Canada". The parade commander will again bring the parade to attention for "God Save the King", standing the parade at ease on completion and turning the parade over to contingent commander. Headgear will not be removed. All Officers will salute only when the "King" is played.
13. Major Hodson, GSO 2, M.D. 6, will be Staff Officer on duty at Assembly Point and Major Wyld, DAAG, will be Staff Officer on duty at Parade Ground.

P.T.O.

14. Copies of order of service are attached for distribution.

Encl.(2)

*A.E. Duncanson*  
(A.E. Duncanson) Colonel,  
Officer-in-Charge Adm.,  
Military District No. 6.

DISTRIBUTION: (Two copies)

D.O.C.  
Fortress Commander  
Col. i/c Adm.  
G.S.O. 1  
A.A. & Q.M.G.  
Major H.G. Wyld  
Major V.N. Hodson  
D.A.Q.M.G.  
D.S. & T.O.  
O.C. #6 D.D.  
O.C. #21 A.A. Regt. RCA  
O.C. #6 Coy. R.C.O.C.  
O.C. #6 Coy. R.C.E.M.E.  
O.C. #10 Adm. Unit, C.W.A.C.  
Major J.A. MacDonald  
A.D.C.  
D.A.P.M.  
R.C.M.P.  
A.D.C.  
Chief of Police  
Halifax L.H. & P  
File  
O.C. #21 V.G. of C.  
R.S.M. Greene



P. 2 Ex. 5

CIVILIANS

N

CIVILIANS

MECHANICAL NAVY

PLATOON 6

PLATOON 5

PLATOON 4

PLATOON 3

PLATOON 2

PLATOON 1

3 PAGES

25 FILES

R.C.N.

ARMY

3 PAGES

R.C.A.F.

M.D.C.  
H.Q.  
Bldg.

BANDS

DAIS

UNATTACHED OFFICERS

BELL ROAD

EXHIBIT T

TOP SECRET

A R M Y M E S S A G E

282015Q APR 45

GOC PACIFIC COMMAND

DOC's M.D. Nos. 1,2,3,4,5,6,  
7,10,12 and 13

COMMANDERS CAMP BORDEN AND PETAWAWA

RANKS 7454

PARA 1 V-E DAY PLANS ARE OF NECESSITY INDEFINITE DISCUSSIONS MUST BE ONLY ON A TOP SECRET LEVEL.

THE FOLLOWING PROPOSALS ARE TENTATIVE AND SUBJECT TO CONFIRMATION. IN THE MEANTIME NO REPEAT NO PUBLICITY IS TO BE GIVEN TO THEM.

PARA 2 IT IS EXPECTED THAT WHEN THE ORDER TO CEASE FIRE IN EUROPE IS GIVEN IT WILL BE OFFICIALLY ANNOUNCED OVER THE CANADIAN BROADCASTING SYSTEM BY OR ON BEHALF OF A MEMBER OF THE DOMINION GOVERNMENT. IT WILL BE AN OFFICIAL FACTUAL STATEMENT AND COVER NECESSARY GROUNDS.

PARA 3 IF THE ANNOUNCEMENT IS MADE BEFORE 1000 HOURS EOCAL TIME THE REMAINDER OF THE DAY WILL BE CONSIDERED A HOLIDAY. IF THE ANNOUNCEMENT IS MADE AFTER 1000 HOURS LOCAL TIME THE REMAINDER OF THAT DAY AND THE NEXT DAY WILL BE CONSIDERED A HOLIDAY. THIS IS SUBJECT TO CHANGE BY OFFICIAL ANNOUNCEMENT AT A LATER DATE.

PARA 4 DISTRICT ARRANGEMENTS WILL BE LEFT TO DISTRICT OFFICERS COMMANDING AND THERE WILL BE A WAIVER OF NON OPERATIONAL REQUIREMENTS DURING THE HOLIDAY, SUBJECT TO THE FOLLOWING

- (A) ALL NORMAL DUTIES MUST BE PROPERLY CARRIED OUT AND SECURITY SHALL BE MAINTAINED.
- (B) ADEQUATE STAFFS SHALL BE MAINTAINED IN ALL FORMATIONS AND UNITS
- (C) ESSENTIAL SERVICES SHALL BE MAINTAINED.
- (D) EQUIPMENT AND PROPERTY SHALL BE SAFEGUARDED.

PARA 5 THERE WILL BE NO REPEAT NO EXTRAORDINARY EXPENDITURES SUCH AS PAY FOR NPAM PARADES OR BANDS

PAGE 2 OF RANKS 7454

PARA 6 C PRO C SHALL COOPERATE WITH R.C.M.P. AND CIVIL  
POLICE AUTHORITIES

PARA 7 EFFORTS WILL BE MADE TO INFORM YOU IN ADVANCE OF  
RADIO ANNOUNCEMENT IF POSSIBLE AND IN ANY EVENT AN IMMEDIATE  
WIRE WILL BE DESPATCHED AS SOON AS FACT OFFICIALLY KNOWN.

PARA 8 IF OFFICIAL RADIO ANNOUNCEMENT MENTIONED IN PARA TWO IS  
RECEIVED BY YOU PRIOR TO RECEIPT OF OFFICIAL INFORMATION FROM  
THIS HEADQUARTERS YOU ARE DIRECTED TO ACT ON THE OFFICIAL RADIO  
ANNOUNCEMENT.

PARA 9 ACKNOWLEDGE

ADJUTANT GENERAL

DISTRIBUTION

OPS.....D.O.C. 2 COPIES

AFS/290200P

APR 45

Exhibit "U"

SUMMARY OF EVENTS ON 7-8 MAY 1945

7 May 45

1030 hrs. Announcement over radio of unconditional  
surrender of Germany.

1100 hrs. Stores, restaurants, etc. started to close  
for balance of day. Theatres closed for day.

1140 hrs. D.O.C. declared balance of day a holiday  
(Sunday pattern) for H.Q., M.D. No. 6.

1308 hrs. Telephone call from Brig. Ferguson, V.A.G.  
to D.O.C. giving information re official  
announcement to be made by Mr. Ilsley.

1445 hrs. Teletype message A.6782 to all Units giving  
effect to telegram Ranks 7454.

1800 hrs. Street dances on South and South Park  
streets commenced.

2000 hrs. Memorial Service at All Saint's Cathedral.

2100 hrs. Fire Works on George's Island.

2130 hrs. Some Victory Loan flags on Barrington St.  
were torn down.

2200 hrs. Crowds on Citadel Hill watching fire works  
began to disperse.

2330 hrs. Tram car and police patrol car burned on  
Barrington St.

2345 hrs. Sackville St. Liquor store entered and  
partly looted.

8 May 45

0010 hrs. Hollis St. Liquor store entered and partly  
looted.

0015 hrs. Window of Nova Scotia Light & Power Co. on  
Barrington St. broken, and some looting.

0015 hrs. Buckingham St. Liquor store entered and  
partly looted.

0120 hrs. Buckingham St. Liquor store cleared of looters.

0145 hrs. Provost extinguished fires on Salter St. and  
Granville St.

0150 hrs. Crowd at Hollis St. liquor store finally  
dispersed.

0300 hrs. Streets practically empty of Service personnel  
and civilians.

0930 hrs. Crowds began to gather on Garrison Sports  
Grounds for Civic Public Meeting and concert  
at 1000 hrs.

1030 hrs. Meeting at main office of N.S. Liquor Commis-  
sion to discuss method of preventing further

P. 2 E 8 U

looting of liquor stores.

1100 hrs. Thanksgiving Service in city churches.

1330 hrs. Large numbers of Navy congregating on Barrington and Granville Streets. Rioting in front of City Hall. Provost sent from Garrison parade grounds to assist Halifax police.

1340 hrs. First break into Keith's Brewery and some looting.

1400 hrs. Reports received of window breaking in business section of city of Halifax.

1430 hrs. Combined services, Thanksgiving Service on Garrison Grounds commenced. Additional C. Pro. C. despatched to Keith's Brewery.

Chief of City Police advised by DAPM that situation was completely out of hand. Chief was to contact Mayor immediately.

1445 hrs. Second break into Keith's Brewery and complete looting of premises.

1450 hrs. DOC advised of seriousness of situation. DOC in turn advised Admiral Murray.

1500 hrs. Hollis St. store was entered again and completely looted.

Admiral Murray ordered the Forces attending Thanksgiving Service to parade through streets in business area.

1505 hrs. Combined Services Thanksgiving Service on Garrison Grounds ended.

Instructions issued to C. Pro. C. to send all Army personnel who were misbehaving themselves, back to Units at once.

1600 hrs. Main office of N.S. Liquor Commission entered and looted.

1630 hrs. Bonded warehouse at Cold Storage Plant entered and small amount of stock looted.

Meeting in D.O.C.'s office at request of Mayor to discuss action to be taken to stop rioting.

1650 hrs. Buckingham St. Liquor Store entered and completely looted.

1710 hrs. Agricola St. Liquor Store entered and completely looted.

1730 hrs. D.O.C. ordered all Army personnel back to barracks or homes and Provost and Unit personnel were instructed to carry out this order.

Dartmouth liquor store entered and completely looted.

1800 hrs. V.E. Day celebration over as ordered by Mayor.

1815 hrs. Approximately 250 all ranks despatched to assist C. Pro. C.

1830 hrs. Dartmouth ferries stopped and anchored in mid-stream, on instructions of Civic Authorities in Dartmouth.

1845 hrs. Mayor and Admiral Murray in sound truck proceeded through streets announcing V-E Day over at 6 p.m. and ordering Service personnel to return to barracks and requesting civilians to return to homes at once. Also announced curfew would be in effect as from 8 p.m.

1910 hrs. Detachment of one officer and 28 ORs arrived in Dartmouth from A.23 C. & A.A.A.T.C. to assist C. Pro. C.

1930 hrs. All soldiers reported off streets of downtown Halifax.

2000 hrs. Curfew in effect.

2030 hrs. All Army Personnel off streets of Dartmouth.

2210 hrs. Advance party special force of troops from Debert, N.S. arrived at No.6 District Dept, Halifax, N.S.

2230 hrs. Remainder of special force of Army troops from Debert, N.S. arrived at No.6 District Depot, Halifax, N.S.

MILITARY DISTRICT No 6.

DIAGRAMATIC CHART SHEWING ALL UNITS & STRENGTHS AS AT May 9th, 1945.

D.O.C.

H.Q.-M.D.6  
91-132

|   |   |  |   |  |   |
|---|---|--|---|--|---|
| 6ES&WCoy, R.C.E.<br>16 - 234<br>251, 252, 209<br>256, 257, 206<br>207 & 208<br>General Pioneer<br>Sections<br>0 - 181 | 6 Coy. R.C.A.M.C.<br>Halifax Mil. H.P.<br>Dartmouth Mil. H.P.<br>78 - 208<br>31 - 498 | 6 Ord. Depot Coy.<br>R.C.O.C. &<br>Nº2 Mobile Laundry<br>11 - 38 | Nº6 Coy.<br>R.C.A.P.C.<br>11 - 38       | A23 T.C.<br>81-628                             | 6 Dist. Sigs.<br>R.C. Sigs.<br>12 - 157   |
|   | 26 Coy. C.D.C.<br>20 - 39   |  | Dist. Recruit. Det.<br>4 - 9            |  | 6 V.T.S.<br>4 - 154                       |
|   | 35 Coy. C.D.C.<br>R.C.A.F.<br>R.C.N.  | 50 Coy. C.D.C.<br>R.C.N.   | 45 Provost<br>2 - 117                   | 37 Provost<br>3 - 132                          | 38 Provost<br>3 - 94                      |
| 6 Dist. Coy. R.C.A.S.C.<br>Nº1 Port Coy. &<br>Bakery Sec.<br>21 - 549   | 6 Dist. Depot<br>116 - 735  | R.C.E.M.E.<br>15 - 325   | 69 Mil. Detention<br>Barracks<br>1 - 19 | A.A. Reinf.<br>Camp<br>2 - 49                  |   |
| 8 Spec. Emp. Pln.<br>0 - 29   | 12 Emp. Pln.<br>2 - 88  | 10 Adm. C.W.A.C.<br>11 - 422                                     | 17 Adm. C.W.A.C.<br>12 - 466            | 106 Depot Coy.<br>Composite Stores<br>12 - 142 | Embarkation *<br>Transit Unit<br>74 - 411 |

FORTRESS COMMANDER

|   |  |                          |
|---|--|--------------------------|
| H.Q. Hfx. Fortress<br>6 Dist. Est. R.C.A.<br>Fort Sec. 1Cdn. R.L.E.<br>9 - 90 | Regt. de Hyacinthe<br>29 - 577   | 21 V.G. of C.<br>9 - 234 |
| 1st Hfx. Cst. Regt.<br>52nd & 53rd Cst. Btys.<br>26 - 603                     | 21st A.A. Regt.<br>1 A.A. G.O.R.<br>1, 4, 14, 18, 19<br>& 146 A.A. Bty.<br>56 - 1127 |                          |

LEGEND  
1st Figure = Officers  
2nd Figure = Other Ranks  
C.W.A.C. - Shown with their  
Depot Coys.

SYDNEY

DEBERT

ALDERSHOT

YARMOUTH

AMHERST

GOOSE BAY

|   |   |                       |   |  |   |
|---|---|-----------------------|---|--|---|
| H.Q. Def. Port Sydney<br>16, 6, & 86 Cst. Regts.<br>3 Sec. 6 Dist. Sigs.<br>A & D Coy. St. Hyacinthe<br>R.C.E.M.E., R.C.O.C., R.C.E.<br>201 Pioneer, R.C.A.S.C.<br>C.D.C. Hospital, Provost<br>Mulgrave Hospital.<br>345 - 1060 | 1A.A. S/L. 5 Sec. Sigs.<br>R.C.E.M.E., R.C.O.C., R.C.E.<br>3 Pioneer Secs., R.C.A.S.C.<br>Debert H.P., Provost<br>Emp. Plns., 2 Transit Camp<br>Laundry Unit<br>Training Bde. Gp.<br>735 - 8340 | WINDSOR<br>128 - 2660 | STRENGTHS<br>Halifax Area, Exclusive Fortress Troops<br>Fortress<br>Total, Halifax Area<br>Outside Areas<br>Total, M.D. 6 | OFFR'S.<br>622<br>129<br>751<br>1273<br>2024 | O.R'S.<br>5856<br>2631<br>8487<br>13495<br>21,982 |
|---|---|-----------------------|---|--|---|



COMPLETE LIST OF CONFISCATED GOODS

V-E DAY - HQ MD 6

Leo Gordon Landry  
St. Margaret's Bay Road,  
Malifax, N.S.

WITNESSES:  
Capt. V.E. Hadland  
H.Q. M.D. No. 6

- 1 silver hand mirror
- 1 over-coat, Men's, green
- 8 pkgs. cigarettes
- 1 deck playing cards
- 2 cigarette cases (black ebony)
- 17 handkerchiefs
- 2 lg. combs
- 6 pkgs. razor blades
- 3 plain silver rings
- bobby pins

F 13138  
L/Cpl E.P. MacDonald  
37 Provost Coy

V 60220 P.A. Jessome, RCNVR  
V 46975 M.H. LeBlanc, RCNVR

WITNESSES:  
F 30216

- 2 bottles beer
- 2 skirts, blue and brown herringbone tweed
- 1 jacket, brown herringbone tweed
- 2 dresses, red and white striped seersucker
- 1 jacket, plain green with plaid
- 1 jacket, brown check
- 1 slacks, beige
- 1 slacks, blue
- 1 slacks, green
- 1 watch strap, leather brown.

L/Cpl A.W. Perry  
38 Provost Coy  
F 13138  
L/Cpl E.P. MacDonald  
37 Provost Coy

V 80433 Hamulka, W., Stadacona

- 8 dessert spoons ) Engraved for Mrs. G.C. Bowes,
- 8 teaspoons ) 138 Henry Street.

- 1 silver baby's cup
- 1 lucite hair brush
- 1 table knife, silver
- 1 fork (table)
- 1 salad fork
- 1 butter knife
- 1 teaspoon
- 1 dessert spoon
- 1 silver tray (large)
- 1/2 bottle of whiskey

WITNESSES:  
F 30216  
L/Cpl A.W. Perry  
38 Provost Coy

B 22710 CQMS R. Newman, 19th AA Bty., 21st AA Regt  
C 613491 Pte. G. Bordeleau, 19th AA Bty., 21st AA Regt

- 2 small silver trays (leaf shaped)
- 2 salt & pepper shakers (silver)
- 5 costume jewellery rings
- 5 glasses in leather cases
- 2 silver sugar & cream sets
- 2 silver bowls with blue glass insets
- 4 flat 50's of cigarettes
- 16 small pkgs. of cigarettes
- 1 leather glasses case
- 1 silver butter dish
- 1 leather key case
- 1 Men's wrist watch

WITNESSES:  
Capt. V.E. Hadland  
H.Q. M.D. No. 6.  
F 13138  
L/Cpl E.P. MacDonald  
37 Provost Coy

P.2 Ex. "W"

CQMS R. Newman  
Pte. G. Bordeleau Cont'd

- 1 haversack containing four letters addressed to:  
Pte. L.M. Hope, B144735, HQ 21st AA Regt. and  
two aerial photos. (Handed over to Fortress I.O.  
by Captain Harrington, G 3 Security)

From unidentified persons:

- 1 table lamp
- 6 prs. woolen socks
- 1 case ( $\frac{1}{2}$  doz.) Pond's Vanishing Cream
- 1 wooden ash tray & pipe holder
- 1 pr. Ladies beige shoes
- 1 pr. Mens brown shoes
- 2 prs. Mens black shoes
- 1 pr. Ladies black shoes
- 1 Razor blade display card
- 6 jars Pond's Cold Cream
- 1 Ladies shoe (no mate)
- 1 pr. coveralls (blue)
- 1 pr. sealskin slippers
- 1 leather jacket (Mens)
- 1 sailors tunic
- 1 cake soap
- 1 white woolen sweater
- 1 necktie (blue with white dots)
- 1 Mens grey suit

WITNESSES:

Capt. V.E. Hadland  
H.Q. M.D. No. 6

F 13138  
L/Cpl. E.P. MacDonald  
37 Provost Coy

D 146585 Pte. Gagnon, J.M., Regt de St. Hyacinthe

- 1 pr. Men's Brown Leather Hart's shoes
- 2 pr. children's bathing trunks, size 24.
- 1 pr. Men's bathing trunks, size 30
- 1 Men's blue shirt.

E 628525 Pte. Jobin, C., Regt. de St. Hyacinthe

- 3 windbreakers
- 3 boy's maroon sweaters
- 10 cartons tobacco
- 1 bottle wine
- 1 bottle beer

## LEGEND.

1st Figure = Officers

2nd Figure = Other Ranks

C.W.A.C. = Shewn with their Depot Coys.

\* - Includes personnel serving in  
Transports & Hospital Ships.

EXHIBIT X-1

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

HC 120-2-1 (AQ)

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S., 11 May 45.

All Officers Commanding,  
Units, Formations and Detachments,  
Halifax Area.

Commanders;-  
Halifax Fortress, Halifax  
Sydney Fortress, Sydney  
A-23 C. & AAA TC, Halifax  
A-14 C.I.T.C., Aldershot, N. S.

BREACHES OF DISCIPLINE

FURTHER to this Headquarters' letter H.50-1-2  
(AQ) dated 9 May 45.

2. Action will be taken in all cases under Sec.  
40 of the Army Act "Being in improper possession of goods"  
and if circumstances justify, those responsible will be  
remanded for Court-Martial.

Signed: (F.J. North,)

Lieut.-Col.,  
A.A. & Q.M.G., M.D. No. 6.

EXHIBIT X 2

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
(ARMY)

H 150-1-2 (AQ)  
HC 120-2-1 (AQ)

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S., 13 May 45.

All Officers Commanding,  
Units, Formations and Detachments,  
Halifax Area.

Commanders:-

Halifax Fortress, Halifax  
Sydney Fortress, Sydney  
A-23 C. & A.A.A. T.C., Halifax  
A-14 C.I.T.C. Aldershot

BREACHES OF DISCIPLINE

With further reference to this HQ's letters  
H150-1-2 (AQ) dated 9 May 45 and HC 120-2-1 (AQ) dated  
11 May 45.

2. Information will be forwarded to this HQ  
giving particulars about any military personnel who  
were involved in any breach of discipline during the  
disturbances May 7 and 8 and action taken in each case.

3. The above information to reach this HQ's  
not later than 1000 hours Wed 16 May 45.

(F.J. North) Lt.-Col.,  
A.A. & Q.M.G., M.D. No. 6.

HQ (AA & QMG),  
MD 6

A "nil" report is forwarded.

14 May 45  
GBD/MS

(M. O. Element) Major,  
D.S. & T.O., M.D. No. 6.

EXHIBIT "Y"

SAME AS EXHIBIT "X"

## EXHIBIT AA

Summary of Breaches of Discipline Reported to Hqrs. M.D. 6  
in Connection with Disturbances May 7-8-9/45.

| DISCIPLINE<br>UNIT      | REGIMENTALLY |            | IN POSSESSION OF PLUNDER | CIVIL AUTHORITIES | PUNISHMENT   |
|-------------------------|--------------|------------|--------------------------|-------------------|--|
|                         | A.W.L.       | DRUNKENESS |                          |                   |  |
| LST Hal. Cst. Regt. RCA |              |            |                          |                   | 1 given 30 days<br>illegal possession<br>of liquor.<br>1 given 4 yrs.<br>penal servitude<br>for theft of jewellery.  |
| 21st AA Regt., RCA      |              |            |                          |                   | Remanded for<br>Summary of evidence<br>A.A. 40<br>" " " "<br>" " " "<br>" " " "<br>" " " "<br>" " " "<br>6 mos. in Jail.<br>(see evidence p. 248)<br>6 mos. in Jail. |
| No. 6 D.D.              |              |            |                          |                   | 7 days forfeiture<br>of pay.<br>" " " " "<br><br>Remanded for futher<br>evidence.<br>Dismissed.<br>Dismissed.  |

Exhibit "A"

Summary of Breaches of Discipline Reported to Hqs. M.D.6  
in Connection with Disturbances May 7-8-9/45

Sheet. 2

2

| DISCIPLINE<br>UNIT | REGIMENTALLY |            | IN POSSESSION OF WEAPON | CIVIL AUTHORITIES   | PUNISHMENT.   |
|--------------------|--------------|------------|-------------------------|---|---|
|                    | A.W.L.       | DRUNKENESS |                         |   |   |
| Halifax Mil. Hosp. |              |            |                         |   | 7 days C.B.<br><br>7 Days c.b.  |
| #6 Coy., RCASE     |              |            |                         |   | Also took a vehicle<br>& was in an accident<br>Summary being taken<br>& Co./I being held. |
| #6 E.S.&W. Coy.    |              |            |                         | E621859 Spr(L/Cpl)<br>Paulin, A.<br>Carrying a case of<br>Beer. | \$100 & Costs.<br><br>Remanded for Summary<br>of Evidence.                                |
| #6 Dist. Sigs.     |              |            |                         |   | 14 days C.B.<br>and 14 days Pay.<br><br>8 days pay<br>and forfeiture.                     |

12  
23  
44



s.19(1)

Summary of Breaches of Discipline Reported to Hqs. M.D.6  
in Connection with Disturbances May 7-8-9/45.

| DISCIPLINE<br>UNIT          | REGIMENTALLY<br>A.W.L. | DRUNKENNESS. | IN POSSESSION OF PLUNDER | CIVIL AUTHORITIES   | PUNISHMENT.  |
|-----------------------------|------------------------|--------------|--------------------------|---|--|
| #6 Dist.Sigs.               |                        |              |                          |   | 28 days<br>detention.  |
| 37 Provost Corps            |                        |              |                          | F79326 L/Cpl.<br>Leslie, A.E.<br>Carrying plunder<br>said to be taken<br>from a sailor. | Dismissed.   |
| 106 Depot Coy.,<br>C.W.A.C. |                        |              |                          |   | 7 days pay.<br><br>7 days pay.<br><br>Each awarded 7 days<br>confinement to<br>Barracks and extra<br>duties.<br><br>Remanded for Summary<br>of Evidence. |

P 3 62 AH

s.19(1)

Sheet. 4

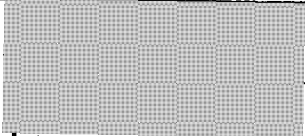
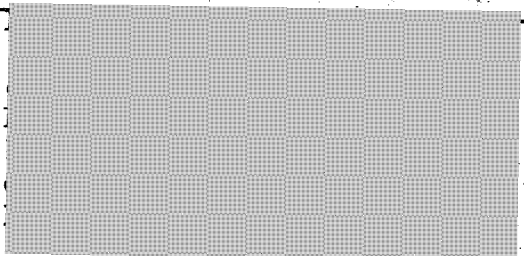
Summary of Breaches of Discipline Reported to HQrs M.D.6  
in Connection with Disturbances May 7-8-9/45.

| DISCIPLINE<br>UNIT | REGIMENTALLY<br>A.W.L. | DRUNKENNESS | IN POSSESSION OF PLUNDER | CIVIL AUTHORITIES <del>S</del> | PUNISHMENT   |
|--------------------|------------------------|-------------|--------------------------|--------------------------------|--|
| #6 Ord.Depot RCOC  |                        |             |                          |                                | <p>Awarded 14 days Detention.</p> <p>Remanded for further investigation.</p> <p>Awarded 10 days pay.</p> <p>Awarded 8 days pay on first charge and 7 days pay on second charge.</p> <p>Admonished.</p> <p>Awarded 10 days pay.</p> |

P4 68 74

Summary of Breaches of Discipline Reported to Hqrs. M.D. 6  
in Connection with Disturbances May 7-8-9/45

Sheet. 5

| DISCIPLINE<br>UNIT     | REGIMENTALLY  |            | IN POSSESSION OF PLUNDER  | CIVIL AUTHORITIES | PUNISHMENT                        |
|------------------------|---|------------|---|-------------------|-----------------------------------|
|                        | A.W.L.  | DRUNKENESS |   |                   |                                   |
| #6 Ord. Depot RCOC     |  |            | s.19(1)   |                   | Awarded 10 days detention.        |
| Regt. de St. Hyacinthe |   |            |  |                   | Remanded for Summary of Evidence. |

Note: X Names and/or further particulars being obtained.

Halifax Military Hospital reports that many Civilians and Navy personnel passing Cogswell St. Hospital passed liquor and loot to the inmates most of which was voluntarily surrendered and a search revealed more, but responsibility could not be fixed on any individual.

Twenty-nine (29) qts. spirits were returned to Liquor Commission and the loot is awaiting collection by the Civil Authorities who are aware of its location.

P.S. 6844

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

Headquarters, M.D., No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S., 24 May 45.

Commander,  
Halifax Fortress,  
Halifax, N. S.

s.19(1)

Breaches of Discipline - V-E Day

Reference this Headquarters' letter numbered  
as above, dated 9 May 45, on the m/n subject.

2. The 21st A.A. Regt. failed to report that  
, P. had been guilty of certain breaches of  
discipline.

3. This Headquarters have received a report from the  
Provosts Coy. in this connection, in which it would appear that  
Gnr. Tarnowski not only had a DND vehicle near the scene of the  
disturbance, but that he conveyed unauthorized passengers,  
including Naval ratings, and beer to Stadacona barracks.

4. May report be forwarded as to the action  
being taken in this case.

(F.J. NORTH) Lieut-Col.,  
A.A. & Q.M.G., M.D. No. 6.

FJN/BMH

C  
O  
P  
Y

H.165-17-0-1 (PRO)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S., 23 May 45.

A.A. & Q.M.G.,  
H.Q., M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S.

IMPROPER USE OF D.N.D. GL 121

Reference telephone conversation Lt.-Col.  
F.J. North - Lieut J.N. Ramsay 19 May 45 re the illegal  
use of the m/n vehicle observed by Lt.-Col. H. Cox on  
8 May 45 at or about 1530 hours near Keith's Brewery.

2. Forwarded herewith is report of the same.

Signed: J.N. Ramsay, Lieut.  
For: (C.S. Clarke) Lt.-Col.,  
D.A.P.M., M.D. No. 6.

c.c. O.C.,  
21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A.,  
HALIFAX, N. S.

C  
O  
P  
Y

37 P-12-1-4

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

Halifax, N. S.,  
21 May 45.

Officer Commanding,  
# 37 Provost Company,  
Halifax, N. S.

Re: IMPROPER USE OF D.N.D. GL 121  
18th A.A. Bty., 21st A.A. Regt., RCA  
H.616524 Gnr. TARNOWSKI, P.

On the 19 May 45, information was received from Lieut. J.N. RAMSAY, that the m/n vehicle had been observed on Hollis St., Halifax, N. S. on the afternoon of the 8 May 45, carrying two members of the C.W.A.C., two Naval ratings and several cases of beer, together with three soldiers.

2. Patrol was made to the 21st A.A. Regt., M.T., Section. R.A. Park where it was found that H.616524 Gnr. TARNOWSKI, P., of the 18th A.A. Bty., Purcells Cove was the driver of the vehicle on the day in question.

3. Patrol continued to Purcells Cove where the O.C. Lieut. A.C. Beauchamp was informed of the investigation. Gnr. TARNOWSKI, P. was questioned concerning the vehicle he had been driving on the 8 May 45 and the duties and routes travelled, also any unauthorized passengers carried while on these duties.

4. A statement was obtained from TARNOWSKI which was corroborated by H.105139, Gnr. HOLM, A., also of the 18th A.A. Bty. Both statements are attached.

5. The two members of the C.W.A.C., namely W.603191 Pte. Keats, M.E.G. and W.6309, Pte. Ryan, L.G. of No. 10 Admin. Unit, who were picked up in front of the Garrick Theatre on Sackville St. were questioned on the 21st May 45 at Cathedral Barracks. Both girls admitted being in the m/n vehicle with TARNOWSKI but stated that they were drunk when picked up and could not remember seeing any Naval ratings or beer in the vehicle.

6. L/Cpl. WALKER, F., the third soldier in the vehicle could not be questioned as he will not return off furlough until 5 June 45.

7. Investigation discloses that after the vehicle left Rockhead with the rations it proceeded to Gnr. HOLM's residence at Purcells Cove, to deliver the trunk picked up at the Railway Station. While on the road leading to HOLM's residence the m/n vehicle struck a small shed, the front wheel slid off the road and the vehicle later had to be towed back on the road.

8. As regards the beer in the vehicle it is apparent that it was removed from the vehicle when the ratings alighted at Stadacona 1. The two C.W.A.C. girls remained with the vehicle while at Rockhead drawing the rations and proceeded as far as Purcells Cove where they disappeared after the vehicle went off the road.

Page two ----  
Cont'd

9. There is sufficient evidence to charge the driver, TARNOWSKI, with improper use of D.N.D. vehicle, carrying unauthorized passengers, liquor and failing to perform the detail called for on his Work Ticket.

10. Forwarded for your information together with extra copy for Unit concerned, who may contemplate disciplinary action.

(Signed: L/Cpl. Burns, R.E.  
No. 38 Provost Coy.

" Pte. Gasey, G.L.,  
No. 37 Provost Coy.

II

Halifax, N. S.  
21st May 45.

District Headquarters,  
M.D. No. 6, Halifax, N. S.

ATTENTION: D.A.P.M.

Re: IMPROPER USE OF D.N.D. GL 121  
18th A.A. Bty., 21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A.  
H.616524 Gnr. TARNOWSKI, P.

Herewith report regarding the m/n.

Signed: (J.S. Brown) Lieut.,  
For (C.R. LORWAY) Major,  
E.D.,  
O.C., No. 37 Provost Coy  
Cdn. Provost Corps, (CA)

STATEMENT OF: H.616524 Gnr. TARNOWSKI, P., a driver for 18th  
A.A. Bty., stationed at Purcells Cove, Hfx. Co., NS

On the 8th May 45, I was detailed by Lieut. BEAUCHAMP, A.C., O.C. 18th A.A. Bty. at Purcells Cove, to go to the C.N.R. station, Halifax, N. S. and pick up a trunk the property of Gnr. HOLM, A., 18th A.A. Bty. From there I was to proceed to Rockhead, pick up the rations and mail, then return to Purcells Cove.

I left Purcells Cove at 1430 hours, 8 May 45, accompanied by Lieut. BEAUCHAMP, A.C., L/Bdr. WALKEY, F. and Gnr. HOLM, A. and after reaching Halifax, I took Lieut. Beauchamp to his home on South Park St., then proceeded to the C.N.R. Station, via Sackville St. When I was driving past the Garrick Theatre, I noticed two C.W.A.C., whom I know as RYAN and KEATS. I picked up the two girls and continued on to the C.N.R. Station.

Upon leaving the C.N.R. Station, I was proceeding up Hollis Street, when I saw a large crowd of people filling the street ahead of me. I stopped my vehicle just north of Morris Street. When I stopped two sailors, whom I do not know, put some beer into my truck and then asked me where I was going. I told them, and they said they would go as far as Stadacona Bks. I with me. I let the two sailors off at the Naval Barracks and they took their beer with them, then I continued to Rockhead.

Sgd: Gnr. Tarnowski, P.,  
18th A.A. Bty., R.C.A.,  
Purcells Cove.

WITNESS:

Sgd: Pte. Casey, G.L.  
No. 37 Provost Coy.,  
S.I. Squad.

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

FJ.NORTH) Lieut-Col.,  
A.A. & Q.M.G., M.D. No. 6.



STATEMENT OF: H.105039 Gnr. HOLM, A.  
18th A.A. Bty., RCA, Purcells Cove., Hfx. Co. N.S.

On the 8 May 45, I went with Gnr. TARNOWSKI to pick up a trunk belonging to me at the C.N.R. Station in Halifax.

I stayed with Gnr. TARNOWSKI from the time he left Purcells Cove until the time he returned and I confirm his statements which I have read.

Signed: Gnr. HOLM, A.,  
18th A.A. Bty., R.C.A.,  
Purcells Cove.

WITNESS:

Signed: Pte. Casey, G.L.,  
No. 37 Provost Coy.  
S.I. Squad.

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

(F.J. NORTH) Lieut-Col,  
A.A. & Q.M.G., M.D. No. 6.

EXHIBIT B B

HC 120-2-1 (AQ)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
(ARMY)

Headquarters, M. D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S., 13 May 45.

→ Chief of Police,  
City Hall,  
Halifax, N. S.

Chief of Police,  
City Hall,  
Dartmouth, N. S.

Dear Sir:-

With reference to the disturbances on  
May 7th and 8th.

2. May I be advised as to the ranks, names  
and numbers of any military personnel who were arrested  
by the Civil Police and the action taken in each case.

Yours truly,

Signed: F.J. North, Lieut.Col.  
A.A. & Q.M.G., M.D. No. 6.

HC 120-2-1 (AQ)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
(ARMY )

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N.S., 13 May 45.

Chief of Police,  
City Hall,  
Halifax, N. S.

Chief of Police,  
City Hall,  
Dartmouth, N.S.

Dear Sir:-

With reference to the disturbances on  
May 7th and 8th.

2. May I be advised as to the ranks, names  
and numbers of any military personnel who were  
arrested by the Civil Police and the action taken  
in each case.

Yours truly, m

Signed: F.J. North, Lieut-Col.,  
AA& Q.M.G., M.D. No. 6.

C O P Y

EXHIBIT DD

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S., 19 May 45.

CONFIDENTIAL

Hon. J.H. MacQuarrie,  
Attorney General,  
Province of N.S.,  
Halifax, N. S.

E.621859 - Cpl. Albert PAULIN  
No. 6 E.S. & W. Coy., R.C.E.

There is attached hereto statement in duplicate of Cpl. Paulin in connection with his arrest and fine before Magistrate Flinn in the Police Court, Halifax, N. S.

2. This soldier should have had the advantage of an interview with his Officer before being placed on trial and there was plenty of time for him to interview an officer as he was arrested on 8th May 1945 and not brought before the magistrate until Friday, 11th May 1945.

3. It is understood that a circular letter was sent out from your department to all magistrates instructing them that whenever a soldier is charged before a magistrate, that he will notify the appropriate military authorities. A letter dated 2 January, 1941, was received from your office signed by Thomas D. Macdonald enclosing a copy of the circular letter which had been sent out.

4. May this matter be the subject of an investigation and a report from you on the action taken will be appreciated.

(F.J. NORTH) Lieut-Col.,  
A.A. & Q.M.G., M.D. No. 6.

No. E.621859, CORPORAL ALBERT PAULINNo. 6 E S & W COMPANY, R C E

No. E.621859, Corporal Albert Paulin, having been duly sworn, states:

At approximately 1500 hours, on the 8th May 1945, I was on Hollis Street, Halifax, and got into conversation with some civilians. At this time there were also some soldiers and sailors around. A civilian and myself, the name of the civilian I believe to be Philip Rail, 945 Barrington Street, spoke to some other civilians and we asked if there was a loose bottle of beer around as I thought I might like a drink of beer. One of the civilians in the group to whom we were talking said "Here is a case of beer" and he handed it to me. So Rail and myself proceeded down the street, I carrying the case. As it was rather heavy I then handed it to Rail; and he carried it for a while. Later on he handed the case back to me and I was accosted by Lieut. Brown of the Provost Corps, who said "I want the beer and you". At this time the civilian spoke up and said to Lieut. Brown that it was not my beer but his (the civilian's). However, I was placed in a station wagon and taken to the Police Station, remaining there until about 1630 or 1700 hours, when I was taken to Rockhead. While at the Police Station I asked a sergeant of police on duty if I could be given permission to telephone my officer, Capt. Wallace, and this sergeant replied saying there was nothing he could do about it, and so my request was denied. After arriving at Rockhead, I asked a police constable on duty there if I could telephone my officer, Capt. Wallace, and he also denied me this request saying that there was nothing that he could do about it.

On Friday, the 11th May 1945, I was brought before Magistrate R.J. Flinn in the Police Court, who read the charge to me. I told him that I was unable to speak English very well and asked him to please explain or read the charge to me in French. He replied in English saying "You had beer in your possession when you were picked up by the Provosts", and the Magistrate said "Are you guilty or not guilty". I told him that I had, that I was guilty of having beer in my possession. The magistrate then said "\$103.50 or thirty days". Not wishing to go to jail, I paid the fine and was released.

From the time that I was put under arrest until being tried by a Magistrate in the Police Courts I was unable to communicate with my unit or officers of the unit any way. Having been denied this request on two occasions I considered that this was therefore impossible, and so when appearing before the Magistrate on the 11th May 1945 I had no one to advise me, explain or interpret the nature of the charge and what it really meant.

Signed: No. E.621859 Albert  
Paulin, Corporal.  
No. 6 E S & W Company, RCE.

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

(F.J. NORTH) Lieut-Col.,  
A.A. & Q.M.G., M.D. No. 6.



CANADA

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
ARMY

OTTAWA, Canada, 18 May, 1945

District Officer Commanding,  
Military District No. 6,  
HALIFAX, N.S.

Att: Lt-Col F.J. North.

CIVIL OFFENCES

Ref Col North's tele request to ascertain from the files whether an arrangement was ever entered into with the province of Nova Scotia whereby the civil authorities of that province would notify the military authorities in the event of personnel of the Army being charged with a civil offence before a Magistrate.

2. A search of the files disclosed the following which are now enclosed:

- (a) Copy of a letter from the AJAG MD 10 to the Attorney General of Ontario dated 24 Oct 1940 raising this question.
- (b) A Memorandum dictated by Col North who was then at NDHQ dated 26 Nov 1940 suggesting that this be done.
- (c) Letter from the AG to the DOSC 1, 2, 3, and 10 dated 17 Dec 1940.
- (d) Copy of letter from the DOC MD 6 to the Secy, DND dated 20 Dec 1940, MD 6 file no. H 4-1-29.
- (e) Letter from the DM, DND to the Attorney General of Nova Scotia dated 24 Dec 1940.
- (f) Copy of letter from the Attorney General of Nova Scotia to the DM, DND dated 2 Jan 1941 att a copy of Memorandum No. 3 to Magistrates dated 2 Jan 1941.
- (g) Copy of letter from the DM, DND to the Attorney General, New Brunswick dated 1 Jan 1943.

3. This correspondence gives the story and indicates without any doubt that the civil authorities of the province of NS have undertaken to notify the mil authorities as soon as a soldier is charged before a Magistrate.

4. There is no indication on the files here as to why the Circ Letter R.56 dated 17 Dec 1940 was returned by the DOC MD 6 on the 20 Dec 1940 except the fact that it is noted that the Circ. was directed only to DOSC 1, 2, 3 and 10 although it would appear to be applicable to all MDs.

5. It is very advisable to have a firm understanding with the province of NS that the arrangements shall be carried out in all cases otherwise the Army authorities are unable to comply with the provisions of K.R. (Can.) 484.

...../2

C  
O  
P  
Y

HQ 54-27-65-1  
FD 17 (A.D.1)

1st January, 1943.

Dear Sir:

Re: Absentees and Deserters  
Convicted by Civil Power.

A number of cases have recently come to attention where soldiers in a state of absence without leave or desertion have been apprehended, convicted and sentenced to terms of imprisonment by Civil authorities, the military authorities not learning of the same until some time after the event. As well as creating administrative difficulties this situation results in fruitless efforts to apprehend such absentees and deserters by the Canadian Provost Corps and police authorities.

It is felt that this situation can be overcome to some extent if arrangements can be made whereby a list of all Army personnel presently in civil custody can be forwarded to the Provost Marshal, National Defence Headquarters, Ottawa. This list should include men serving in provincial reformatories and county gaols. To deal with the situation in the future it is desired that notification be sent to the Provost Marshal immediately on the committal of Army personnel by civil authorities to a penal institution.

It would also be of considerable assistance if arrangements could be made whereby notification could be given to the Provost Marshal of the release from custody of such soldiers sometime in advance of the event so that the necessary arrangements could be made for their apprehension and return to their Unit by the military authorities.

It would be very much appreciated if you would be good enough to make the necessary arrangements to give effect to the foregoing insofar as your province is concerned.

Yours truly,

(Sgd)

For: (H. DesRosiers)  
Deputy-Minister  
(Army)

initialled by JE MacDermid

The Honourable  
The Attorney General for New Brunswick  
Saint John, New Brunswick.

Also: Charlottetown, P.E.I.  
Halifax, N.S.  
Quebec, P.Q.  
Toronto, Ont.  
Winnipeg, Man.  
Regina, Sask.  
Edmonton, Alta.  
Victoria, B.C.

Attorney General  
Nova Scotia.

Halifax, 2nd January, 1941.

H. DesRosiers, Esq.,  
Acting Deputy Minister (Militia Service),  
Department of National Defence,  
Ottawa, Canada.

Dear Sir:

I beg to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 24th December, about Magistrates notifying the appropriate Military Authority about soldiers charged before them with offences for which they may be tried by such Magistrates.

I am enclosing copy of a circular which has been sent out to all Magistrates in the Province of Nova Scotia. It is not now the practice in this Province for Justices of the Peace to try cases.

Yours very truly,

(Sgd.) Thomas D. MacDonald

T.D. MacDonald,  
Asst. Deputy Attorney General

TDM. B.



C  
O  
P  
Y

Memorandum No. 3 to Magistrates.

Attorney General  
Nova Scotia.

RE SOLDIERS

The following instructions are issued in pursuance of a request made by the Department of National Defence:

Immediately upon a soldier being charged before a Magistrate with an offence for which he may be tried by such Magistrate, such Magistrate will please notify the appropriate Military Authority.

The "appropriate Military Authority" in the case of a soldier charged at a place in the vicinity of the Station where his Unit is quartered, the "appropriate Military Authority" would be either the local Area Commandant, if there be one, or the District Officer Commanding the Military District in which the trial is to take place. The necessary information for determining in any case who is the "appropriate Military Authority" can ordinarily be obtained from the defendant but if this cannot be done or there is any doubt about the matter, it is suggested that the notification be addressed to the "District Officer Commanding Military District No. 6, Halifax, N.S." The notification should be sent in sufficient time to allow the appropriate Military Authority to detail an officer to attend the trial of the soldier should such Authority wish to do so.

The notification should set out the name of the soldier, the Unit to which he belongs, the offence with which he is charged, giving the Act and Section, the penalty to which he is liable and the place and date of the trial.

T.D. MacDonald,  
Asst. Deputy Attorney General

Halifax, N. S.,

2nd January, 1941.

H.Q. 54-27-63-1 FD 48 Org. R.S.

24 December, 1940.

- Militia -

Dear Sir:

On a number of occasions there have been cases in which soldiers of the Canadian Army have been convicted by the Police Magistrates or Justices of the Peace without notification being given to the Military Authorities.

Under the King's Regulations and Orders an officer may be detailed to attend the trial of a soldier and he is empowered to pay, on behalf of the accused, any fine imposed by the Court, provided that the fine so imposed is such that, in the ordinary course, it could be recovered from the soldier's pay account within a period of six months. The purpose of the Regulations is, inter alia, to prevent a soldier escaping the performance of some military duty which he could do by refusing to pay the fine and serve the term of imprisonment which may be awarded in default of payment. There are, no doubt, numerous cases where this Regulation could be invoked, so that the Crown would not be deprived of the soldier's services which otherwise might be the case.

It would be much appreciated by the Department of National Defence if Police Magistrates and Justices of the Peace could be instructed that, wherever possible, the appropriate Military Authorities should be notified when a soldier is charged with an offence in respect of which he is to be tried before the Magistrate or Justice of the Peace concerned.

If a soldier is charged at a place in the vicinity of the Station where his Unit is quartered, it is suggested that notification be sent to his Commanding Officer. In all other cases it is suggested that either the local Area Commandant, if there be one, or the District Officer Commanding the Military District in which the trial is to take place be notified. It is realized, of course, that particulars sufficient to enable such notification to be given would have to be obtained from the accused, which may not always be possible, but nevertheless it is probable that in the majority of instances these will be forthcoming.

The Department hopes that the above procedure will meet with your approval and bespeaks your co-operation in the matter.

Yours very truly,

(Sgd) H. DesRosiers

(H. DesRosiers),  
Acting Deputy Minister,  
(Militia Service)

Hon. J.H. MacQuarrie, K.C.,  
Attorney General, Province of Nova Scotia.  
HALIFAX, N.S.

C  
-O  
P  
Y

H 4-1-29

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
Headquarters, MD No. 6

Halifax, NS 20th December, 1940.

The Secretary,  
Department of National Defence,  
Ottawa, Ontario.

CIVIL OFFENCES.

1. Attached hereto is mimeographed letter H.Q. 54-27-63-1 FD 48 (A.D.) dated 17th December, 1940, which was presumably sent to this District Headquarters in error.

2. The instructions contained in para. 3 are being carried out in this District.

Sgd: (C. E. CONNOLLY)

(C.E. CONNOLLY) Brigadier,  
District Officer Commanding,  
Military District No. 6

JD

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
-Militia Service-

H.Q. 54-27-63-1 F.D. 48  
(A. D.)

OTTAWA, Ontario.  
17th December, 1940.

District Officers Commanding,  
Military Districts 1, 2, 3, 10.

CIVIL OFFENCES.

1. I am directed to bring to your attention a circular letter issued by the Honourable G.D. Conant, Attorney-General for the Province of Ontario, to all Magistrates and Crown Attorneys in the Province of Ontario.

2. This memorandum is in part as follows:-

"It would be appreciated by National Defence Headquarters if it was suggested to Police Magistrates and Justices of the Peace that, wherever possible, the appropriate Military Authorities be advised when a soldier is charged with an offence in respect of which he is to be tried before the Magistrate or Justice of the Peace concerned. If the soldier is charged at a place in the vicinity of the Station where his Unit is quartered, it is suggested that notification be sent to his Commanding Officer. In all other cases, it is suggested that either the local Area Commandant, if there be one, or the District Officer Commanding the Military District in which the trial is to take place, be notified."

3. Immediately on receipt of such information from a Crown Attorney, the District Officer Commanding or the Commanding Officer of the Unit concerned, as the case may be, will take the necessary steps to detail an Officer to attend the trial in accordance with the provisions of paragraph 484 of K.R. (Can.). This will meet those cases where a fine may be paid for the man and deducted from his pay, thereby retaining the man in the Service, and preventing instances of a man taking a jail sentence rather than pay a fine, which would have suited the purposes of justice equally well.

Sgd:  
For: (B.W. Browne)  
Major-General,  
Adjutant-General.

Copies to:

R. 56

I.G. E.C.  
All Directorates and Branches.  
Records.  
O's. A. Corps., N.D.H.Q.

C  
O  
P  
Y

MEMORANDUM

Department of National Defence.

HQ 54-27-65-1 FD 48 Org 1(a)

OTTAWA 26th November, 1940.

The suggestion that the Attorney-General of the various provinces be asked to circularize the police magistrates asking that in cases where soldiers are charged with offences against the civil law they notify the nearest District Officer Commanding so that the provisions of K.R. (Can.). 484 might be followed, would appear to be sound.

2. It has been the experience of this branch that in most cases where the soldier is A.W.L. at the time of his arrest no information is available to his unit, consequently the soldier is generally sentenced to a varying term of confinement, where a fine, recoverable under Article 159, F.R. & I., might meet the requirements of the case and the country would, therefore, not be deprived of the soldier's service for the time of sentence or be an actual loser in regard to the time and money spent on the soldier's training, as is the case where discharge follows a term of confinement.

3. All cases handled by the RCMP are notified to this Headquarters and it has been found necessary in nearly every such case to notify the District concerned with the facts relating to his crime and punishment.

(Sgd) H.T. Cock

Lt-Colonel,  
A.A.G. Org. 1

FJN/FP

C  
O  
P  
Y

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

Winnipeg, Man., October 24th, 1940.

The Hon. the Attorney General,  
Province of Ontario  
Legislative Buildings,  
Toronto, Ontario.

Dear Sir:

On a number of occasions, both in the province of Manitoba and in the province of Ontario, there have been cases in which soldiers of the C.A.S.F. have been convicted by Police Magistrates or Justices of the Peace without notification being given to the Military Authorities.

While the Military authorities do not, in every case, wish to have a representative attend such trials, in some cases it is desired that an Officer be detailed to attend. It would be appreciated if instructions might be given to Police Magistrates and Justices of the Peace that before proceeding, with the trial of a soldier of the C.A.S.F., Headquarters, Military District No. 10 be notified.

The writer is not aware of whether or not this problem has arisen in the other Military Districts in the Province of Ontario. Perhaps you could take this up with the Assistant Judge Advocate General, M.D. 2, Toronto, in order that some uniform practice might be followed.

(H.N. Streight) Captain,  
Assistant Judge Advocate General  
MD. 10

HNS/VB

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
(ARMY)

HC/120-2-1 (AQ)

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N.S., 21 May 45.

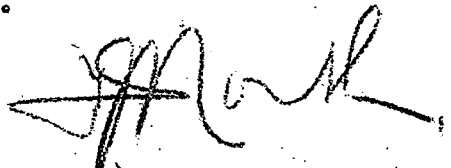
Commander, Halifax Fortress,  
O.C. No. 6 District Depot  
O.C. A-23 C.& AAA T.C.,  
O.C. No. 6 Dist. Coy., R.C. Sigs.  
O.C. Embarkation Transit Unit  
O.C. A.A. Reinf. Camp, Bedford  
Barrack Master, New Wellington Bks.  
O.C. No. 6 V.T.S.  
O.C. No. 10 Adm. Unit, CWAC  
O.C. No. 17 Adm. Unit, CWAC  
O.C. 106 Depot Coy., CWAC  
O.C. 36 (R) Bde. Group  
O.C. No. 6 Coy., E.S.& W., RCF  
O.C. No. 6 Coy., RCASC  
O.C. No. 6 Coy., R.C.O.C.  
O.C. No. 6 Coy., RCEME  
O.C. No. 1 Port Coy., RCASC  
O.C. 26 Coy., CDC)  
O.C. 36 Coy., CDC) DDO  
O.C. 50 Coy., CDC)  
DISTRICT MEDICAL OFFICER  
DISTRICT DENTAL OFFICER  
DISTRICT PAYMASTER  
COGSWELL STREET MILITARY HOSPITAL  
D A P M

V-E Day Disturbances

In connection with the m/n subject, it has come to the attention of this Headquarters that there may have been cases of injustice in the handling of soldiers charged before Civil authorities on charges arising out of these disturbances.

2. Should any of your personnel have been so charged, tried and convicted without an officer of your Unit being in attendance to render such aid as is called for by K.R.(Can), you will detail an officer to interview such soldier or soldiers and ascertain as far as possible if it would appear there were any irregularities or injustices in the handling of his case.

3. As appeals from decisions made by the Magistrate in the police Court has, of necessity, to be filed within a limited period of the sentence, immediate action is necessary and a full report, together with a sworn statement where necessary, is to be forwarded to this Headquarters.



(F. J. NORTH) Lieut.-Col.,  
A.A.& Q.M.G., M.D. No. 6,

FJN/BMH

EXHIBIT EE

March 13, 1945.

A meeting of the sub-committees, under the chairmanship of Mr. Tom Courtney and Mr. Percy Burgoyne, in connection with V-E Day celebrations was held in the Director's office, Thursday, March 8th at 4 p.m. Those present were:

Tom Courtney

Percy Burgoyne

George Young

J.L. Robertson

Captain Miles (Navy)

Lt. Col. North (Army)

Group Capt. Doyle (Air Force)

Major O.R. Crowell, Director of Civil Defence

The Director briefly outlined the tentative general plan with regard to V-E Day celebrations and Mr. Burgoyne outlined his ideas for the community celebrations to be held during the day. Mr. Courtney outlined the plan for the pyrotechnic display to be held during the evening. With regard to the community celebrations, the importance of a loud speaker and at least a few bandmen being present was stressed. Mr. Burgoyne said that he could select as many as ten locations but agreed that a smaller number might be preferable in view of the difficulty of securing sufficient public address equipment and bandmen.

Mr. Young referred to the difficulty of controlling crowds on such occasions and suggested that the principle of the Pied Piper might be followed and a band mount on vehicles might be utilized to lead impromptu parades, guiding the people away from the downtown districts. Col. North advised that, if requested, he ~~let~~ he could arrange a few trucks for this purpose.



Col. North advised that the daylight fireworks could be set off on V-E Day by members of the Armed Forces and could meanwhile be stored at Melville Island.

Captain Miles agreed that the Naval personnel could look after the pyrotechnic display during the evening and that meanwhile the fireworks could be stored at the Joint Services Arsenal and supplied c/o Superintendent of Naval Armament Depot, Dartmouth, N. S.

It was suggested that possibly instead of setting them off from three locations on the harbour, it might be preferable to have them fired from George's Island.

It was suggested that the fireworks be ordered immediately. Although Col. North was inclined to think that V-E Day was not likely to occur before July or August, however, it is always possible that something unexpected might happen.

Col. North suggested that an application be made to the National Defence Headquarters for a supply of blank ammunition which could be used on V-E Day by the Armed Services from those guns of the Fortress which could be suitable for this purpose.

With regard to a parade, it was suggested that instead of holding this in the evening preceding the fireworks program, that it might be held during the daytime immediately following the community celebrations. Mr. Burgoyne was to look into the possibility of such an arrangement and also to make up a more detailed plan for the arrangements for community celebrations for submission to the general V-E Day committee to be held in the near future.

THE NOVA SCOTIA LIQUOR COMMISSION

HALIFAX, N. S.

6th April, 45.

BRIGADIER D.A. WHITE,  
District Officer Commanding,  
Military District No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S.

Dear Sir:

The general opinion is that Victory Day is fast approaching and I note from the Press that arrangements are being made to celebrate victory;

Confidentially, it is our intention to close all liquor stores immediately for a reasonable time. However, we do not intend to make any announcement of this to the public. In this connection it occurred to me that you might consider instructing your canteens to follow suit.

Allow me to take this opportunity of expressing our appreciation of the splendid cooperation we have had with the Provost and your other officials, especially since it was found necessary to ration our product.

In closing I might say that personally I do not anticipate any great amount of trouble but thought it well to take these precautions. If you have any suggestions of your own to offer in this connection I would be pleased to have them.

Yours very truly,

(A.S. MAHON)

Chief Commissioner

P.2

EXHIBIT G G

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, Nova Scotia,  
10th April, 45.

Mr. A.S. Mahon,  
Chief Commissioner,  
Nova Scotia Liquor Commission,  
Halifax, N. S.

Dear Mr. Mahon:

I acknowledge receipt of your letter  
of 6th April, regarding Victory Day.

2. Your kindness in giving early thought to  
this matter is appreciated and you can rest assured that  
we are more than glad to cooperate with you in every way.

3. It appears to be the considered thought of many  
of our Commanding Officers that it would be best for the  
soldiers' canteens which only handle beer to be open for  
limited periods on Victory Day and that limited quantities  
should be available and that the whole operation of canteens  
should be under specially strict control.

4. We are having further discussions on this  
subject and will communicate with you later.

Yours very truly,

(D.A. WHITE) Brigadier,  
District Officer Commanding,  
Military District No. 6.

DAW:H

EXHIBIT G G

THE NOVA SCOTIA LIQUOR COMMISSION

Halifax, Nova Scotia

11th April, 1945.

Brigadier D.A. White,  
District Officer Commanding,  
Military District No. 6,  
Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S.

Dear Brigadier White:

I appreciate having your early reply to my letter of April 6th, and the plan as outlined is entirely satisfactory to the Commission.

I fully realize that the amount on any one of the canteens at any one time is not excessive, and if this is rationed properly I see no reason for any trouble.

Yours truly,

Signed: A.S. Mahon,  
Chief Commissioner

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY

(F(J.NORTH))

Halifax, N.S.

13 Apr 45

MEMORANDUM

DISTRICT OFFICER COMMANDING  
M D NO 6  
Halifax, N.S.

"V" Day  
Messes and Canteens

At a meeting in the Operations Room,  
H.Q. M.D.6 at 1000 hrs, 13 Apr 45, to discuss the  
operation of Messes and Canteens in the Halifax Area  
on "V" Day, the following were present.

|                   |                                    |
|-------------------|------------------------------------|
| Col. C.S. Craig   | Commander, Halifax Fortress        |
| Lt. Col. Rice     | OC No.6 District Signals           |
| Lt.Col. Kent      | OC 21 AA REGT                      |
| Lt.Col. Roberge   | OC Le Regt de St. Hyacinthe        |
| Major Young       | OC No.6 Dist Coy. RCASC            |
| Capt. Evans       | OC AA Reinf. Camp                  |
| Lt.-Col. Meighen  | OC A23 C & AAA T C                 |
| Lt.-Col. Flowers  | OC 1st Hfx. Gst. Regt.             |
| Capt. Clark       | Barrack Master - Wellington Bks    |
| Capt. Harrigan    | Canteen Officer - No.6 DDD         |
| Capt. MacLeod     | Messing and Catering Offr. No.6 DD |
| Lt.-Col. Clarke   | DAPM M D 6                         |
| Lt.-Col. Fielding | DAAG                               |

2. An hours discussion on this subject took place, resulting in the general opinion that Messes and Canteens should be opened on "V" Day at the discretion of Commanding Officers. It was felt that every effort should be made to provide interests and entertainment within Unit lines and that other than the normal number of personnel on leave and pass, men should be kept at their general duties particularly members in Operational Units. It was felt representation should be made to the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission for an increased quota of beer to be available for such occasion as an inducement to keep personnel off the streets. It was felt that whatever increase would be granted would not provide a quota sufficient to cause any harm.

Sgd. P.S. Fielding, Lt.-Col.,

DAAG M, M.D.6

EXHIBIT II

OFFICE OF  
CHIEF OF POLICE

HALIFAX  
Nova Scotia

October 3, 1944.

Lt. Col. Clark,  
Army Provost Corps,  
Cogswell Street,  
Halifax, N. S.

Dear Sir:

For your information I am attaching hereto, a copy of the minutes of the meeting held in my office on September 21st. called for the purpose of discussing what action would be taken by the various police organizations in this City, in the event of V-Day celebrations, or any major calamity in which the services of the combined forces would be required.

Yours truly,

Sgd. "Judson J. Conrad"  
Chief of Police

COPY

A meeting of representatives of the police organizations in the city of Halifax was held in the office of the Chief of Police, J.J. Conrod, City Hall, Halifax, N. S. on Sept. 21st at 3.p.m.

Present were -

|                |                                    |
|----------------|------------------------------------|
| Lt. Com. Wood  | representing the R.C. Navy         |
| Lt. Col. Clark | " " Army                           |
| Sqd. Ldr. Howe | " " R.C.A.F.                       |
| Insp. Peacock  | " " R.C.M. Police                  |
| J.J. Conrod    | " " Hfx. City Police               |
| H.E. Mahon     | President, N.S. Liquor Commission. |

The object of calling this meeting was for the purpose of discussing and forming some plans for the policing of the City in the event of V-Day, but also having in mind any disaster or calamity which might occur which would require the combined efforts of all police organizations.

After some discussion it was decided to pool all police resources at Police Headquarters, City Hall, Halifax, N.S. There a representative of each service would be placed to work in co-operation with the City Police.

Where one of the Services would be required on a call a member of the City Police would accompany the patrol.

In the event of V-Day the committee had in mind particularly the Liquor Stores, traffic tie-ups on various streets, street fights, etc.

Mr. Mahon, President of the N.S. Liquor Commission was interested in what action the police would take in closing of liquor stores and it was unanimously agreed by the committee that the vendors and service clubs would be closed by the authority of the police. Mr. Mahon agreed that he would write to the 3 Service Canteens and Merchant Navy asking them to co-operate with the civil organizations.

In this event also all ranks, city police constables and officers are to report to Police Headquarters immediately. All leave will be stopped and men must be prepared to work 24 hours a day if their services are required.

EXHIBIT "B"

"B"

H. 165-9-2 (PRO)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
A R M Y

COPY

Headquarters, M.D. # 6,  
Halifax, N.S. 25 Sep 44.

Officer Commanding,  
# 37 Provost Company,  
Halifax, N.S.

V DAY

In the event of the cessation of hostilities with Germany or of some spectacular news which would occasion celebrations amongst the Services or the Public, you will at once despatch an officer or responsible N.C.O. to report to the Chief of Police, Halifax, N.S. at the Police Station in the City Hall.

2. All calls for assistance made to the Chief of Police will then be relayed by this officer or N.C.O. to your Headquarters whereupon immediate action will be taken.

3. The Chief of Police Halifax has under taken to co-ordinate all work during that day in co-operation with the R.C.M.P. Naval Shore Patrol, R.C.A.F. Service Police and the Canadian Provost Corps.

4. The key note of police work on that day will be to prevent violence or damage to property and it is anticipated that arrests will not be made.

5. Provosts will attempt to prevent trouble by encouraging noise making and flag waving to relieve pent up spirits.

6. It is understood that the Chairman of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission is requesting the District Officer Commanding to ban the sale of beer or spirits in Army Messes and Canteens on that day and possibly for several days thereafter.

7. The Nova Scotia Liquor Commission will at once close all their stores for a period to be announced.

8. It is suggested that no jeep patrols be put out on the road until celebrations have ceased.

  
(C.W. CLARKE) Lt.Col.,  
D.A.P.M. M.D. # 6.

/RER



April 5th, 1945

3 P.M.

## MEETING HELD AT POLICE HEADQUARTERS

## RE: "V-E" DAY CELEBRATIONS

A meeting was held on this date at the City Police Headquarters, for the purpose of discussing and finalizing plans, for the providing of necessary police protection on "V-E" day. The following representatives were present at this meeting: Lt. Commander Wood of the Naval Shore Patrol - Lt. Col. Clark of the Army Provost Police - Ft. Lt. Stubinski of Air Force Service Police - Sgt. R. Cutray likewise of the Air Force Service Police - Mr. Mahon of the N.S. Liquor Commission - Mr. Hayes and Mr. Bulley of the N.S. Light & Power Co., an Inspector from the R.C.M. Police, Judson J. Conrod, Chief of the Halifax City Police - George C. Fox Deputy Chief of the City Police, and Bernard Rogers Secretary of the City Police. This meeting lasted for one hour during which time the following items were discussed at length.

1. LIQUOR STORES - WINDOWS - CLOSING ETC.,

Mr. Mahon of the N.S. Liquor Commission advised that specific instructions had been issued to all liquor store managers that upon the receipt of the news of "V-E" day, all stores were to close. He stated that in the event that it happened during business hours, every effort would be made to take care of the people who might be in the store at that time. He further stated that all clubs, mail order etc would also close. The matter of putting up shutters on the windows of the liquor stores was discussed. It was felt that this setp would not be necessary, and even though it were it would be practically impossible to get the necessary help to erect these shutters. Mr. Mahon suggested that it might be possible to have the police of the various services look after their buildings. It was pointed out that it was not possible to have this granted, that is men of the naval, air-force or army police do this, but that special precautions would be taken by having men do duty in the very near vicinity of the stores, so that in the event of trouble they would be on hand to render whatever assistance might be needed. Mr. Mahon expressed his willingness to cooperate in whatever way it might be decided by the Committee to be in the best interests.

2. OPERATION OF TRAM CARS ON "V-E" DAY:

Mr. Hayes and Mr. Bulley expressed their intention of calling all their cars. This was being done in other cities. Much discussion arose over the disruption that would be caused by taking in the cars, and it was suggested by the Chief of Police that it might be possible to keep them going especially in the west end districts of the City in order to accommodate the people trying to get into the services on the Garrison Grounds. Both of these gentlemen then agreed that a skeleton crew would remain on duty in the west end of the City, as the day progressed events would be the deciding factor whether they would remain out or not. It was definitely stated however, that there would be no cars in the north end of the City. It was also decided that there would be no publicity regarding the movement of the tram cars.

3. POOLING OF FORCES:

It was agreed at this meeting that there should be a pooling of the various police forces on this day, and the main point from which they would operate and receive their calls would be the Halifax Police Station. In the event that the need should arise a Sergeant of the City Police would be in charge and would have under his command the men of the Army, Navy and Air Force Police. It was further decided that immediately upon receipt of the news a senior officer or N.C.O., from the army would come to the police station. It would be work to advise the provost of the number of men required and then go himself

P.2 88 KK

April 5th, 1945  
3 P.M.

MEETING HELD AT POLICE HEADQUARTERS

RE: "V-E" DAY CELEBRATIONS

- PAGE 2 -

3. POOLING OF FORCES: (Continued)

personally to the scene of the trouble. Heavy trucks were to be used in place of the jeeps. The Air Force would have approximately the same number of men on duty as the Army about 75 men. The Navy decided to send not less than 10 men to the station, same to be under the direction of an officer.

4. R.C.M. Police.

It was pointed out by the representing Inspector from the R.C.M. Police, that they would offer whatever assistance might be possible, immediately upon receiving a call requesting same.

5. ARMING THE MEN:

The question of arming the men came up for discussion and was decided against.

6. MEMBERS OF THE CITY POLICE DEPARTMENT:

The Chief of Police informed the members at the meeting that all members of this department would be on duty on that day.

7. MEMBERS OF POLICE TO BE COURTEOUS AND OBLIGING:

It was stressed that all members should be instructed to be as courteous as possible and do everything possible to avoid trouble on this day.

(see evidence of D.A.M. pp 116-117)

EXHIBIT LL

H. 165-9-2 (PRO)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

A R M Y

Headquarters, M.D. # 6  
Halifax, N. S. 9 Apr 45.

COPY

O.C., # 37-38 Coys., C. Pro C., Halifax, N.S.  
O.C., #45 Coy., C. Pro C., Sydney, N.S.  
Officer 1/c Debert - Truro Detachment, Debert, N.S.  
N.C.O. 1/c Dartmouth Detachment, C. Pro C., Dartmouth, N.S.  
N.C.O. 1/c Shelburne Detachment, C. Pro C., Shelburne, N.S.  
N.C.O. 1/c Kentville Detachment, C. Pro C., Kentville, N.S.  
N.C.O. 1/c Windsor Detachment, C. Pro C., Windsor, N.S.  
N.C.O. 1/c Yarmouth Detachment, C. Pro C., Yarmouth, N.S.  
N.C.O. 1/c Digby Detachment, C. Pro C., Digby, N.S.  
N.C.O. 1/c Amherst Detachment, C. Pro C., Amherst, N.S.  
N.C.O. 1/c New Glasgow Detachment, C. Pro C., New Glasgow, N.S.  
N.C.O. 1/c Charlottetown Detachment, C. Pro C., C. Town, P.E.I.  
N.C.O. 1/c Mulgrave Detachment, C. Pro C., Mulgrave, N.S.  
N.C.O. 1/c North Sydney Detachment, C. Pro C., North Sydney, N.S.  
N.C.O. 1/c Sydney Mines Detachment, C. Pro C., Sydney Mines, C.B.  
N.C.O. 1/c New Waterford Detachment, C. Pro C., New Waterford, N.S.  
No C.O. 1/c Glace Bay Detachment, C. Pro C., Glace Bay, N.S.

"V" DAY

In the event of the cessation of hostilities with Germany or of some spectacular news which would occasion celebrations amongst the Services and the public, popularly called "V" Day, all Provost will at once report to their Detachment or Company Headquarters for instructions and duty.

2. O's C., and N.C.O.'s 1/c will contact local Chiefs of Police in their immediate area and request that they plan and co-ordinate police work for "V" Day. Naval Shore Patrol and R.C.A.F. Service Police may also wish to assist and operate in a similar way under the direction of the Chief of Police.

3. The key note of the work on that day will be to prevent violence and damage to property and it is not anticipated that arrests will be made. Provosts will attempt to prevent trouble by tact and firmness, rather than force.

4. Noise making, flag waving and good clean revelry should be encouraged.

5. Care should be taken to see that Provosts avoid civilian disturbances and demonstrations unless Army personnel or property are involved.

6. Instructions as to the procedure on "V" Day for the City of Halifax has been covered separately under the file quoted above, dated 25 Sep 44.

Sgd. C.W. Clarke

(C.W. CLARKE) Lt. Col.,  
D.A.P.M. M.D. # 5.

/RER/

PART I ORDERS  
by  
MAJOR C. R. LORWAY  
Commanding  
NO. 37 PROVOST COMPANY

Order No. 28  
dated 9 April 45

(Last Part I Order Issued No 27 dated 5 April 45)

1. V -- DAY  
Attention All Ranks

In the event of the cessation of hostilities with Germany or of some spectacular news which would occasion celebrations amongst the Services and the public, all Provosts will at once report to their Detachment or Company Headquarters for instructions and duty.

(b) The key note of the work on that day will be to prevent violent and damage to property and it is not anticipated that arrests will be made. Provosts will attempt to prevent trouble by tact and firmness, rather than force. Noise making, flag waving and good clean revelry should be encouraged. Care should be taken to see that Provosts avoid civilian disturbances and demonstrations unless Army personnel or property are involved.

(c) Instructions in detail will be issued at a later date.

2. PROCEEDS FROM BENEFIT HOCKEY GAME

The Canadian Red Cross, Halifax Office acknowledged with thanks the sum of \$343.84 representing proceeds from a benefit Hockey Game held on 23 March 45 by this Unit and the Naval Shore Patrol.

3. PRISONERS OF WAR

The below mentioned German prisoners of war escaped from Camp Wainwright, Alberta 19 March 45. Description is as follows:

Klaus CONRAD

Age - 28 yrs  
Height - 5'9½"  
Weight - 162 lbs  
Hair - brown  
Eyes - Large, brown  
Complexion - Fresh  
Teeth - prominent  
lips - heavy  
sloping shoulders  
Ears very flat against head  
Polite manner  
Speaks English well  
Rank - Officer in German Air Force  
Dress - Believed to be wearing khaki shirt and trousers under blue German Air Force uniform

Heintz MEUCHE

Age - 23 yrs  
Height - 5'6¾"  
Weight - 143 lbs  
Complexion - Fair  
Eyes - blue  
Hair - lt brown  
Rank - Lieutenant,  
German Army

Herewith check list of Prisoners of War who are at large as of 29 March 45 -

From Camp 20, Gravenhurst, Ont - 8 Aug 44

PW 14917 - Leut. MANHARDT, W.

From Labour Project, Regan, Ont - 29 Oct 44

PW ME 047870 - WAHL, H.

From Labour Project, Kenora, Ont - 15 Nov 44  
(presumed drowned)

PW 362459 BERGTER, W.

142056 STOEKL, E.

(presumed to have perished in bush)

- To page Two -

000705

C O P Y

EXHIBIT MM

H.165-9-2 (PRO)

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S., 7 May 45.

O.C.,  
# 37-38 Provost Coy.,  
Halifax, N. S.

V.E. DAY PARADE AND THANKSGIVING SERVICE

Attached hereto are orders for V.E. Day parade and Thanksgiving Service which are self-explanatory.

2. The Chief of Police, City of Halifax, is undertaking to co-ordinate any traffic control arrangements on that day with the assistance of the Navy, Army and Airforce Special Police.
3. The Army's share will consist of twenty five (25) Provosts who will report to the Inspector of the City Police at the Navy despatching office on Sackville Street at 1330 hours on V.E. Day. This Inspector will detail Provosts their duties.
4. For general information, roads in the City of Halifax will be blocked as follows:- Sackville at Dreddon Row; Sackville at Summer St; South Park at Spring Garden Road; Bell Road at Trollope; North Park at Cogswell; the Citadel will also be blocked to civilian and M.T. traffic on V.E. Day at the following points:- Cogswell and North Park; Gottingen At Cogswell; Sackville at Brunswick St.
5. Horse mounted City Police will be on duty at each of the three (3) intersections mentioned above and it is requested that if possible, a Provost be despatched to each of these points to assist the City Police.
6. On V.E. night, Hollis and South St., Barrington and South St., will be blocked by the City Police for the street dance on South St. Similar blocks will also be made on South Part St. Probably at the Sackville St. end and Spring Garden Road end.
7. It is suggested that you have at least three (3) motorcyclists on duty on V.E. Day who could report to the Chief of Police at the Police Station for duty as runners and investigators to determine the size of the crowds and to assist in any trouble that may develop on V.E. Day.
8. W/C MacCallum, A.P.M., Eastern Air Command, has requested the use of a station wagon and driver which is to report to the R.C.A.F. S.P. Orderly Room at C.H.N.S. on the announcement of V.E. DAY.

Sgd. "C.W. CLARKE" Lt.Col.  
D.A.P.M., M.D. No.6.

EXHIBIT N N

OFFICE OF  
CHIEF OF POLICE

May 5, 1945.

Lt. Col. Clark,  
Army Provost Corps,  
Cogswell St.,  
Halifax, N. S.

Dear Sir:-

For your information I wish to advise that the enclosed programme contains a list of the events that will be put on by the Civic Authorities of V.E. Day.

In the event that there should be any changes in the set-up as attached hereto, you will be notified.

Yours very truly,

CHIEF OF POLICE

JJC/br

C  
O  
P  
Y

P. 2

EXHIBIT NN

CITY OF HALIFAX

PROCLAMATION

ALL citizens are invited to attend Thanksgiving Services  
Demonstrations and Celebrations to be held on

" V E DAY "

- 9 A.M. Bands will march from nine points on the outskirts of the City to the Garrison Grounds where the civil ceremonies will be opened by His Worship the Mayor.
- 11 A.M. Service of Praise and Thanksgiving to Almighty God in the various churches of the City.
- 2.30 P.M. Thanksgiving Services led by the Navy, the Army and the Airforce on the Garrison Grounds.

During the later afternoon and early evening provision is being made for all to join in community singing, demonstrations and celebrations on the Garrison grounds and street dancing on South Park Street (Sackville Street to Spring Garden Road) and South Street (Hollis to Barrington St.)

- 9 P.M. Illuminated display on the harbour and fireworks. Citizens should gather on the eastern slope of the Citadel Hill. Tune in on the local radio stations for further details, particularly on V.E. DAY

On V.E. Day citizens are urged to observe the following requests.

Participate in the church services of Thanksgiving in their respective churches and the various celebrations on the Garrison grounds during the daytime and on the eastern slope of Citadel Hill during the evening.

Refrain from driving vehicles into the downtown area and do not create pedestrian congestion in the district.

Remove all non-essential vehicles from the street.

REMEMBER VICTORY IN EUROPE IS NOT FINAL VICTORY

Allan M. Butler,

Mayor

COPY

GOD SAVE THE KING

EXHIBIT NN 1, 2 & 4

ARE ATTACHED ONLY TO THE ORIGINAL COPY OF THE

PROCEEDINGS OF THE COURT OF INQUIRY.



**EXHIBIT "00"**

**SAME AS EXHIBIT "K"**

**EXHIBIT "PP"**

**SAME AS EXHIBIT "X.1"**

EXHIBIT "QQ"

SAME AS EXHIBIT "M"

EXHIBIT R R

DISPOSITION OF 37, 38 and 45 PROVOST COMPANYS  
Together with Attached Provost Reinforcements  
From A-32 C.Pro.C. C.T.C. on 7 May 45.

|                     | <u>Officers</u> | <u>O.R.'s</u> |
|---------------------|-----------------|---------------|
| Halifax             | 7               | 289           |
| Debert              | 1               | 59            |
| Sydney              | 2               | 40            |
| Mulgrave            |                 | 14            |
| Kentville           |                 | 6             |
| Amherst             |                 | 8             |
| New Glasgow         |                 | 3             |
| Charlottetown       |                 | 2             |
| Dartmouth           |                 | 10            |
| Shelburne           |                 | 2             |
| Windsor             |                 | 2             |
| North Sydney        |                 | 3             |
| New Waterford       |                 | 4             |
| Glace Bay           |                 | 4             |
| T O T A L           |                 | 446           |
| T O T A L ALL RANKS |                 | 456           |

DISPOSITION OF PROVOST IN HALIFAX ON 7th MAY 1945.

|  |       |
|--|-------|
| General Duty (7 Officers & 162 O.R.'s) for V.E. Day..... | 169   |
| C.Q.M.S.....   | 1     |
| C.W.A.C. & Civil Servants.....                           | 21    |
| M.T. (Includes Drivers 1/c).....                         | 14    |
| Guardroom.....   | 9     |
| Cooks and Kitchen.....                                   | 9     |
| Batman and Mess Waiter.....                              | 1     |
| In Detention .....                                       | 3     |
| In Hospital.....   | 11    |
| On Leave.....  | 16    |
| On Gangplank and Waterfront.....                         | 7     |
| Plain Clothes Duty.....                                  | 1     |
| Escorts for A.W.L.'s.....                                | 4     |
| Train Patrols.....                                       | 25    |
| Gate Guard.....  | 1     |
| Orderly Room, Q.M.....                                   | (4    |
| Pay, D.A.P.M.'s Office.....                              | (     |
|  | <hr/> |
| TOTAL  | 296   |
|  | <hr/> |

EXHIBIT T T

C O P Y

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

Headquarters,  
Halifax Fortress, 9 May 45

Chief of Police,  
City of Halifax,  
Halifax, N. S.

The following articles of clothing have been  
handed in at this Headquarters and are submitted for your  
disposal:-

D'Allairds

12 Ladies' Dresses

3 Ladies Swim Suits

Zellar's

1 Oilskin Coat

Other Firms

1 Waterproof Coat - Blue (Men's)

1 Shirt                      White    "

2 Pr. Ladies Shoes    Brown

2 Pr. Ladies Shoes    Odd

2 Mens Shoes            Odd

1 Pr. Ladies Shoes    Blue.

Please acknowledge receipt.

(Sgd.) R.J. Butts, Capt.,  
for (E.P. FLOWERS) Lt. Col.  
A/Commander-Halifax Fortress.

RJB/HM

Receipt acknowledged.

Sgd. V.G. O'Brien  
for Chief of Police  
City of Halifax

EXHIBIT WUU

C O P Y

F.H.Q. 5-4-4

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

H.Q. Halifax Fortress,  
Halifax, N.S., 15 May 45.

Chief of Police,  
City of Halifax,  
Halifax, N. S.

The following articles which have been recovered,  
are forwarded to you for disposal:-

AGNEW SURPASS

- 2 Prs. mens shoes (Brown)
- 2 mens shoes (Odd ) (Brown)

TIP TOP TAILORS

- 2 mens coats Blue  
Brown

OTHER FIRMS

- 1 Mens shirt White
- 2 shirts Blue
- 2 " Brown
- 1 pr. Trousers, tweed
- 3 mens sweaters
- 2 ladies sweaters
- 1 child's sweater

Please acknowledge receipt.

RJB/CM

Sgd. R.J. Butts Capt.,  
for (E.P. FLOWERS) Lt.-Col.,  
A/Commander-Halifax Fortress.

Receipt acknowledged.

Sgd. F.A. Morrow  
for Chief of Police,  
city of Halifax.

EXHIBIT VV

F.H.Q.5-4

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
ARMY

Headquarters  
Halifax Fortress  
22 May 45.

Fortress Commander  
Halifax Fortress

Kit Inspections  
V-E Day Disturbances

Capt. Myers, Staff Capt. "Q", instructed the R.S.M. to examine the kits of this H.Q. Personnel, on 9 May 45, for "loot" from the local stores.

2. The R.S.M. reported that he had examined the kits, also the closets etc., in the barrack rooms, and no merchandise had been recovered in possession of any personnel.

3. Some articles had been recovered by RSM Green which had, apparently, been left in the furnace room of the barrack building. These were brought to my office, and I returned them to the Chief of Police, City of Halifax, as per copy of letter which I handed to the Court of Inquiry, dated 15 May 45.

RJB/CM

Sgd. R.J. Butts  
(R.J. BUTTS) Capt.,  
Staff Captain,  
Halifax Fortress.




EXHIBIT WW

s.19(1)

V-E DAY DISTURBANCES  
CIVIL CHARGE

1. [REDACTED] 1st (H) Coast  
Regiment R.C.A. was apprehended by civil police at 2200  
hours 8 May 45 and charged with being in possession of  
stolen property (jewelery). Sentenced to 4 years in  
Dorchester Penitentiary. Merchandise recovered unknown.

2. [REDACTED] t (H) Coast  
Regiment R.C.A. was apprehended by civil police at 1600  
hours 8 May 45 and charged with possession of stolen  
property (liquor). Sentenced to 30 days in jail. Merchandise  
recovered unknown.

  
(E.P. Flowers) Lt.-Col.,  
O.C. 1 (H) Coast Regt, R.C.A.

P.2 28 WW

WW

A.A. 6-0

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- A R M Y -

H.Q. 21 A.A. Regt., R.C.A.,  
Halifax, N. S., 22 May 45.

Commander,  
Halifax Fortress,  
Halifax, N. S.

DETAILS OF APPREHENSION

Reference message Q-9170, d/21  
May 45 re the m/n.

1. Herewith the m/n as requested  
in the above referenced message.

Sgd. A.H. Macdonald Lt.

/MMJ  
Encl.

(G.L. KENT) Lt.-Col.,  
Commanding Officer,  
21 AA Regt., R.C.A.

No. B-22710 B.Q.M.S. NEWMAN, R., of the 19th A.A. Bty., 21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A. (CA) apprehended by P-13138 L/Cpl. Macdonald, B.P. #37 Provost Corps, Halifax, N.S. at 1845 hrs., at M.D. 6, Headquarters Halifax. Arrest being witnessed by P-30216 L/Cpl. Perry, A.W. #37 Provost Corps, Halifax, N.S. Taken into M.D. 6, H.Q. where an inventory was made of all goods in the possession of this soldier in the presence of Captain V.E. Hadland, H.Q., M.D. 6; and W-6871 Sgt. Hinkley, B.M., H.Q. M.D. 6 and W-40523 Cpl. Petruzelli, L., H.Q., M.D. 6. Remanded for Standing Court Martia

The accused, B-22710 B.Q.M.S. Newman, R., 19th A.A. Bty., 21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A. (CA), a G.S. Soldier of the Canadian Army placed on Active Service is charged with:

First Charge  
Sec 40  
Army Act

CONDUCT TO THE PREJUDICE OF GOOD ORDER AND  
MILITARY DISCIPLINE

in that he

at Halifax, N.S., 8th May 1945, was in improper possession of certain articles, as detailed below:-

- 2 small silver trays (leaf shaped)
- 2 salt & pepper shakers (silver)
- 5 costume jewellery rings
- 5 glasses in leather cases
- 2 silver sugar & cream sets
- 2 silver bowls with blue glass inset
- 4 Flat 50's of cigarettes
- 16 small pkgs. of cigarettes
- 1 leather glasses case
- 1 silver butter dish
- 1 leather key case
- 1 Men's wrist watch
- 1 tie pin
- 1 leather tobacco pouch
- 1 pr. tweezers
- 1 haversack containing four letters addressed to:  
Pte. Hope, L.M. - B144735, HQ 21st A.A. Regt  
and two aerial photos.

Second Charge  
Sec 40  
Army Act

CONDUCT TO THE PREJUDICE OF GOOD ORDER AND  
MILITARY DISCIPLINE

in that he

at Halifax, N.S. 8th May 1945 did take part in a disturbance in public place.

merchandise held at H.Q., M.D. 6 - Capt. V.E. Hadland

23 May 45  
Halifax, N.S.

(G.L. KENT) Lt.-Col.,  
Commanding Officer,  
21 A.A. Regt., R.C.A.

No. [REDACTED], 1st A.A. Bty.,  
21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A. (CA) apprehended by L-  
2617 Sgt. GRISHOLM, J.M. 146th A.A. Bty., R.C.A.  
at 1830 hrs. 10 May 45 in the men's quarters  
at the Citadel during Kit Inspection when he  
was found to possess certain articles apparently  
loot. Arrest being witnessed by B-626302 Cnr.  
VETTERO, A. of 1st A.A. Bty., R.C.A. Remanded for Standing  
Court Martial.

The accused [REDACTED], E., 1st A.A.  
Bty., 21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A. (CA) an N.R.M.A.  
soldier of the Canadian Army placed on Active  
Service is charged with:-

First Charge  
Sec 40  
Army Act

CONDUCT TO THE PREJUDICE OF GOOD ORDER  
AND MILITARY DISCIPLINE

in that he

at Halifax, N.S. 10th May 1945 was in improper  
possession of certain articles as detailed below:-

- |   |                                  |                |
|---|----------------------------------|----------------|
| 1 | Candleabra (Silver Color)        |                |
| 3 | Wood Boxes                       |                |
| 1 | Grey Shirt "Bonnie Kay"          |                |
| 2 | prs. Cloth Gloves                |                |
| 6 | Packs Playing Cards              |                |
| 2 | Packs Devon Playing Cards        |                |
| 1 | Package 50 Craven "A" Cigarettes |                |
| 2 | Sets Corporal Stripes            |                |
| 2 | Sets Sgt. Stripes                | ) Claims to be |
| 1 | pr. Police Suspenders            | ) property of  |
| 1 | Leather Belt                     | ) Smorong      |

Second Charge  
Sec 40  
Army Act

CONDUCT TO THE PREJUDICE OF GOOD ORDER  
AND MILITARY DISCIPLINE

in that he

at Halifax, N.S. on 8 May 45 did take part in a  
disturbance in public place.

Merchandise returned to City Police Dept. and  
retained by same.  
Certified copy of receipt is attached.

Inventory of Merchandise reclaimed by the  
21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A.

- 19 - Pkgs. of Tobacco
- 5 - Pkgs. of Snuff
- 1 - Sterling Silver Woman's Brush
- 3 - Piece Costume Jewellery, Red Plastic
- 56 - Packs Playing Cards
- 1 - Pr. Fleece lined boots size 9.
- 2½ - Pr. maroon cloth bedroom slippers  
marked with the No. 588 and the sizes.
- 1 - Pr. Brown leather shoes marked WB, Limited  
Custom Grade with No. WPTB 12415 C/D 100  
2552 J11.
- 1 - Blue Dress with Hanger
- 1 - Red Dress with Hanger
- 4 - Black Leather Purses @ .44 each
- 27 - "Welgroom" and "Nobility" packet combs.
- 3 - Spools Thread
- 1 - "Southwood" Pipe  
Assorted Shoe Laces
- 1 - Razor Strap Imperial Guedege 120
- 1 - Blue Tie, British Cravat
- 1 - Candlelabra (Silver Color)
- 3 - Wood boxes @ \$1.09 each
- 1 - Grey Shirt - "Bonnie Kay"
- 2 - Pr. Cloth Gloves @ \$1.00
- 1 - Package 50 Craven "A" Cigarettes
- 2 - Sets Corporal Stripes
- 2 - Sets Sgt. Stripes
- 1 - Pr. Police Suspenders
- 1 - Leather Belt
- 1 - Woman's Coat - Red - Size 16
- 1 - Woman's Sweater - Size 20 Green
- 1 - Pr. Ladies Black Leather Gloves
- 1 - Woman's Dress - Size 13 Yellow
- 6 - Men Dress shirts
- 1 - Desk Drawers

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:

*[Signature]*  
(G.L. RINT) Lt.-Col.,  
Commanding Officer  
21 A.A. Regt., R.C.A.

Sgd: C.A. *Marrow* Monow  
Halifax Police Dept.

(List includes other goods picked up  
around the Citadel and South Barrack  
grounds)

000722

s.19(1)

No. [REDACTED] A.J. of the 14th A.A. Bty., 21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A.(CA), apprehended by P-4624 L/Bdr. GAUDIO, J. of Halifax Fortress at 0730 hrs. 9 May 1945 at entrance to South Barracks, arrest being witnessed by M-46537 Gnr. Lubeck, H.A., H.Q. Halifax Fortress. Soldier taken to H.Q. Halifax Fortress where an inventory was made of the goods in soldier's possession in the presence of K-74429 R.S.M. Green, J.M., H.Q. Halifax Fortress. Remanded for Standing Court Martial.

The accused A-11070 Gunner TOULOUSE, A.J. 14th A.A. Bty., 21st A.A. Regiment, R.C.A.(CA) a G.S. soldier of the Canadian Army placed on Active Service is charged with:-

First Charge  
Sec 40  
Army Act

CONDUCT TO THE PREJUDICE OF GOOD ORDER  
AND MILITARY DISCIPLINE

in that he

at Halifax, N.S. 8th day May 1945 was in improper possession of certain articles as detailed below:-

|    |                                    |
|----|------------------------------------|
| 2  | qts. Scotch                        |
| 2  | Pints Scotch                       |
| 2  | Pkgs. Cigars                       |
| 25 | Pkgs "Minora" Blades               |
| 1  | Handkerchief                       |
| 2  | Grain leather tobacco pouches      |
| 2  | prs. Soles leather                 |
| 2  | men's suits 3 piece Brown Complete |
| 2  | men's suits 3 piece Blue Complete  |
| 1  | men's Bath Robe Blue               |
| 1  | Ladies Swim suit 2 piece           |
| 1  | Neck tie                           |
| 4  | men's shirts                       |
| 2  | garters                            |
| 1  | Braces men's                       |
| 1  | pr. Ladies shoes                   |

Second Charge  
Sec 40  
Army Act

CONDUCT TO THE PREJUDICE OF GOOD ORDER AND  
MILITARY DISCIPLINE

in that he

at Halifax, N.S., 8th day May 1945 did take part in a disturbance in public place.

Merchandise held by Halifax Fortress

s.19(1)

No. [REDACTED] G., of the 19th A.A. Bty., 21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A.(CA) apprehended by F-13138 L/Cpl. MacDonald, E.P. #37 Provost Corps, Halifax, N.S. at 1845 hrs., at M.D. 6, Headquarters Halifax. Arrest being witnessed by F-30216 L/Cpl. Perry, A.W. #37 Provost Corps, Halifax, N.S. Taken into M.D. 6, H.Q. where an inventory was made of all goods in the possession of this soldier in the presence of Captain V.E. Hadland, H.Q., M.D. 6; and W-6371 Sgt. Hinkley, B.M., H.Q., M.D. 6 and W-40523 Cpl. Petruzelli, L., H.Q., M.D. 6. Remanded for Standing Court Martial.

The accused, [REDACTED] G., 19th A.A. Bty. 21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A.(CA), a G.S. Soldier of the Canadian Army placed on Active Service is charged with:

First Charge  
Sec 40  
Army Act

CONDUCT TO THE PREJUDICE OF GOOD ORDER AND  
MILITARY DISCIPLINE

in that he

at Halifax, N.S., 8th May 1945 was in improper possession of certain articles, as detailed below:-

- 2 small silver trays (leaf shaped)
- 2 salt & pepper shakers (silver)
- 5 costume jewellery rings
- 5 glasses in leather cases
- 2 silver sugar & cream sets
- 2 silver bowls with blue glass inset
- 4 Flat 50's of cigarettes
- 16 small pkgs. of cigarettes
- 1 leather glasses case
- 1 silver butter dish
- 1 leather key case
- 1 Men's wrist watch
- 1 tie pin
- 1 leather tobacco pouch
- 1 pr. tweezers
- 1 haversack containing four letters addressed to:  
Pte. Hope, L.M. - B144735, HQ 21st A.A. Regt.  
and two aerial photos.

Second Charge  
Sec 40  
Army Act

CONDUCT TO THE PREJUDICE OF GOOD ORDER AND  
MILITARY DISCIPLINE

in that he

at Halifax, N.S. 8th May 1945 did take part in a disturbance in public place.

Merchandise held at H.Q., M.D. 6 - Capt. V.E. Hadland

No. [REDACTED] I.D. of the 14th A.A. Bty.  
21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A. (CA), apprehended by P-4624  
L/Bdr. CAUDIO, J. of Halifax Fortress at 0730 hrs.  
9 May 1945 at entrance to South Barracks, arrest  
being witnessed by M-46537 Gnr. Lubeck, E.A., E.Q.  
Halifax Fortress. Soldier taken to H.Q. Halifax  
Fortress where an inventory was made of the goods in  
soldier's possession in the presence of K-74429 R.S.M.  
Green, J.M., E.Q. Halifax Fortress Remanded for Standing  
Court Martial.

The accused C-49603 Gnr. Hutton, M.D., 14th A.A. Bty.  
R.C.A., 21st A.A. Regiment, R.C.A. (CA) a G.S. soldier  
of the Canadian Army placed on Active Service is charged  
with:-

First Charge  
Sec 40  
Army Act

CONDUCT TO THE PREJUDICE OF GOOD ORDER AND  
MILITARY DISCIPLINE

in that he

at Halifax, N.S. 8th day May 1945 was in improper  
possession of certain articles as detailed below:-

|    |                                    |
|----|------------------------------------|
| 2  | qts. Scotch                        |
| 2  | Pints Scotch                       |
| 2  | Pkgs. Cigars                       |
| 25 | Pkgs "Minora" Blades               |
| 1  | Handkerchief                       |
| 2  | Grain leather tobacco pouches      |
| 2  | prs. Soles leather                 |
| 2  | men's suits 3 piece Brown Complete |
| 2  | men's suits 3 piece Blue Complete  |
| 1  | men's Bath Robe Blue               |
| 1  | Ladies Swim suit 2 piece           |
| 1  | Neck tie                           |
| 4  | men's shirts                       |
| 2  | garters                            |
| 1  | Braces men's                       |
| 1  | pr Ladies shoes                    |

Second Charge  
Sec 40  
Army Act

CONDUCT TO THE PREJUDICE OF GOOD ORDER AND  
MILITARY DISCIPLINE

in that he

at Halifax, N.S., 8th day May 1945 did take part  
in a disturbance in public place.

Merchandise held by Halifax Fortress



P 9 68 Wlw

[redacted] O., #6 E.S. & W. Company, R.C.E., was apprehended by Capt. G.H. Milne, District H.Q. on 9 May 45, at Wellington Barracks.

The accused No [redacted], a member of the Canadian Army, NRMA is charge with conduct to the prejudice of good order and military discipline in that he, at Halifax, N.S. on 8 May/45 was found to be improper of goods. (Sec.40 A.A.(2))

List of Goods Taken From Spr. LEDUC.

- 2 Pair Boots --Size 7 and 8.
- 1 Box Tobacco -- $\frac{1}{2}$  lb.
- 1 Coat.
- 2 Pair Boots --Black Low Ankle.
- 1 Pair Women's Shoes.
- 8 Pkgs. Tartan Cigarettes.
- 9 Cartons Parliament Blends.
- 1 Part Bottle Wine, - Jordan.
- 1 Bottle Booths Gin-Full.

A Summary of Evidence is being taken with which will be forwarded to O.C. #6 E.S.&W. Company, R.C.E., for action.

Sgd. Gilbert Morrison Capt. R.C.E.

P.10 E8 WW

[REDACTED]  
s.19(1)

At approximately 1000 hrs May 9/45 the under noted articles were voluntarily turned over by W 120639 Pte. REDHEAD, E.A. to Lieut. M.S. PATTERSON at Citadel Hill. Pte. REDHEAD, stated that these articles were given to her by the m/n soldiere.

- 1 Piece of Costume Jewellery shaped like a parrot, gold and red which had a tag on it marked \$3.00.
- 1 Piece Costume Jewellery crown shaped, gold with yellow and green glass marked "Brookfield Sterling" Value unknown but estimated to be approximately \$3.00.

The goods were confiscated, turned over to the Police Dept. and their receipt obtained. [REDACTED] was charged on May 12/45 with Conduct to the Prejudice of Good Order and Military Discipline in that he at Halifax, N.S on 8 May 45 was in improper possession of certain goods: (A.A. Sec. 40). [REDACTED] stated that these articles had been handed to him by an unknown sailor as he was walking on the street. G [REDACTED] also stated that because of the fact that he had been drinking, he did not realize his responsibilities or the seriousness of the situation, and that he had casually passed them on to Pt. REDHEAD with whom he is slightly acquainted.

[REDACTED] was awarded 14 days C.B. and 8 days F.O.P.

23-May-45

P.11 68 WW

I received two pieces of costume jewellery valued at approximately \$6.00 from Gnr. Stallard on V-E Day 8-May-45. When he gave them to me, he said they had been given to him by a sailor. I voluntarily returned them to Lieut. M. J. PATTERSON the following day.

Sgd. E. Redhead.

.....  
W 120639 Gnr. Redhead, E.A.

F-600114 Gnr. STEVENS, G.J.

The m/n of this Regiment was stopped by the Canadian Provost Corps at Dartmouth, N.S. during the V.E. Day riots in possession of the under-noted articles:-

1 white silk rabbit  
1 panda bear  
8 pkgs. cigarettes (mixed)  
6 large oranges  
Apples & candy.

2. The goods were confiscated, this Unit notified of the incident, and the man subsequently charged with: - "When on Active Service Breaking and entering in search of Plunder in that he at Halifax, N.S. on 8 May 45 broke into premises and entered in search of Plunder" (Sec 6(2) (d) A.A.) The soldier produced the attached letter and invoice to substantiate his claim that the goods were personal property. In view of the evidence the charge was dismissed.

P.13 Ex WW

May 12/45

TO WHOM IT MAY CONCERN:-

I, Mrs. G.W. Roscoe, Burnside,  
Halifax, N.S., gave G.J. Stevens the following items:-

- 1 white silk rabbit.
- 1 panda bear
- 1 Blue Chenille Bedspread
- 8 Pk Cigarettes ( Mixed )
- 6 Large oranges
- Apples and candy.

The rabbit and panda bear were prized on punch board, I have in store. I won them and gave them to G.J. Stevens for his children. The slip for the bedspread is in Mrs. W.M. Turple's name, she is my daughter and gave me the bedspread for Mother's Day. It wasn't the color I wanted so I gave it to my son G.J. Stevens. I have no slips for the rabbits and panda bear but can prove it came from this store and produce punch board. My store license is. No. 158687.

Signed by  
Helen Roscoe

/SMT

Compared with original and  
found to be a true copy.

Sgd. G.W. Webster Lieut.

G.W. Webster Lieut.

P.14 E8 WW

DARTMOUTH FURNISHERS LIMITED  
Dartmouth, N.S.

April 26th, 1945.

Mrs. W.M. Turple,  
Burnside, N.S.  
c/o Steven's Canteen

Clerk R.M.H.

| <u>Quan.</u> | <u>Description</u>                           | <u>Amount</u> |
|--------------|--|---------------|
| 1            | Chenille Spread W.R. Brock                   | 17.50         |
| 1            | Crib matting spring filled<br>Atlas Bedding. | 9.50          |
| 1            | Blanket Noal, Neinberg Bros.                 | 8.50          |
| 1            | Crib spread, Ideal                           | <u>3.50</u>   |
|              |  | 39.00         |

(Sent)

THIS ACCOUNT MUST BE PAID IN FULL BY THE 25TH DAY OF  
JUNE IN ACCORDANCE WITH WARTIME PRICES AND TRADE BOARD  
REGULATIONS.

Compared with original and  
found to be a true copy

Sgd. G.W. Webster Lt.

G.W. Webster Lieut.

/SMT

Signed by

Mrs. W. Turple.

EXHIBIT WW1

EXHIBIT WW1

V-E Day Disturbances

1. The following is approximately the number of Officers, and Other Ranks of Fortress Troops out of barracks, not on duty, in Halifax and Dartmouth at the following times:-

(a) 7 May 45

| <u>UNIT</u>       | <u>MORNING</u> |             | <u>AFTERNOON</u> |             | <u>EVENING</u> |             |
|-------------------|----------------|-------------|------------------|-------------|----------------|-------------|
|                   | <u>OFFRS</u>   | <u>OR's</u> | <u>OFFRS</u>     | <u>OR's</u> | <u>OFFRS</u>   | <u>OR's</u> |
| 21st A.A. Regt    | NIL            | NIL         | NIL              | NIL         | 26             | 202         |
| 1st (H) C.R.      | 3              | 38          | 3                | 38          | 3              | 38          |
| Regt De St. Hy.   | NIL            | NIL         | NIL              | NIL         | NIL            | 12          |
| 21 V.G. of C.     | -----          | -----       | -----            | -----       | -----          | -----       |
| 2 Sec. 6 Dis Sig. | NIL            | NIL         | NIL              | 17          | 2              | 2           |
| Fortress Engrs.   | NIL            | NIL         | 1                | 11          | 2              | 10          |

(b) 8 May 45

| <u>UNIT</u>       | <u>MORNING</u> |             | <u>AFTERNOON</u> |             | <u>EVENING</u> |             |
|-------------------|----------------|-------------|------------------|-------------|----------------|-------------|
|                   | <u>OFFRS</u>   | <u>OR's</u> | <u>OFFRS</u>     | <u>OR's</u> | <u>OFFRS</u>   | <u>OR's</u> |
| 21 AA Regt.       | NIL            | NIL         | 25               | 244         | 12             | 253         |
| 1st (H) C.R.      | 4              | 40          | 4                | 40          | 4              | 40          |
| Regt. de St. Hy.  | NIL            | NIL         | NIL              | 137         | NIL            | NIL         |
| 2 Sec. 6 Dis. Sig | NIL            | 7           | 2                | 37          | NIL            | NIL         |
| 21 V.G. of C.     | -----          | -----       | -----            | -----       | -----          | -----       |
| Fortress Engrs.   | NIL            | NIL         | 1                | 14          | NIL            | 15          |

Sgd. E.P. Flowers.

(E.P. FLOWERS) Lt.-Col.  
A/Commandant - Halifax Fortress.

EXHIBIT XX  
STATEMENT

V-E DAY DISTURBANCES  
Confinement of Troops to Barracks

Attached hereto is a certified true copy of a message received from H.Q., M.D. 6.

2. I was duty officer at H.Q., Halifax Fortress during the night of 8/9 May. I received this message by phone, from H.Q., M.D. 6 at approximately 2345 hrs. 8 May 45. I immediately had the message relayed to all Units of Halifax Fortress, and the time of origin at this H.Q. was 090004.

3. The confirmation of the message from H.Q., M.D. 6 was received at this H.Q. at 0930 hrs. 9 May 45.

RJB/CM

Sgd. R.J. Butts.  
(R.J. BUTTS) Capt.,  
Staff Captain,  
Halifax Fortress.



P.2 EXHIBIT XX

C O P Y

M E S S A G E

CONFIRMATION

HS/150-1-2 (AQ)

COMMANDER HALIFAX FORTRESS  
OC NO SIX DISTRICT DEEOT  
OC A-23 C & A A A T C  
OC NO 6 DIST COY RC SIGS  
OC EMBARKATION TRANSIT UNIT  
OC AA REINF CAMP BEDFORD  
BARRACK MASTER NEW WELLINGTON BKS  
OC NO SIX VTS  
OC NO 10 ADM UNIT CWAC  
OC NO 17 ADM UNIT CWAC  
OC NO 106 DEPOT COY CWAC  
OC 36 (RES) EDE GP  
OC NO 6 EX & W COY RCE  
OC NO 6 COY RCASC  
OC NO 6 COY ROOC  
OC NO 6 COY RCME  
OC NO 1 PORT COY RCASC  
OC NO 26 COY CDC)  
OC NO 36 COY DDD) DDO  
OC NO 50 COY CDC)  
DISTRICT MEDICAL OFFICER  
DISTRICT DENTAL OFFICER  
DISTRICT PAYMASTER  
GOSWELL ST HOSPITAL

I M P O R T A N T

O 782 N LEAVE TO BE GRANTED TROOPS STOP ALL TROOPS TO BE  
ON DUTY OR CONFINED TO BARRACKS UNTIL FURTHER ORDERS

COMMANDING SIX

HALIFAX NS  
082335 P HRS MAY 45.

EXHIBIT XX I

F.H.Q. 5-4

H.Q. Halifax Fortress,  
Halifax, N. S., 15 May 45.

Headquarters,  
Military District No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S. .

V-E DAY DISTURBANCES

Attached hereto as appendices, are reports from  
the following Units in Halifax Fortress Area:

- Appendix A - 1st (H) Cst. Regt., RCA
- Appendix B - 21st A.A. Regt., RCA
- Appendix C - Fortress Detachment, RCE
- Appendix D - No. 2 Sec. 6 Dist. Signals
- Appendix E - Le Regt de St. Hyacinthe
- Appendix F - No. 21 Coy., V.G. of C.

2. Statements are also attached from Fortress  
Duty Officers.

3. Several individual cases have been reported, of  
personnel being found in possession of merchandise from the  
local stores, and disciplinary action is being taken by the  
Unit Commanders.

4. Some articles of clothing have been handed in, at  
this H.Q., which were found on the streets in close proximity  
to this H.Q. These articles have been handed over to the  
Halifax City Police, and receipts obtained for same. No  
merchandise was found in possession of any Fortress H.Q.  
personnel.

(E.P. FIDWERS) Lt.-Col.,  
A/Commander-Halifax Fortress.

/CM

C.R. 5-4-0

"A"

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

York Redoubt,  
14 May 1945.

Headquarters,  
Halifax Fortress,  
R.A. Park.

V.E. Day Activities

Re your A.9142 d/13 May 45 on m/n .

2. Cessation of hostilities in Europe was officially announced at approximately 1100 hrs Monday 7 May 45. On receiving this word, a holiday, similar to Xmas, was proclaimed for the Regiment.
3. The a/m holiday meant normal manning would be carried out but otherwise, as much as possible would be carried over to later date.
4. On receipt of word of V.E. day, all ranks were summoned to the parade ground and informed of the matter and also of holiday. A great number, attended a short voluntary service, in the recreation hall, which was conducted by the Padre.
5. After the above the canteen was opened until approximately 1330P hrs. It was then closed until 1700P hrs when it opened until 1930 hrs. It then closed as a movie was starting in the recreation hall.
6. Tuesday morning was mostly spent in sport - baseball - horseshoes - volley ball, etc. Tuesday afternoon was mostly spent by groups lying around in the sun.
7. The Regimental Band was sent to Halifax at 0800 hrs 8 May 45 to assist in the V.E. celebration. They were returned to York at approximately 2200P hrs.
8. At approximately 1800hrs 8 May 45 a request was received to send to Halifax and try and find the few men we had on pass and have them return to their barracks. One officer and six W.O.'s & Sgts. were immediately detailed for this duty.
9. Shortly after they had left an order was received from F.H.Q. to send all available officers & O.R.'s to Halifax and have them report at Provost H.Q. Eight officers and fifty three O.R.'s. embussed for Halifax.
10. This detachment was divided into three groups and sent to guard or patrol C.W.A.C. Bks. (Wellington), Olands Brewery, and Pier 27. The last patrol was relieved at about 0430P hrs. 9 May 45.
11. Since then a nightly guard of one Officer and twenty five O.R.'s (armed) has been supplied for Melville Island.
12. All personnel, with exception of two A.W.L.'s who were on pass, were returned to their posts on night of 8 May 45 and searched, at the guard house. No loot or plunder was found.
13. Starting 9 May 45 all personnel of the Regt. were C.B. until afternoon of 11 May 45.

-2-

14. No trouble, disturbances or any sign of lawlessness was evident either in or out of the forts by members of the Regiment.

(A.C. Sinclair) Major,  
O.C. 1st Halifax Coast Regt., R.C.A.

ACS/md

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

52nd. Coast Bty., RCA,  
Fort McNab, Halifax, N. S.

13 May 1945.

Officer Commanding,  
1st (H) Coast Regt., RCA,  
York Redoubt, Halifax, N. S .

Reference Q 533 d/13 1215 P the following is  
submitted.

- May 7th - Usual training and fatigues carried on.
- May 8th - V-E Day holiday except for operational duties  
and necessary fatigues. Celebration very quiet,  
small quantity of beer available. No breaches  
of discipline.
- May 9th - Training, fatigues and operational duties -  
No passes - muster parade held at 1200 hrs -  
Report submitted by phone.
- May 10th Training, fatigues and operational duties.  
No passes.
- May 11th Training, fatigues and aoperational duties.  
Confinement to barracks cancelled.
- May 12th Training, fatigues and operational duties as  
well as T.O.E.T.
- May 13th Normal Sunday routine.  
No breaches of discipline.  
No events of special interest.  
No merchandise recovered.

As far as can be discovered at time of writing  
no member of 52nd Coast Battery were involved in  
the disturbances in Halifax.

(C.J. MacDonald) Major,  
Officer Commanding 52nd. Coast  
Battery, RCA

A.A.S. 6-2-4

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- A R M Y -

H.Q. 21 A.A. Regt., R.C.A.  
Halifax, N. S., 14 May 45.

Commander,  
Halifax Fortress,  
Halifax, N. S.

V.E. DISTURBANCES

Reference Message A-9142 d/13 May 45, re the m/n .

2. Herewith in triplicate log of events in which the personnel of this Regiment participated.

8 May 45 At 1745 hours all Officers called to R.H.Q. and were ordered to circulate through downtown streets and asked to persuade Army personnel to return to barracks at once. No particular opposition was encountered with the soldiers.

15 Officers and 120 men were supplied from the Regiment to the Canadian Provost Corps. This personnel remained with the Provost until 0300 hours 9 May 45.

9 May 45 All passes in Regiment cancelled. Two (2) Other Ranks carrying what appeared to be plunder were stopped by Provost Corps. A quantity of merchandise was found around the grounds of R.A. Park and South Barracks and at the Citadel. This was turned over to the City Police.- receipt being obtained for same. For list of merchandise see Appendix 8. 300 men and 12 Officers ordered to stand by for assistance to Provost Corps. At 1450 hours 100 men were requested for immediate despatch to Oland's Brewery and 200 men to Cold Storage Plant. At 1830 hours 50 men were ordered (1 from 4th Bty and 1 from 14th Bty) given 6 months each in County jail.

10 May 45 At 0100 hours 240 men were withdrawn from Cold Storage Plant, Oland's Brewery and from the Liquor Commission. The balance, approx 110 men were withdrawn at 0600 hrs.

At 1900 hours 100 men were sent out to Oland's Brewery 100 to Cold Storage Plant, and 60 to the Liquor Commission H.Q. on Buckingham St. No disturbances were reported during the night.

11 May 45 At 0030 hours 200 men were withdrawn out, the balance at 0600 hours. Six Office cases to-day - personnel found in possession of what appeared to be loot.

at 1900 hours 100 men were sent to Oland's Brewery  
100 men were sent to Cold Storage Plant  
60 men were sent to Liquor Commission.

12 May 45 At 0100 hours. - 200 men were withdrawn and the balance at 0600 hours. No disturbances were reported during the night.

At 1900 hours 100 men were despatched to Oland's  
100 men were despatched to Cold Storage  
50 men were despatched to Liquor Comm.

13 May 45 At 0100 hours - 200 men were sent back to their Units and the balance at 0600 hours. No disturbances reported during the night.

At 1900 hours - 20 men were sent to Oland's Brewery.  
20 men were sent to Cold Storage Plant.  
10 men were sent to Liquor Commission.

14 May 45 All personnel withdrawn and sent back to Units at 0100 hours.

3. Please find attached in triplicate appendices 1 to 7 covering reports from Sub-Units.

(G.L. KENT) Lt.-Col.,  
Commanding Officer,  
21 A.A. Regt., R.C.A.

/as  
encls.

"APPENDIX I"

EVENTS ON CITADEL HILL 7 MAY 45 TO 12 MAY 45 INCLUSIVE

MONDAY 7 MAY 45

At approximately 1100 hrs. the report came over the radio that the Germans had surrendered unconditionally to the Allies. Preparations commenced to provide suitable entertainment for personnel quartered on Citadel Hill. Although the normal quota of passes were allowed, few left the hill because of the entertainment provided. Instructions were issued to the Guard that no visitors were allowed unless accompanied by a person quartered on the Hill. Although a very large crowd gathered on the slopes of the Hill to witness the Fireworks, no unauthorized persons entered and there was no trouble.

TUESDAY 8 MAY 45

Instructions were received that adequate Guards and Staff were to be kept on duty for normal purposes and that otherwise, Sunday routine was to be followed. One Officer and two Other Ranks were put on duty at A.A.O.R. and the Guard of five men plus the Guard Commander was given instructions to prevent anyone from entering the Gate unless quartered on the Hill. No visitors were allowed. During the day there were no disturbances, despite the large number of people attending services on the Commons. At approximately 1800 hrs. first reports of serious disturbances arrived. Lt. Patterson immediately confined all C.W.A.C. personnel to Barracks, and all other Officers reported to R.H.Q. for instructions. Lt. F.H. Coldham and Lt. T.L.B. O'Neill were sent to the N.S. Liquor Commission on duty. Lt. R.V. Chadwick returned to his duties on Citadel Hill. It was understood that all personnel of the Regiment were to be instructed to return to Citadel Hill to await transportation to their respective Units. Consequently the Guard Commander was instructed to double the Guards on duty. All Canteens were closed. Guests on the Hill were instructed to leave, including a number of sailors who had been given supper in the Men's Mess Hall. Arrangements were made to move the C.W.A.C. Personnel to the A.A.O.R. Operations Building if trouble occurred. Personnel of the Regiment commenced arriving soon after 1800 hrs. During the evening discipline was good considering the circumstances. Three men who were potential trouble makers were put in the Guard House for the night.

WEDNESDAY 9 MAY 45

At approximately 0800 hrs two men were released sober and returned to their Units. At 1000 hrs. a third man was likewise released. A double Guard was maintained at the Gate with instructions to permit no one in or out except with passes showing that they were proceeding on duty. All personnel were confined to Barracks. Otherwise normal routine continued. Instructions were received to hold Kit Inspections, and these were held at 1730 hrs. with NIL results reported. At 1800 hrs. the Guard was changed and increased to 12 men plus a Sgt. in charge.

At 1800 hrs. four guards were posted at the gate and the remainder stationed on the ramparts as lookouts. At 0200 hrs. 10 May 45, those Guards on the ramparts were withdrawn. During the afternoon four ~~garrison~~ Officers and fifty-six O.R.'s of the Provost Corps arrived from Camp Borden and were quartered on Citadel Hill. There were no disturbances.



-2-

THURSDAY 10 MAY 45

Normal routine continued. Personnel still confined to Barracks. Guard of two men was maintained at the Gate with instructions to allow no one in or out except with passes showing that they were proceeding on duty. At 1800 hrs. the Guard was reduced to four men plus a Sgt. in charge. Two Guards were posted at the Gate and two on the ramparts as lookouts at 2000 hrs. At midnight those Guards on the ramparts were withdrawn.

FRIDAY 11 MAY 45

Normal routine. Personnel still confined to barracks. Guard of four men plus Sgt. continued. At night one Guard was posted at the Gate (Normal Measures).

SATURDAY 12 MAY 45

Normal routine. Male personnel allowed out until 2130hrs. C.W.A.C. Personnel allowed out until 2330 hrs. as per C.W.A.C. Instructions.

NOTE:

On Saturday 5 MAY 45, as a precaution, the O.C. Citadel Hill contacted Lt. Brown of the Provost Corps and arranged with him that two men be sent to Citadel Hill when the announcement of Victory was made. Two men reported at approximately 1130 hrs. 7 May 45, and were returned to their Unit as they were not then required. Lt. Brown was again contacted at 1130 hrs. 7 May 45, and it was arranged that men would be despatched to the O.C. Citadel Hill if required on 8 May 45. This assistance was not required.

"APPENDIX II"

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

- A R M Y -

1st. A.A. BTY., R.C.A.

Headquarters,  
Dartmouth, N. S.,  
13 May 45.

Commanding Officer,  
21st A.A. Regt., F.C.A.,  
Halifax, N. S.

LOG OF EVENTS 7 MAY 1945.  
V E DAY DISTURBANCES

Reference Message Q 1441 of 13 1210 P Hrs.

2. Submit herewith in triplicate, synoptic log of events in which Troops of this Unit were engaged from 7 May 45 until the present date.

Before listing log of events it might be as well to explain that two gun detachments, a predictor detachment, a H. & R.F. detachment and a radar detachment plus a few employed personnel totalling in all 2 Officers and 43 O.R.'s. were attached to A23 Training Centre as a "Firing Unit" from "A" Troop of this Battery. They were attached to A23 for rations and quarters on 5 MAY 45 for firing practice, but have since been used by A23 Training Centre as part of thier personnel in any patrol or picquet detail that they had to carry out, and will be referred to in this report as "personnel attached to A23 T.C."

Monday 7 May 45

All personnel of this Unit and all personnel attached to A23 T.C. were confined to Barracks to celebrate Victory of the Allied Nations over Germany.

Tuesday 8 May 45

A quiet day on the gun sites. A few personnel allowed on pass from each site - mostly married personnel with wives and families in Halifax or Dartmouth.

1800 Hrs

All Officers except one per site, summoned to R.H.Q. for duty in attempts to quiet VE Day Riots.

Men of this Unit held in readiness at Morris Lake and Russell Lake for duty in Dartmouth should such prove necessary.

All Officers on duty until 0330 Hours 9 May 45.

Wednesday 9 May 45

0900 Hours

Kit Inspections held - no loot found at either site.  
2 Men A.W.L.

1500 Hours

2 Officers and 60 Men called out for picquet and guard duty at Cold Storage Plant, Halifax, N. S. This party was on duty until 0300 hrs. next morning.

-2-

Wednesday 9 May 45 cont'd

1530 hrs.

1 Officer and 20 men called out for picquet duty at H.Q. N.S. Liquor Commission. This party was on duty until 0700 hrs. the following morning.

2 Officers and 37 men - "Attached to A23 TC" on picquet duty and patrol duty in Dartmouth.

Thursday 10 May 45

0900 Hrs One absentee returned from A.W.L.  
One absentee returned by Provost - had been picked up - carrying loot (presumed loot) - charged under A.A. Sec. 6 (2) (d) and remanded.

1800 Hrs.

1 Officer and 40 O.R.'s reported for duty to Cold Storage Plant, Halifax, N. S. 50% relieved at midnight - remainder at 0600 Hrs. following day.

15 O.R.'s. attached to A23 T.C. on guard and Picquet duty in Town of Dartmouth until 2359 hours.  
40 O.R.'s. held standing by as a reserve, ready for use if needed.

FRIDAY 11 May 45

1900 Hrs. 1 Officer and 40 O.R.'s. reported to Cold Storage Plant, Halifax, N. S. for duty. 50% relieved at midnight - remainder relieved at 0600 Hrs. following day.

12 O.R.'s attached to A23 T.C. reported for duty in Town of Dartmouth.

40 Other Ranks held standing by as a reserve, ready if necessary.

Saturday 12 MAY 45

1900 Hrs. 1 Officer and 50 O.R.'s reported for guard duty at Oland's Brewery. Relieved at 2359 Hrs. Other personnel not on this detail allowed passes until 2130 Hrs. so that remainder of Bty. personnel would be available as a reserve if necessary.

Sunday 13 May 45

1900 Hrs.

1 Officer and 10 O.R.'s. reported to H.Q. N.S. Liquor Commission, Halifax, N. S. for all night duty. 20 men kept at Bty. H.Q. as a reserve.

3. No events of special interest can be reported. As this Unit is located in Dartmouth and was not called into Dartmouth on Tuesday night no first hand information is available about any events of special interest.

4. For your information, please.

(R.G. Hattie) Major,  
Commanding,  
1st. A.A. Bty., RCA.

RGH/SSV

G.J.S. 1-0

SECRET

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

4th A.A. Bty., (3L), R.C.A.,  
Imperial, N.S. 13 May 45.

O.C.,  
21st A.A. Regt., RCA,  
R.A. Park,  
Halifax, N. S.

REPORT OF TROOP ACTIVITIES  
V-E Day Riots

Herewith report as requested in R.H.Q. message  
Q-1441 d/13 May 45 as follows.

2. (a) At 1730 hrs on the 8 May 45 all Battery Officers with the exception of one to remain on duty at B.H.Q. proceeded to R.H.Q. on orders of the C.O. Lieut-Col. G.L. Kent E.D. to assist in any manner detailed. Two Officers were detailed to proceed to the N.S.L.C. Bonded Warehouse in the Cold Storage Building for duty with troops on duty there. The remaining Officers stood by at R.H.Q. At approximately 2300 hrs Unit Officers were instructed to proceed back to quarters. No troops of this Unit were on this detail.

(b) On the 9 May 45, two Officers and Forty O.R's proceeded to the cold storage for guard duty, reporting at 1900 hrs and being dismissed at 0130 hrs 10 May 45.

(c) On the 10 May 45 and 11 May 45, one Officer and Forty O.R's proceeded to the cold storage for guard duty, reporting at 1900 hrs and being dismissed at approximately 0100 hrs.

(d) On the 12 May 45, one Officer and fifty O.R's proceeded to the cold storage for guard duty, reporting at 1900 hrs. At approximately 0030 hrs 13 May 45, the Officer and thirty O.R's were dismissed and sent back to the Unit. Twenty O.R's were retained until approximately 0700 hrs.

(e) On the 13 May 45 one Officer and ten O.R's proceeded to Oland's Brewery for guard duty, reporting at 1900 hrs. At the time of making this report this detail has not returned to the Unit.

3. There was only one breach of discipline. One Bdr. Marshall, G.S. attached to A-23 T.C. on course was awarded six months confinement by the civil authorities for property damage (breaking window).

4. As far as is known, no merchandise was pilfered by members of this Unit and none recovered.

(J.M. Gardner) E.D. Major,  
Officer Commanding,  
4th A.A. Bty., (3L), R.C.A.

JMG/LG

AS 6-0

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- A R M Y -

13 May 45,

14th. A.A. Bty.,  
Halifax, N. S.

Headquarters,  
21st A.A. Regt., RCA,  
Halifax, N. S.

LOG OF EVENTS

Reference your message Q 1441 d/13 May 45, concerning  
14th. A.A. Bty., RCA, over period 7 to 13 May 45, inclusive.

2. Re the m/n is hereby submitted.

3.

| <u>DATE</u> | <u>NO OF MEN<br/>ON PASS</u> | <u>BREACH OF DISCIPLINE<br/>NO CHARGE</u> | <u>OR'S</u> | <u>DUTY<br/>OFFICERS</u> |
|-------------|------------------------------|---|-------------|--------------------------|
| 7 May       | 6                            | N11                                       | N11         | N11                      |
| 8 "         | 9                            | 2   |             |                          |
|             |                              | 1   |             | 4                        |
| 9 "         | N11                          | N11                                       | N11         | N11                      |
| 10 "        | N11                          | N11                                       | 29          | 1                        |
| 11 "        | N11                          | N11                                       | 29          | 1                        |
| 12 "        | N11                          | N11                                       | N11         | N11                      |
| 13 "        | N11                          | N11                                       | N11         | N11                      |

4. Quantity of Merchandise recovered - N11.

5. Events of special interest. - N11.

6. For your information, please.

for

(R.J. Kelly) Major,  
O.C., 14th A.A. Bty., RCA

"APPENDIX V"

18 AA 3-0  
DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
A R M Y

18 th H.A.A. Bty., R.C.A.,  
Halifax, N. S., 13 May 45.

Commanding, Officer,  
21 AA Regt., R.C.A.,  
Halifax, N. S.

s.19(1)

SYNOPTIC LOG 7 May - 13 May 45

GUARDS

7 May 45 Nil  
8 May 45 All Officers less one from each sites (2) reported to R.H.Q. at 1800 hrs and were placed at the disposal of the Provost Corps.  
40 men were transported to Provost Barracks at approximately 1900 hrs for guard detail.  
9 May 45 75 men and 3 Officers detailed for immediate guard duty at 1500 hrs.  
Of these one Officer and 25 men were sent to the Cold Storage Plant.  
2 Officers and 50 men to Oland's Brewery.  
Guards were maintained till 0200 hrs when all but 20 men and one Officer at Olands Brewery, returned to Camp. The remaining 20 returned at 0700 hrs.  
10 May 45 10 May 45.  
20 men and one Officer despatched to the Head Officer of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission at 1900 hrs.  
20 men and one Officer despatched to Oland's Brewery at 1900 hrs. All guards returned to Camp by 0100 hrs.  
11 May 45 50 men and one Officer posted to duty at the Cold Storage Plant at 1900 hrs.  
12 May 45 40 men and one Officer posted to duty at Cold Storage Plant at 1900 hrs.  
13 May 45 10 men and one Officer posted to duty at Cold Storage Plant at 1900 hrs.

BREACHES OF DISCIPLINE

9 May 45 Absent Without Leave:-

0800 hrs to 1500 hrs  
0800 hrs to 1500 hrs  
0800 hrs to 2359 hrs  
0800 hrs to 2000 hrs  
1000 hrs to 1200 hrs 10th.

Conduct to the Prejudice of Good Order:-

IN THAT they at Oland's Brewery, on 9 May 45, became unfit for duty by reason of indulgence in alcoholic stimulants

QUANTITIES OF MERCHANDISES RECOVERED

NIL

POINTS OF SPECIAL INTEREST

NIL

(W.J. MC LEAN) Major,  
Officer Commanding,  
18 th H.A.A. Bty., R.C000747

"APPENDIX VI"

N.6-0

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
A R M Y

19 A.A. Battery, R.C.A.,  
Halifax, N.S., 14 May 45.

Headquarters,  
21 A.A. Regiment, RCA,  
Halifax, N. S.

Synoptic Log of Events  
19 A.A. Battery R.C.A.  
Commission investigating  
V.E. Day disturbances.

Reference Message Q.1441 dated 13 May 45.

GENERAL REMARKS

- (a) From 8 May 45 to 12 May 45 inclusive no personnel of this Unit were permitted to proceed on pass and this order was strictly adhered to.
- (b) Throughout the entire week the conduct of all personnel with the Unit was exemplary and all ranks displayed keen enthusiasm for the responsibility of duties to which they were allotted.
- (c) No difficulty was experienced in respect to discipline with any member of the Unit as a whole with the exception of two men who were apprehended by the Canadian Provost Corps (See Appendix "A") and a list of the loot is on record at Regimental Headquarters.
- (d) Personnel of "A" and "B" Troops were interchanged to facilitate the carrying out of guard duties assigned to them in Halifax due to the m/n disturbance.
- (e) Normal duties were carried out and a number of personnel were held in reserve each day for any eventuality that might arise.
- (f) Attached herewith Appendix "A" and "B" which represents the report of each troop of this Unit.

(G.H. Johnson) Major,  
Commanding,  
19 A.A. Battery, RCA.

APPENDIX "B"

19 A.A. Battery R.C.A.,  
Navy Island Cove,  
13 May 45.

Synoptic Log of Events in which  
troops were engaged from 7 May  
45 to 13 May 45

Monday 7 May 45.

Normal Camp Routine.

20 Passes issued but only 10 men left camp.

Tuesday 8 May 45

Regimental Commander's Proclamation of  
V.E. Day read to the men.

15 passes issued but only 4 men left camp.

All these returned to camp by curfew, except  
one who worked for the Provost Corps.

Wednesday 9 May 45

25 men went to Halifax to Citadel Hill to  
clean up. They returned at 1600 hrs.

30 men on guard duty - 10 men at Prince's  
Lodge and the remaining 20 guarded at the  
Main Office of the Liquor Commission. These  
30 men returned from duty at 0230 hrs 10 May 45.

A kit inspection was carried out on the site but  
no loot was discovered. All personnel were confined  
to barracks.

Thursday 10 May 45

15 men on coal detail at RCASC in Halifax until 1600 hrs  
20 men at Prince's Lodge doing Guard duty from 1800 hrs  
until 0200 hrs 11 May 45.

Friday 11 May 45

20 men on Guard duty: 10 at Prince's Lodge  
10 at Oland's Brewery in Halifax.  
All returned at 0330 hrs 12 May 45.

Saturday 12 May 45

15 men on coal detail to RCASC in Halifax until  
1600 hrs. 20 men on guard duty - 10 men at Prince's  
Lodge and 10 at Oland's Brewery. These men returned  
at 0630 hrs 13 May 45.

Sunday 13 May 45

10 men proceeding to guard at Oland's Brewery in Halifax.

Among personnel on this Site there was no breach of  
discipline. No personnel from this site were in possession  
of any loot whatsoever.

(D.W. Williams) Lieut.,  
Troop Commander,  
Navy Island Cove.



"APPENDIX VII"

A3L.5-9  
DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -  
H.Q. 146th A.A. Bty. (3L) R.C.A.

Halifax, N. S. ..  
14 May 45.

Commanding Officer,  
21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A.,  
Halifax, N. S.

LOG OF EVENTS

Reference your telephone message Q-1441, d/13

May 45.

- May 7 1 Officer, 1 Sergeant & 4 Gunners training on 18 Pdr as a saluting Battery.  
1 N.C.O. and 6 Gunners at 12 sites in the Unit.
- May 8 Saluting Bty standing by waiting for orders to fire salute. Fifteen other Ranks on Drumhead Service on South Common. Guards and Fire Picquet at each site.
- May 9 3 Officers, 12 N.C.O.'s & 72 Gunners, employed as guards and fire picquet at the sites in the Bty. Two officers and sixty other ranks were detailed as a guard at the Cold Storage Plant. Fifty per cent were relieved at 0100 hrs. on 10 May 45.
- May 10 Three Officers, 12 N.C.O.'s and 72 Gunners: Guard & Picquet at sites.  
One Officer and fifty other ranks on guard at Oland Brewery. Ten gunners remained on Duty until 0600 hrs 11 May 45. Remainder returned to Unit at 0100 hrs, 11 May 45.
- May 11 Three Officers, 12 N.C.O.'s & 72 Gunners: Guard and Picquet at sites.  
One Officer and fifty other ranks at the head Office of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission.
- May 12 Same as May 11th 1945.
- May 13 Three Officers, 12 N.C.O.'s & 72 Gunners: Guard & Picquet at sites.  
One Officer and ten Other Ranks at Oland's Brewery, with twenty other ranks standing by at the sites.

During the period from 7th May to 13th May there were no breaches of discipline.

A complete kit inspection of this Unit took place on May 9th by the O.C. at Bty. Headquarters and by Troop Commanders at their various sites. The only articles that were turned in were three Ladies Handbags and one box of Handkerchiefs which were found on the O.C.'s desk when he came into his office during the morning. These were handed over to Inspector Baker at the Halifax Police Station, and a receipt obtained for the same.

All personnel of this Unit have been confined to barracks from 9th May 45 until 12th May when anyone who were not on duty was allowed out until 2130 hrs. Only five other ranks were allowed out on pass per troop for this period.

(F.J. IRWIN) Major,  
Officer Commanding,

000750

INVENTORY OF MERCHANDISE RE-CLAIMED BY THE  
21 ST A.A. REGT., R.C.A.

- 19 - Pkgs. of Tobacco
- 5 - Pkgs. of Snuff
- 1 - Sterling Silver Woman's Brush
- 3 - Piece Costume Jewellery, Red Plastic
- 56 - Packs Playing Cards
- 1 - pr. Fleece lined boots size 9.
- 2½ - pr. maroon cloth bedroom slippers  
marked with the No. 588 and the sizes.
- 1 - Pr. Brown leather shoes marked WB. Limited  
Custom Grade with No. WPTB 12415 C/D 100  
2552 J11.
- 1 - Blue Dress with Hanger
- 1 - Red Dress with Hanger
- 4 - Black leather Purses @ .44 each
- 27 - "Welgromm" and "Nobility" packet combs.
- 3 - Spools thread
- 1 - "Southwood" Pipe  
Assorted Shoe Laces
- 1 - Razor Strap Imperial Guedege 120
- 1 - Blue Tie, British Cravat
- 1 - Candelabra (Silver Color)
- 3 - Wood Boxes @\$1.09 each
- 1 - Grey Shirt - "Bonnie Kay"
- 2 - Pr. Cloth Gloves @ \$1.00
- 1 - package 50 Craven "A" Cigarettes
- 2 - Sets Corporal Stripes
- 2 - Sets Sgt. Stripes
- 1 - pr. police suspenders
- 1 - Leather Belt
- 1 - Woman's Coat - Red - Size 16
- 1 - Woman's sweater - Size 20 Green
- 1 - Pr. Ladies Black Leather Gloves
- 1 - Woman's Dress - Size 13 Yellow
- 6 - Men Dress shirts
- 1 - Desk Drawer

Received by.....

Sgd. F.A. Morrow,  
Halifax Police Dept.

000751

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

A.A.S. 6-2-4

H.A. 21 AA REGT RCA  
Halifax, N. S.  
4 May 45.

ALL BATTERY COMDS, 21 AA Regt RCA

ALL TROOP COMDS, 21 AA Regt, RCA

INSTRUCTIONS ON PROCLAMATION OF V.E. DAY

Enclosed herewith as per distribution list below, copies of Telephone Message I-1408 transmitted to all Battery and Troop Commanders, for the information and guidance of all concerned.

2. The text of the message is as follows:-

"UPON THE OFFICIAL ANNOUNCEMENT OF VICTORY IN EUROPE, ALL TROOPS WILL FALL IN ON PARADE, AT ONCE, AND THE FOLLOWING ANNOUNCEMENTS WILL BE MADE:

- (1) THE PROCLAMATION OF VICTORY, AND THE EFFECTIVE TIME.
- (2) THIS OCCASION MARKS THE END OF ORGANIZED HOSTILITIES IN EUROPE AND THE FINAL DEFEAT OF GERMANY. THIS HAS BEEN ACCOMPLISHED AFTER FIVE YEARS AND EIGHT MONTHS OF CEASELESS EFFORTS AND SACRIFICE BY THE ARMED FORCES OF THE ALLIED NATIONS.

THIS IS A DAY TO BE CELEBRATED BY ALL FREE NATIONS IN THE WORLD, AND A TIME TO FEEL THANKFUL THAT THE JOB HAS BEEN SO WELL DONE.

WE, IN THIS REGIMENT, MUST FEEL A GREAT PRIDE IN THE ACHIEVEMENTS OF OUR COMRADES IN ARMS WHO HAVE MET AND BEATEN THE ENEMY IN THE FIELDD OF BATTLE.

WE MAY ALSO FEEL THAT WE HAVE A SHARE IN THE FINAL VICTORY AND TAKE PRIDE IN HAVING DONE WELL THE JOB THAT HAS BEEN ALLOTTED TO US IN HIS MAJESTY'S SERVICE.

THIS REGIMENT HAS BEEN ORGANIZED READY TO FIGHT FOR OVER TWO AND ONE HALF YEARS AND HAS MAINTAINED THE HIGH TRADITIONS OF THE ROYAL CANADIAN ARTILLERY. ALTHOUGH NOT NOW OPERATIONAL, THERE WILL BE NO LET DOWN IN GOOD DISCIPLINE AND SOLDIERLY CONDUCT. YOU ARE STILL GUNNERS.

THE REGIMENTAL COMMANDER EXTENDS HIS COMPLIMENTS TO ALL RANKS ON THE HIGH STANDARDS THAT HAVE BEEN MAINTAINED, AND APPRECIATES THE LOYALTY, COOPERATION AND SPIRIT OF GOOD SERVICE OF ALL IN THIS REGIMENT."

(G.L. KENT) Lt.-Col.,  
COMMANDING OFFICER,  
21 AA REGT RCA

/WFH

DISTRIBUTION LIST:

|                    |             |
|--------------------|-------------|
| RHQ 21 AA Regt RCA | (3 copies)  |
| No. 1 AA OR RCA    | (3 copies)  |
| 1 AA Bty RCA       | (5 copies)  |
| 4 AA Bty RCA       | (10 copies) |
| 14 AA Bty RCA      | (3 copies)  |
| 18 AA Bty RCA      | (5 copies)  |
| 19 AA Bty RCA      | (5 copies)  |
| 146 AA Bty RCA     | (10 copies) |

Halifax, N.S., <sup>5-0</sup>14 May 45.

Officer Commanding,  
No. 6 E.S. & W. Coy., RCE,  
Halifax, N. S.

V-E DAY ACTIVITIES  
Halifax Fortress Detachment, RCE

News of unconditional surrender of German Forces was received at Detachment H.Q. at approximately 0930 hrs 7 May 45. Immediately this news was relayed by phone to Detachment Outposts, and troops were instructed to cease regular duties and, Officers and N.C.O. i/c were instructed to detail sufficient personnel to assure themselves regular maintenance duties were carried out.

2. Lieut. Fowlie, Fortress B.D. Officer, was detailed to set off daytime fireworks at conclusion of Drum Head Ceremony on Citadel Hill, on official V-E day. He therefore, with assistance of his B.D. Sgt. proceeded to recon positions of firing and direction. In addition Tradesmen Carpenters were detailed to make signs for use at the Drum Head Ceremony.

3. On official V-E Day suitable personnel were detailed to maintenance duties, in addition the B.D. Officer and 7 N.C.O.'s carried out their duties of setting off daytime fireworks at conclusion of Drum Head Ceremony.

4. At the height of V-E Day disturbances Fortress Headquarters called on their Officers, (which included Engineer Officers) and detailed them to patrol the streets, and assist in controlling army personnel. This duty the Officers carried out, and in addition the O.C. Detachment detailed approximately 12 O.R.'s to assist in guarding cold storage at Pier 27, under direction of Provost Corps.

5. No incidents of misbehavior occurred in troops of this Detachment and all men reported to duty the following day, and are to be commended for their good discipline.

(G.R. MORRISON) CAPT.,  
Halifax Fortress Detachment,  
No. 6 E.S. & W. Company, RCE.

/GEC

COPY  
HQ  
Halifax Fortress,  
14 May/45

FF 3-1  
Halifax, N. S.,  
14 May, 1945.

Officer Commanding,  
Halifax Fortress,  
Halifax, N. S.

Log of Events  
7 May - 13 May 45

Reference message Orig. No. A9142 D.T.O. 131105,  
the following is a synoptic log of events from 7 May 45 to  
13 May 45.

2. 7 May 45

At 0800 hrs., all line, cable and maintenance  
crews were despatched to their various duties. When news  
of Victory in Europe was announced, all crews returned to the  
Unit H.Q. acting on orders previously given. At 1300 hours,  
guards were posted to Barracks, Mess Hall, Kitchen, Sgt's  
Quarters, and these were maintained continuously. The three  
guard details required all personnel in the Unit. A special  
early supper with beer was given the men.

8 May 45

Guards were continued on 24 hour shifts. On  
receipt of message from F.H.Q. re searching of barracks, a  
complete inspection was carried out in the barracks and no  
possible loot was recovered. At that time three other ranks  
were put under close arrest arising from breach of barrack  
room standing orders re consumption of liquor. At 1930 hrs  
aside from this incident, no other trouble arose.

9 May 45

Personnel continued to be confined to barracks  
other than those on essential duty. In the evening a film  
was provided for entertainment.

10 May 45

Personnel continued to be confined to barracks  
other than those on essential duty. Three other ranks  
appeared before Officer Commanding, No. 6 District Signals,  
at 0900 hours. No untoward incidents occurred.

11 May 45

Personnel continued normal duties.

12 May 45

Usual training parade held for personnel other  
than Duty Detail at 0800 hrs.

13 May 45

Normal operational duties performed.

3. There were no disturbances or damages other than  
the one incident which involved simply the consumption and  
possession of liquor in barracks contrary to barrack room  
standing orders.

4. For your information, please.

(F.H. Beck) Captain,  
Officer Commanding,  
No. 2 Sec. No. 6 District Signals.

RBC/AGH

"E"

RdeStH 5-4-0

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
ARMY

A.A. Reinforcement Camp,  
Bedford, N. S.,  
14 May 1945.

Headquarters,  
Halifax Fortress,  
Halifax, N. S.

EDISTURBANCES V.E. DAY

Reference your tel. A-9142 d/13 May 45, re the m/n subject.

2. At approx. 1830 hrs on 8 May 45, a telephone call was received by this Unit from Capt. R.J. Butts, Staff Captain, Halifax Fortress. This telephone call was to advise that approx. fifty men of this Unit had reported to R.A. Park, and that arrangements should be made to have these men picked up and returned to barracks.

3. Immediately after this telephone call, the following officers were despatched with adequate transportation to bring the a/m men back to barracks:

|                     |   |                       |
|---------------------|---|-----------------------|
| Major A. Angrignon  | - | Capt. P. Marchessault |
| Capt. F. Laviolette | - | Lieut. L.A. Dubuc     |
| Lieut. J.P. Dufour. |   |                       |

4. The a/m officers were given instructions to pick up the men who had reported to R.A. Park and after having done so, they should proceed to drive around the streets in Halifax and pick up all men of this Unit who could be recognized.

5. At Approx. 2030 hrs, the a/m officers returned to Bedford cap with approx. 100 men. This number being a fair percentage of those who had proceeded on pass on that day.

6. After their returns to barracks the men behaved in an orderly manner. Some were under the influence of liquor but they were not boisterous or disorderly.

7. At 0030 hrs on 9 May 45, the commanding officer, directed that a Kit Inspection be made. The pla toon officers proceeded to carry out above order and found no loot of any kind.

8. At approx. 1000 hrs, on 9 May 45, a truck driver came to the Bm. Orderly Room and stated he had found a waterproof coat in the back of his truck. The driver was instructed bring same to the Adjutant. After examination this coat was believed to be an article of looting left in the back of a truck by members of this Unit. Upon instructions from Capt. Butts, same was returned to Fortress H.Q.

(J.A.G. ROBERGE) Lt.-Col,  
Commanding,  
Le Regt de St.Hyacinthe, C.A.

RL/cm

Dartmouth, N.S.

13 May 45

SYNOPTICAL REPORT ON DUTIES AND GENERAL  
ACTIVITIES OF UNIT FROM 7 MAY 45 TO 13 MAY 45

In submitting this report, I would like first to point out, that due to what seemed the nearness of complete capitulation of the enemy forces in Europe, I took the opportunity on our Saturday morning muster parade, to address all ranks on what I thought would be the proper celebration when word was received that Germany had surrendered in the European theatre of war. This was on the 5 May 45, and I especially requested that when we were informed of the cessation of hostilities, that all ranks would refrain from visiting either Halifax or Dartmouth for at least two days. Due to so many of our men in the Company having sons overseas and daughters as well, and also that many of these boys had made the supreme sacrifice, I pointed out that the customary manner of celebrating was not worthy nor fitting to the memory of these men. I also, felt that with the large number of personnel of the Forces in Halifax and Dartmouth, that it would be to the interests of every man to remain within barracks for a couple of nights at least. My premonition, in the latter regard was later borne out. I visited our detachment stationed at Imperoyal, Ns immediately after Church Parade on the 6th May and expressed the same wish.

7 May 45 - The usual guard of 1 Officer and 23 other ranks were mounted at 1000 hrs.

At approximately 1100 hrs we received the news over the radio that Germany had surrendered and word was conveyed to our men who were undergoing Bren Gun Training in the Recreation Hut. The good news, necessarily cancelled the training for the morning and again the men were warned that it was in the best interest of all to remain in Camp that evening.

During the afternoon we received word from Fortress that a holiday had been declared for the day and also the 8th May 45.

We had moving pictures for the men in the Recreation Hut during the evening and at 2100 hrs. , a truck conveyed all personnel to a very good spot on high ground, near the barracks, where the fireworks display was witnessed.

All ranks adhered strictly to what I suggested and remained in barracks.

8 May 45

Apart from the usual Guard mounting, no parade was held with the exception of the men that had been selected to proceed to the Memorial Service at 1400 hours in Halifax, NS. They fell in at 1100 hrs for an inspection by the O.C. were given a brief outline of the program which would be carried out in Halifax during the afternoon at the Memorial Service

CONTINUED

----- 2 -----

8 May 45

( Continued ) During the morning, I contacted the D.S. & T.O., MD 6 and completed arrangements with Captain Hall to despatch two trucks for conveying the party attending the Memorial Parade, I was later informed by Captain Hall over the telephone that the truck would report at 1300 hrs.

It was also decided that all ranks not on duty would be given the opportunity of attending the Memorial Service, using our own trucks for transportation. They were given definite instructions that they must return to the Magazine immediately after the service and were advised exactly where transport would be placed ready for return.

I contacted Lieut. A.E. MacMillan MM, Officer i/c of the detachment at Imperoyal and also Lieut. W.J. Kavanagh, who was on duty with 12 other ranks at the Embarkation Pier, Halifax, they both advised me that all troops under their command had respected my wishes and remained at their respective camps and billets, the night previous. I instructed both of these officers that the same would apply for the night of the 8th.

At 1300 hrs. the convoy of trucks, two from the DS&TO and two of our own, headed by my Station Wagon, proceeded to Halifax via Bedford, the party selected for the Memorial Service Parade lined up on the Commons and the balance, who were attending the service, left for convenient places at the Garrison Ground. They were again instructed to report back immediately after the service.

At approximately 1600 hrs., I personally made a survey and found that all ranks ~~had~~ reported back to the trucks and we awaited return of the party, which arrived in due time and all trucks returned to barracks at the JS magazine, arriving approximately at 1650 hrs.

I was particularly pleased that all ranks had respected my wishes and remained in the Camp during the evening, where a game of BINGO had been arranged.

Upon hearing of the continuance of the riots in Halifax and later in Dartmouth, I contacted both Lieut. MacMillan at Imperoyal and Lieut. Kavanagh, at the Halifax Pier and we informed that all personnel was in barracks.

9th Apr 45.

Usual Guards mounted and during the morning we had a short route march and during the afternoon, training was resumed as per syllabus which had been arranged from the VGC Syllabus laid down for the Veterans Guard.

During the day, we received a message from Fortress, that due to the grave situation which had arisen, all troops would be confined to barracks and leave cancelled until further notice. This message was immediately relayed to the detachments on duty at Imperoyal and the Halifax Pier and they were also instructed to make daily reports to Company Headquarters until all restrictions had been lifted.

( Continued )



----- 3 -----

10 Apr 45

Usual duties carried out and all transport which proceeded to Halifax with rations to the detachment on duty at the Pier and to Imperoyal NS or to Bedford, NS with Sick Parades were accompanied by Officers and drivers were given definite instructions to reach their destination by the shortest possible route and return immediately upon completion of duties.

Steps were taken to arrange picture shows and Bingo for the evenings.

Route Marches and training were carried out as per syllabus.

All ranks were confined to barracks and there were no infringements of this order.

11 Apr 45

Usual duties carried out and training as per syllabus.

Bingo was played during the evening in the Recreation Hut despite the order received from Fortress that C.B. had been lifted.

12 and 13th Apr 45. Usual duties and training as per syllabus.

In conclusion, I would like to state that not one member of this unit, with exception of one officer & 12 men on duty at the Halifax Pier, were in Halifax after 15615 hours on the 8th day May 45 and further, I can definitely state that no member was connected in any way with the rioting and looting of stores in either Halifax ; NS or Dartmouth.

The men viewed the whole affair with considerable concern and join with me in the fact that it was most unfortunate and regrettable.

As men were in no way connected with this affair, the report on stolen merchandise is " NIL "

Submitted for your information, please.

Sgd . H.V. Kerney Major  
( H.V. Kerney ) Major  
OC 21 Coy., VGC

M E M O

F H Q 5-4

V-E DAY DISTURBANCES

Tuesday 8 May 45

I attended the Thanksgiving Service on Citadel Hill, on Tuesday afternoon, and returned to Fortress H.Q. at 1530 hrs.

2. At approximately 1630 hrs, Mrs. W.G. Evans of the Red Cross, accompanied by Capt. G. Harris of H.Q. M.D. 6 and a Major whom I did not know, came into the office. They reported that rioting and looting were taking place down town and asked if we were taking any action.

3. I phoned Capt. Chapman, H.Q. M.D.6, and he said a meeting was being held, then, to consider the situation. Almost immediately afterwards, Major Wylde of H.Q. M.D.6 phoned and instructed to call in all Fortress Officers, to patrol the streets and order all Army personnel to return to their billets or barracks. By 1800 hrs, Major Irwin and Capt. Smith of the 21st A.A. Regt. and Capt. Morrison, Fort. Det. No. 6 ES & W Coy. R.C.E., reported that approximately 500 men had been cleared of the streets. The men all returned to barracks willingly.

4. Approximately 40-50 men of Le Regt de St. Hyacinthe reported to R.A. Park and were returned to their unit by unit transport.

5. There was evidence of drinking among the troops, but none were disorderly, and they were amenable to discipline.

6. H.Q. M.D.6 asked that a number of officers and ORs report to the DAPM at 1930 hrs. These personnel were employed as unarmed guards, during the night at the Bonded Warehouse and Wellington Barracks.

Sgd. R. J. Butts, Capt.

Staff Captain  
Halifax Fortress

M E M O

F.H.Q. 5-4

VE DAY CELEBRATION  
Monday 7 May 45

1. At approximately 1030 hrs Monday 7 May 45 rumours were afloat that Germany had surrendered unconditionally to the Allies. Shortly afterwards this was confirmed.
2. This announcement caused a certain amount of light heartedness amongst the troops and canteens and messes opened at lunch time and distributed free beer as previously arranged.
3. All ranks entered into the spirit of jovial celebration and a good time was had by all.
4. There were no signs nor reports of disorderly conduct or breaches of discipline by any Fortress troops.
5. No reports were received by this H.Q. throughout the day or night of any disturbance of any kind.
6. Operational duties were continued as usual.

Sgd. G. W. Myers, Capt.

Staff Captain  
Halifax Fortress

Exhibits YY 1, 2, 3 and 4

ARE ATTACHED ONLY TO THE ORIGINAL COPY OF  
THE PROCEEDINGS OF THE COURT OF INQUIRY

---

PART I ORDER

HEADQUARTERS MILITARY DISTRICT NO. 6

BRIGADIER D.A. WHITE, D.S.O., DISTRICT OFFICER COMMANDING

NO. 56a HALIFAX, N.S., 7 MAY 45 NO. 56a

LAST PART I ORDER ISSUED NO. 56 d/7 MAY 45

V E DAY

Remainder of today May 7th and all day May 8th  
will be Holiday.

- (a) All normal duty must be carried out and security maintained.
- (b) Adequate staffs (Sunday pattern) will be maintained.
- (c) Essential services will be maintained.
- (d) Equipment and Property shall be safeguarded.
- (e) Those employed these two days will be granted leave later on, Chief Clerks of Branches will arrange accordingly.

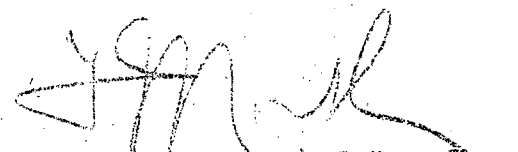
VACCINATION AND INOCULATIONS

Reference Part I Order #56 d/7 May 45 "VACCINATION AND INOCULATIONS". Other Ranks will report to the M.I.R. South Barracks at 1530 hours, 9 May 45, instead of between 1600 and 1700 hrs., 8 May 45.

DISTINGUISHING PATCHES

Authority is granted for the u/m Officer to wear Distinguishing Patches of First Canadian Division in accordance with C.A.R.O. 5530:

LT. COL. J.A. MCLELLAN

  
(A.E. Duncanson) Colonel,  
Col. i/c Adm., M.D. No. 6.

/PK

EXHIBIT AAA

CONFIDENTIAL

WARNING ORDER

Halifax, N.S.  
1st May 1945

Regimental Officer,  
No.6 Coy. RCEME  
Halifax, N.S.

V-E Day

The following general principles should be followed in the handling of the personnel of No.6 Coy. RCEME on V-E Day.

- (1) The day should be regarded as a day of prayer and religious thanksgiving and not as a day of celebration.
- (a) On receipt of the information that V-E Day is a certain day, Detachments will be paraded and addressed by Detachment Commanders who will explain to all ranks their intentions and arrangements for the day.
- (3) Orders issued by Area Commanders or emanating from District Headquarters will be carried out and the personnel selected for such parades will be carefully selected to make a best possible appearance for dress and drill.
2. The balance of the Detachment will remain on duty in Workshops until such time as all parades are completed.
3. Additional security guards must be provided for Workshops, the necessary guards and pickets inspected at frequent intervals by the Duty Officers of the Detachments. An additional emergency guard or idling picket will be held in barracks available for any extra duties which Units may be called upon to provide. Officers Commanding, Detachments should regard the day as a Sunday or Christmas day and see that all officers of their Detachment spend the majority of the day with the men under their command.
4. All ranks should be encouraged to stay in Unit locations after duty hours and Unit entertainment arranged for them.
5. Other Ranks should be warned that A.W.L.'s the day after V-E Day will be dealt with in the usual manner.

Sgd. E. N. Harris, Major

for (E.A. Agnew) Lt.-Col.,  
O.C. No.6 Coy. RCEME

## DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

E.M.E.-H-2-O.

/ ARMY /

Halifax, N.S.,  
14 May 45.Headquarters,  
Military District No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S.ACTIVITIES OF NO. 6 COY. 2 R.C.E.M.E.  
DURING V.E. DAY CELEBRATIONS

1. Hereunder please find report on the m/n as per telephone request of this date, also attached statements of the various officers concerned.

7 MAY 45

Work proceeded normally until approx. 1045 hrs. when horns and whistles started to blow in various parts of the city. Shortly after the Unit was formed up by Lt.-Col. Agnew and a short address was given. In his address Col. Agnew cautioned the men to conduct themselves in a sober manner and to treat the ~~day~~ as a day of thanksgiving and not riotous celebration and to keep sober as they might be called out for extra duty. The Padre then lead the Unit in short prayers of thanksgiving.

8 May 45

The Company was formed up on the parade square at 0745 hrs and marched to the Workshop by Major Harris. After a short address they were dismissed for the day with the exception of the platoon of 75 men which were marched to Wellington Barracks by Lieuts. Thomsen and MacLean where they were broken off with orders to form up at 1300 hrs. At 1300 hrs. the platoon was marched to the South Commons as per H.Q. instructions. After completion of the parade they returned to Wellington Barracks at approximately 1600 hrs. and all R.C.E.M.E. personnel were formed up on Wellington Barracks parade square at 1745 hrs. There were approximately 55 men available for duty at this time. At this time two patrols of officers from No. 6 Coy., R.C.E.M.E. and ~~R.C.O.C. personnel were taken from the streets and returned to barra~~ were formed by Lt.-Col. Agnew and all R.C.E.M.E. and R.C.O.C. personnel were taken from the streets and returned to barracks. Later, from approximately 1900 hrs. no discrimination as to units was made and all members of the Canadian Army were picked up and returned to their barracks. From 1900 hrs. on the officers were reinforced by approximately 20 hand-picked men. Six of these worked with the patrolling officers and the remaining group cleared the street in front of the C.W.A.C. quarters and then patrolled this area. The patrol concentrated on the area bounded by Windsor and Gottigen Sts. north of the Armouries. By approximately 2200 hrs. there were no Army personnel on the streets in this area.

(TO SHEET NO. 2)

(2)

9 May 45

On Wednesday morning all personnel of this Company were formed up on Wellington Barracks parade square and marched to the Workshop. Work proceeded normally except that a Security Guard was placed around the Workshop. All personnel were confined to Barracks and those living on subsistence were issued passes permitting them to travel between their places of residence and the workshop. At the completion of the days work a heavy Security Guard was placed on the Workshop, turcks and drivers were ordered to stand by in case of emergency and the remaining personnel were marched to their quarters. A moving picture was shown later in the evening in Wellington Barracks for personnel living there.

Sgd. A. Norman Harris, Maj.

(A.N. HARRIS) Major,  
A.O.C. No. 6 Coy., R.C.E.M.E.

ANH/MPF



APPENDIX "A"

Major A.N. Harris' Statement

All during the day I was on duty in the Workshops in my office. This was done in order to keep as close to the telephone information as possible. At 1630 hours, the Orderly Officer reported to me that a call had come from Col. North at District requesting the O.C., No. 6 Coy. R.C.E.M. Unit to assemble all of the Officers of the Unit to proceed on a patrol of the Area and withdraw from the streets all of the Unit personnel and return them to their barracks. I called Lt. Col. Agnew at Wellington Barracks Officers' Mess and informed him of the instructions. I was instructed to wait at the office and get as many of the Officers that were around the Workshops assembled and that he would assemble the Officers in Wellington Barracks Officers' Mess and return to the Workshop Office.

At approximately 1700 hours, I proceeded with Capt. Brown in a Jeep to patrol all the streets in this Area and warn all R.C.E.M.E. personnel to return to barracks. On starting with this patrol, it was previously arranged by Lt. Col. Agnew that we would confiscate from Army personnel, all loot and liquor in their possession. This we proceeded to do. While patrolling the streets, each soldier that we came to, we would stop and if he had any liquor or loot in his possession we immediately confiscated it and ordered him to return immediately to Barracks. It might be stated here that it does not return to my memory that I saw any Army personnel under the influence of liquor and in each case when we stopped Army personnel and asked them to hand over any liquor or loot that they had, they were not antagonistic in any way about it, and freely surrendered it. All were told to return to Barracks immediately so that they would be out of any trouble. They came to attention, saluted, said "Yes sir" and immediately proceeded on their way in the direction of their Barracks.

After clearing this Area of all personnel that we could see walking around the streets, Capt. Brown and myself proceeded down to the centre of the City on to Barrington Street and along Barrington Street returning by way of Cogswell Street. On this patrol we were particularly interested in finding out if we could see any R.C.E.M.E. personnel in that Area. It was more or less completely covered by us and on that tour we did not see any R.C.E.M.E. personnel with the exception of one man, a Sgt. who had been sent down prior to tell any personnel of this Unit to return. This man when found was absolutely sober and carrying out his duties as he had been instructed to do to the letter.

On returning to Barracks, we decided then as personnel were pretty well cleared from the streets to change our tactics and go in a larger vehicle and take with us another Officer and six picked personnel. We patrolled this Area and during this patrol we picked up one C.W.A.C. which was not under the influence of liquor. A few minutes later after picking her up we picked up another C.W.A.C. which was very much under the influence of liquor and had with her a soldier. The C.W.A.C. resented the fact that she was being taken into protective custody but nevertheless was placed in the truck with the rest.

W then proceeded to patrol further on in the same Area and picked up several soldiers, slightly under the influence of liquor. There were also a number of soldiers picked up at the same time who were not under the influence of liquor and when the truck was filled we returned, first the C.W.A.C. to Barracks at Willow Park and turned over the two C.W.A.C. girls to the R.P. and from there took the rest of the men that we had and placed them in the Mens Barracks in Willow Park.

We then proceeded out again with our truck and made a complete survey of all the Area of the City. During this trip we picked up about 6 or 8 other Army personnel and 1 Naval personnel whose arm had been badly injured and it was thought broken. This man was very much under the influence of liquor and resented ~~very-much-under-the-influence~~ ~~very-much-a~~ being taken into protective custody by us. We then returned first to H.M.C.S. Peregrine and turned the sailor over to the guard on the gate. Returning then to Wellington Barracks and placed the rest of the Army personnel in Barracks. I then changed over to a Jeep at approximately 2200 hours and proceeded on a patrol with Lieut. Thomsen to an Area where a call had been put in from, that a large fire was burning. This was on the Dutch Village Road. Lieut. Thomsen drove as close to the proximity of the fire as was possible and I proceeded on foot across the fields to investigate the large bon fire. On arrival at the scene I found a farmer and two boys with him, all perfectly sober and burning a large bunch of rubbish in a field, on the centre of a field keeping it well in hand. Satisfying myself that this was all in order, I returned to the Jeep and proceeded with Lieut. Thomsen to continue our patrol on the Dutch Village Road and observed if there was any undue noise or trouble in any way. We continued on and came into the City by way of Mumford, Chebucto and Quinpool Roads. At Quinpool Road, we were hailed by a civilian Police Sergeant and another Police Officer who asked if we would take them immediately downtown into the Barrington Street section at the scene of the fire on Barrington and Sackville Street. This we did and delivered the Sergeant and Policeman right at the scene of the fire.

We then turned south on Barrington Street and turned up Spring Garden Road. Arriving at South Park street we turned north again and proceeded up to Windsor and Quinpool Road and observed a soldier who was so much under the influence of liquor that he required the safety zone to lean over, at the same time we observed one of the trucks of the Convoy coming in from Debert which had been lost. They hailed us and asked if we could direct them to No. 6 District Depot. We asked the Officer in Charge for two men to take this man, we had found in their charge and place him aboard their truck. This was done and we proceeded then up Quinpool Road returning the truck to District Depot. Arriving at District Depot the man which we had picked up was turned over to the guard house and we then proceeded back to Wellington Barracks.

Arriving at Wellington Barracks, Lt. Col. Agnew joined us. We then proceeded to patrol this Area once again to see if any Army personnel were left on the streets.

- 3 -

Arriving at the corner of Cornwallis and North Park Streets, we came across a C.W.A.C. in the company of a Naval Officer and a soldier. On finding them, they asked if we could direct them to No. 6 District Depot as they were taking the C.W.A.C. home there. We loaded all three of them into the Jeep and proceeded with them to the Depot. Arriving at the Depot we found that the soldier we had picked up was from the Reserve Army and tried to get us to let him go, however all three were turned over to the guard at District Depot. We then proceeded downtown once more to continue our tour of the centre part of the City, along Barrington Street to see if there were any more Army personnel that could be picked up. On finding none we returned to Barracks.

During all the patrols that I was in charge of, we in no way interfered with any civilians carrying loot as our instructions were only to take into custody and confiscate same from Army personnel. However, I might state here that I did not notice any Army personnel, except one soldier, during my tour to be in possession of any loot other than liquor, which was confiscated. This soldier was found by Lt. Col. Agnew, myself and Lieut. Thomsen as we proceeded into the gates of the Men's Wellington Barracks. We immediately placed him under arrest. Lt. Col. Agnew searched him and found in his possession a number of articles including, one pair electric hair clippers. Lieut. Thomsen and myself searched through a small kit bag he was carrying. In this kit bag was only personal belongings a number of which had been used. Lt. Col. Agnew took this man into the guard house and ordered the guard to place him under close arrest and to list the articles of loot which was found to be in his possession. Later on when he returned, Lt. Col. Agnew found that the guards at the Men's gate of Wellington Barracks had released this prisoner he had placed under close arrest and they could not account for where the loot had disappeared and as far as could be found out was not in their possession.

We returned to Barracks at 0030 hrs. 9th May 45.

Sgd. A. Norman Harris Maj.

(A. Norman Harris) Major,  
A/O.C., No. 6 Coy. R. C. E. M. E.

APPENDIX "B"

Capt. H. Brown's Statement

I was on duty with Major Harris from 1630 hours until 2200 hours. From 2200 hours to 0130 hours, I stood by the telephone in New Wellington Barracks, Officers' Mess as I was instructed to do so by Lt.Col. Agnew. I agree entirely with Major Harris' Statement regarding Army personnel.

Sgd. H. Brown

(H. Brown) Captain,  
No. 6 Company R. C. E. M. E.

APPENDIX "C"

Lieut. F.L. Post's Statement

At approximately 1720 hours Tuesday, Lt.Col. Agnew told me to stand by for duty and at about 1740 hours, I was instructed to go to Gut No. 14, New Wellington Barracks and fall all R.C.E.M.E. personnel in on the Parade Grounds. There were approximately 55 men in the Hut at that time and they co-operated very quickly. After about 20 minutes I broke the men off to their quarters telling them that they were Confined to Barracks for the night. S/M Ellis noticed the parade on the square and gave me some assistance from 1800 hours until the other Officers arrived.

At approximately 1830 hours an Officer from another Unit brought to Lt.Col. Agnew's attention a truck bearing some loot in which a soldier, evidently the driver, was under the influence of liquor. I saw Lt.Col. Agnew have the man placed under arrest with instructions that he be turned into the guard room. Following this in company with Lt.Col. Agnew I made a general tour of the men's huts in New Wellington Barracks and in nearly every case, the men were cleaning up and getting their Huts in order.

After this in the company of Lt. Waldron, Lt. McLean, Lt. Thomsen and Lt.Col. Agnew, we patrolled the streets, mainly Agricola in one of the Unit trucks. We tried to help maintain order in the Agricola Street near the liquor warehouse. At this point, it should be noted that there were approximately 20 Naval Shore Patrol who on questioning by Lt.Col. Agnew and myself, said they had received no instructions to bring anyone off the streets. Lt.Col. Agnew and myself entered Bloomfield Men's Wear Store and observed some Naval Shore Patrol clearing all personnel out of the store whether they were civilian or Service personnel. It might be noted that 90% of the people cleaned out of this store were civilians. At this time the cash register from the store was found to be in the possession of 2 civilians who were attempting to open it. It was confiscated and placed on an Army Service Corps vehicle under the charge of the Army Provost. During the remainder of the evening I was on the patrols as stated by Major Harris until 2200 hours, at which time I returned to the Mess.

Sgd. F.L. Post, Lieut.

(F.L. Post) Lieut.,  
No. 6 Coy. R. C. E. M. E.

APPENDIX "D"

Lieut. J.R. Waldron's Statement

I returned to New Wellington Barracks, Officers' Mess shortly after 1810 hours and was informed that Lt.Col. Agnew wanted Officers to return to R.C.E.M.E. Workshops wearing steel helmets. From my room in the Barracks I could see that the Colonel and other Officers were in the Men's Wellington Barracks. I reported down there with Lt. McLean and we arrived at the end of the survey of the Barracks carried out by the Officers.

I accompanied Lt. Post and Lt. McLean, on a patrol down to the Agricola Street liquor store, up Agricola Street, west on Cunard and north on Windsor. We were picking up soldiers and C.W.A.C. personnel and returning them back to New Wellington Barracks. I took charge of the personnel when they were put in the vehicle and saw that there were no disturbances.

On returning to Wellington Barracks on orders from Lt. Col. Agnew, I assembled a guard of 20 Army personnel armed with short axe handles to guard the front of the C.W.A.C. quarters. When I had assembled this guard, I was instructed that it was no longer necessary as a guard had already been placed around the C.W.A.C. quarters. Lt.Col. Agnew instructed me to have the guard stand by in Wellington Barracks ready to be despatched at any call. This I did. Later I obtained a vehicle and delivered the men who had been brought to Wellington Barracks that belonged to No. 6 District Depot back to the Depot.

At 2230 hours, Lt. McLean and I were called to go down to the Men's quarters and search for stolen property and detail a party to assist the Sergeant in charge of the guard room. When this was completed I remained at the gate until approximately midnight and then returned to my quarters.

At no time during any patrol did a soldier disobey an order I issued. The general conduct was orderly.

Sgd. J.R. Waldron, Lt.

(J.R. Waldron) Lieut.,  
No. 6 Coy., R. C. E. M. E.

APPENDIX "E"

Lieut. J. G. Maclean's Statement.

I have read the Statement made by Major Harris and, it has covered both accurately and completely the events of the V-E period as they affected No.6 Coy. R.C.E.M.E.

On Tuesday, May 8th, Lieut Thomsen and myself were detailed to accompany a Platoon of Seventy Five men from our Unit on the combined Services parade. We formed the parade on the parade square at New Wellington Barracks and returned to the area with all but one man. I was forced to allow one man to drop out due to a cramp from a recent operation.

On dismissing the parade I returned to my quarters. I had supper and went up to my room whereupon I was informed by Lt. Waldron of Lt.Col.Agenw's order for his officers to join him. Waldron and myself went immediately to the Men's quarters and participated in a search for stolen property. On the completion of this, I went with the officers named by Lieut Post in his statement and aided in the rounding-up of Army personnel still on the streets. The efforts of Lt. Col.Agnew at the scene of the Agricola Street Liquor Store disturbance were instrumental in the breaking up of what might have been a dangerous mob. I stood guard around the front of our truck as many bottles were being thrown at it.

I returned to the Mess and was there until approximately 2030 hours. At this time there was a request from the C.W.A.C. at Cathedral Barracks for a guard to be formed for their protection. This was done by R.C.O.C. Officers and 29 R.C.O.C. men. Lieut. J.Tod of the R.C.E. and myself went to Cathedral and were there until approximately 2115. I have nothing to report on this but Lt.Tod, myself and a Lt. Ramsey of the Provost Corp had a slight argument with an intoxicated Naval Officer who was seeking admittance. His efforts were discouraged.

Lt.Tod and myself returned to New Wellington Barracks to check with Lt.Waldron who had been detailed by Lt.Col Agnew to form a guard for the N.W.B. C.W.A.C. quarters. On arrival, we reported to Lt.M.Downs C.W.A.C. and found all in order but Lt.Waldron's guard had not been employed. Capt.Brown then appeared and said Major Harris was looking for us so we returned to our quarters. Thereupon, Major Harris and Lt.Thomsen departed on a patrol.

I stayed in my quarters until approx. 2300 at which time I was called upon to go down and aid in a further search of the men's quarters for stolen goods. This was completed and with Lt.Waldron I formed a reserve force for the then over burdened Barracks Security police. This consisted of six R.C.E.M.E. men. We then patrolled the Barracks fence to watch against the entry of Liquor or other loot. No attempt was observed. At midnight, Col.Baillie who was present at the Barracks main gate, told us that we might return to our quarters.

Sgd. J.G. Maclean Lt.

( J. G. Maclean ) Lieut.  
No. 6 Coy R. C. E. M. E.

APPENDIX "F"

Statement by Lt. A.R. Thomsen in the  
Absence of Lt.Col. E.A. Agnew

On receiving a phone call from Major Harris, Lt.Col. Agnew instructed me to proceed to the Workshops and prepare a truck for immediate duty. This was carried out and accompanied by Lt.Col. Agnew, we immediately started to patrol the section of the City in the vicinity of Wellington Barracks, gathering up all R.C.E.M.E. and R.C.G.C. personnel that we saw on the streets. At approximately 1700 hours, Lt.Col. Agnew and myself, reinforced by several members of the Unti proceeded to the Agricola Street Liquor Store where a large crowd of civilians had gathered. When we arrived there, we found that the liquor store had been looted and civilians were in the process of looting Bloomfield Men's Wear Store on the corner. With the aid of some Naval Shore Patrol personnel this store was cleaned and a cash register recovered from two civilians who were attempting to open it in the middle of the street. All army personnel who were in the crowd were either taken directly to Wellington Barracks in the vehicle or given instructions to proceed directly to their homes or residences as was applicable. We were successful in quieting the crowd and by approximately 1830 hours they had been dispersed.

We continued to patrol this Area of the City until 2200 hours at which time there were practically no Army personnel remaining on the streets. At approximately 1900 hours, Lt.Col. Agnew apprehended S.M.I (W.O.I) McMasters, who was purchasing liquor from O.Rs over the fence at Wellington Barracks. This W.O. was placed under arrest and turned over to the Provost Corp.

My activities for the rest of the evening are covered in the report submitted by Major Harris and I fully endorse all his statements. At no time during my tour of duty did I experience any difficulty in dealing with Army personnel and all orders issued were obeyed implicitly.

Sgd. (A.R. Thomsen) L

(A.R. Thomsen) Lieut.,  
No. 6 Company R. C. E. M. E.



P 11 88 BBB

APPENDIX "G"

T/2nd Lt. W. Shelson's Statement

On Monday I received instructions from Major Harris to ensure that the security of the R.C.E.M.E. Workshops was maintained. To this end guards were posted at various strategic points. I remained on duty at the R.C.E.M.E. Orderly Room, Monday, Tuesday and Wednesday nights. There were no disturbances of any kind and the guards were well behaved and disciplined.

Sgd. W. Shelson

(W. Shelson) T/2/Lt.,  
No. 6 Company R.C.E.M.E.

s.19(1)

[REDACTED]

BREACHES OF DISCIPLINE

New Wellington Bns C.W.A.C.

No. 106 Depot & No. 17 Adm. Unit

1. Reference H.150-1-2(AQ) over  
HC 120-2-1 (AQ) dated 13 May 1945).

2. Listed hereunder are the parti-  
culars about all military personnel who were in-  
volved in any breach of discipline during the distur-  
bance of May 7 and May 8, showing action taken in each  
case.

[REDACTED]

No. 17 Adm. Unit

Charged under A.A. Sec 40 "Conduct to the Prejudice" -  
disobeying a direct command of the Orderly Officer in that  
they went out of camp the night of May 8, returning at  
2300 hours.

Punishment: Paraded and punishment 7 days' pay

[REDACTED]

No. 17 Adm. Unit

Charged under A.A. Sec. 40 "Conduct to the Prejudice" -  
pleading ignorance that the curfew was in force the night  
of May 8 and reporting to camp at approximately 0100 hours.

Punishment: Paraded and awarded 7 days' confinement to  
barracks with extra duties.

.....2

2 -

s.19(1)

Charged under A.A. Sec. 40 "Conduct to the Prejudice" - being in improper possession of goods.

Punishment: Paraded and summary of evidence ordered.

No. 106 Depot

Temporarily held for being in improper possession of goods but on orders from Headquarters discharge proceedings continued and no action taken due to physical condition. She has been discharged and a full report of matter, and list of articles taken from her are in my office.

(Sgd) Maudie C. Cawsey

(Maudie C. Cawsey) Capt  
O.C. No. 17 Adm Unit & No. 106 Depot CWAC

Also two girls mentioned in attached summaries.

(sgd) M.C.C.

s.19(1)

~~CHARGE~~

Sqn. C.W.A.C. No. 17 Adm. Unit  
Bty. Unit  
Coy.

W-60629

Pte

Name

CHARGE against No.

~~A Volunteer of the Canadian Army Placed on Active Service~~

| Place      | Date of Offence | OFFENCE   | Name of Witness | Disposal of Case with Rank and Name of officer disposing of it |
|------------|-----------------|---|-----------------|--|
| Halifax NS | 8 May 45        | Charged with conduct to the Prejudice of Good Order and Military Discipline. In that she was in improper possession of goods found during the V.E. Day Riots. | Documentary     | Remanded for Summary of Evidence<br><br>M.C.C.                 |
|            |                 | A.A. Sec 40   |                 |  |

Maudie C. Cawsey, Capt

(Signature of Investigating Officer)

Commanding 17 Adm Unit CWAC

SUMMARY OF EVIDENCE  
in the case of

[REDACTED] No. 17 Adm. Unit., a soldier  
of the Canadian Women's Army Corps placed on active service.

Charges

Illegal possession of goods. Sec. 40 A.A.

After being duly sworn, states: s.19(1)

STATEMENT BY ACCUSED

Tuesday the 8 May 45 in the company of Pte. Conrad about 1400 hours, I was on Citadel Hill watching the Parade. After the Parade we were down on Barrington Street until about 1530 hours. We then went back up to Citadel Hill, sat down for awhile and about 1700 hours two sailors came along with two lamps and wanted to know if we wanted a souvenir. I took one of the lamps. We then went to Brenton Lodge to Lillian Rafuse's and Joan Gallant's room. They were not at home but I left the lamp and a note written on a newspaper. We went back passed the Lord Nelson Hotel and stayed at a street dance for awhile. Later we were going up over citadel hill again and we met two more sailors. They wer drinking, calling out and attempting to talk to us. They asked if we wanted souvenirs. We paid no attention to them at first. Later they left the goods lying on the ground then left. I picked up the following:

- One Tweed Coat
- One Silver Mustard Pot
- One pair men's black Hose
- One lady's Hat
- One Silver Bon-Bon Dish
- One Silver Butter Dish

Still in the company of Pte. Conrad I took them to Brenton Lodge to the room of Lillian Rafuse and Joan Gallant. They were not home and I left the goods with the lamp. Before entering the house a C.W.A.C. Sgt. told us to report back to barracks immediately, I did not recognize her. Pte. Conrad asked the Sgt. if it was alright to take the goods into the house first. She said O.K. When we came out we reported to Cathedral Barracks and transportation was arranged to return us to N. 6 District Depot.

Wednesday 9 May 45 or Thursday 10 May 45 I phoned Lillian Rafuse and asked her if she saw the goods. She said yes. I told her we were confined to barracks and that I would try to get the goods out of there as soon as possible.

Saturday 12 May 45 I phoned Joan Gallant and asked her if the goods were still there, because I intended to turn them in. She said yes they were still there. I said is it O.K. if I come down and get them. She said no, that she had informed the Police that they were there. I gave the matter no more thought, thinking that the goods had been turned in.



At no time was I informed personally by anyone in authority to declare any goods obtained on V.E. day other than what I heard on the radio and read in the newspapers.

[REDACTED]  
I certify that Rules of Procedure 4(c), (d), (e), and (f) have been complied with.

Taken down by me in the presence of the accused at New Wellington Barracks, Halifax, N.S. this 18 Day of May 1945.

(sgd) Marguerity Downes, Lieut,  
No. 17 Adm. Unit., CWAC

# GARCE

Sqn. C.W.A.C. No. 17 Adm. Unit  
Bty. Unit  
Coy.   
We60563 

CHARGE against No.

Wp60563

## Rank

Name

~~A Volunteer of the Canadian Army Placed on Active Service~~

| Place      | Date of Offence | OFFENCE   | Name of Witness | Disposal of Case with Rank and Name of officer disposing of it |
|------------|-----------------|---|-----------------|--|
| Halifax NS | 8 May 45        | Charged with Conduct to The Prejudice of Good Order and Military Discipline. In that she was in improper Documentary possession of goods found during the V.E. Day Riots. |                 | Rm<br>Remanded for Summary of Evidence<br><br>M.C.C.           |
|            |                 | A.A. Sec 40   |                 |  |

Maudie C. Cawsey, Captain  
(Signature of Investigating Officer)

Commanding...17 Adm Unit CWAC

## SUMMARY OF EVIDENCE

in the case of

s.19(1)

[REDACTED], No. 17 Adm. Unit, a soldier  
of the Canadian Women's Army Corps placed on active service.

### CHARGES

Illegal possession of goods. Sec 40 A.A.

After being duly sworn states

### STATEMENT OF ACCUSED

Tuesday the 8 of May in the company of Pte. Rafuse I was on Citadel Hill at about 1700 hours. We met a Petty Officer of the Canadian Navy who was under the influence of alcohol. He was distributing goods to everyone on Citadel Hill. He offered us a souvenir and he gave me a white electric table lamp with a white and green shade and two pieces of silverware. One Bon-Bon Dish and one other piece and I don't recall exactly what it was. Still in the company of Pte. Rafuse I took these to a room of two friends of Pte. Rafuse at Breton Lodge. They were not at home but we left the goods. We went to a street dance on Spring Garden Road. About 1730 hours we went back to Citadel Hill. We saw several sailors with their arms full of clothing, dropping on the ground. They did not talk to us that I recall. I picked up the following:

Two lady's polo coats.

Two two piece dresses.

We returned to Breton Lodge immediately and left the goods in the room with two lamps. We met a CWAC Sgt. while returning to Breton Lodge and she told us to report back to barracks.

The following evening Wednesday the 9 May 45 we decided to contact the girls in whose room we left the goods. I did not talk to them myself on the phone.

Saturday night the 12-May 45 we decided to phone the girls again to tell them that we intended to turn the goods in. Pte. Rafuse reported to me that they had already been turned in to the Police and I took no further action.

No one in authority at any time from Tuesday 8 May 45 to Saturday 12 May 45 asked me if I had anything in my possession which I should declare.

(sgd) [REDACTED]

I certify that Rules of Procedure 4(c), (d), (e), and (f) have been complied with.

Taken down by me in the presence of the accused at New Wellington Barracks, Halifax, N.S. this 18th day of May 1945.

(sgd) Marguerite Downes, Lieut.  
No. 17 Adm. Unit., C.W.A.C.

HALIFAX  
Nova Scotia

OFFICE OF  
CHIEF OF POLICE

May 18, 1945

O. C. #17 Admin. Unit, C.W.A.C.  
New Wellington Barracks,  
Halifax, N.S.

Sir:

This will certify that the goods listed below were seized by Detective Roy Moore, Halifax Police Department on May 15, 1945, at 53 Brenton Street, Halifax, N. S., and were left that address by Private Rafuse, A. I., and Private Conrad, O. M., both of your Unit.

|   |   |                |       |       |
|---|---|----------------|-------|-------|
| 2 Table Lamps - new, no value Or                |   |                |       |       |
| identification shown.                           |   |                |       |       |
| 1 Ladies Dress - Hudson Company, value \$10.87  |   |                |       |       |
| 2 Ladies Polo Coat - new, no value or           |   |                |       |       |
| identification shown.                           |   |                |       |       |
| 1 Ladies Tweed Coat - new, no value or Id shown |   |                |       |       |
| 2 Ladies Skirts - new                           | " | "              | "     | "     |
| 1 Ladies Blouse                                 | " | "              | "     | "     |
| 1 Ladies Washable Skirt                         | " | "              | "     | "     |
| 1 Ladies Hat - Zellers                          | " | "              | "     | "     |
| 1 Pair Mens Black Hose                          | " | Value .50¢     | No Id | Shown |
| 1 Silver Butter Dish                            | " | No value or Id | shown |       |
| 1 Silver Mustard Pot                            | " | "              | "     | "     |
| 2 Silver Bon Bon Dishes new,                    | " | "              | "     | "     |

Forwarded for your information and whatever disciplinary action is deemed necessary.

Very truly yours,

(sgd) James W. Baker,

INSPECTOR OF DETECTIVES

JWB:C



HALIFAX  
Nova Scotia

OFFICE OF  
CHIEF OF POLICE

May 18, 1945

O. C. #17 Admin. Unit, C.W.A.C.  
New Wellington Barracks,  
Halifax, N.S.

Sir:

This will certify that the goods listed below were seized by Detective Roy Moore, Halifax Police Department on May 15, 1945, at 53 Brenton Street, Halifax, N. S., and were left that address by Private Rafuse, A. I., and Private Conrad, O. M., both of your Unit.

|   |   |                      |       |       |
|---|---|----------------------|-------|-------|
| 2 Table Lamps - new, no value Or identification shown.      |   |                      |       |       |
| 1 Ladies Dress - Hudson Company, value \$10.87              |   |                      |       |       |
| 2 Ladies Polo Coat - new, no value or identification shown. |   |                      |       |       |
| 1 Ladies Tweed Coat - new, no value or Id shown             |   |                      |       |       |
| 2 Ladies Skirts - new                                       | " | "                    | "     | "     |
| 1 Ladies Blouse   | " | "                    | "     | "     |
| 1 Ladies Washable Skirt                                     | " | "                    | "     | "     |
| 1 Ladies Hat - Zellers                                      | " | "                    | "     | "     |
| 1 Pair Mens Black Hose                                      | " | Value .50¢           | No Id | Shown |
| 1 Silver Butter Dish  | " | No value or Id shown |       |       |
| 1 Silver Mustard Pot  | " | "                    | "     | "     |
| 2 Silver Bon Bon Dishes new,                                | " | "                    | "     | "     |

Forwarded for your information and whatever disciplinary action is deemed necessary.

Very truly yours,

(sgd) James W. Baker,

INSPECTOR OF DETECTIVES

JWB:C



M E S S A G E

HS/150-1-2 (AQ)

COMMANDER HALIFAX FORTRESS  
OC NO SIX DISTRICT DEPOT  
OC A-23 C & AAA T C  
OC NO 6 DIST COY RC SIGS  
OC EMBARKATION TRANSIT UNIT  
OC AA REINF CAMP BEDFORD  
BARRACK MASTER NEW WELLINGTON BKS  
OC NO SIX VTS  
OC NO 10 ADM UNIT CWAC  
OC NO 17 ADM UNIT CWAC  
OC NO 106 DEPOT COY CWAC  
OC 36 (RES) BDE GP  
OC NO 6 ES & W COY RCE  
OC NO 6 COY RCASC  
OC NO 6 COY RCOC  
OC NO 6 COY RCEME  
OC NO 1 PORT COY RCASC  
OC NO 26 COY CDC )  
OC NO 36 COY DDO ) DDO  
OC NO 50 COY CDC )  
DISTRICT MEDICAL OFFICER  
DISTRICT DENTAL OFFICER  
DISTRICT PAYMASTER  
COGSTELL ST HOSPITAL

I M P O R T A N T

O 782 NO LEAVE TO BE GRANTED TROOPS STOP ALL TROOPS TO BE  
ON DUTY OR CONFINED TO BARRACKS UNTIL FURTHER ORDERS

COMMANDING SIX

HALIFAX NS  
082335Z HRS MAY 45.

CONFIRMATION

EXHIBIT "DDD"

SAME AS EXHIBIT "O"

HC/120-2-1 (AQ)

MESSAGE

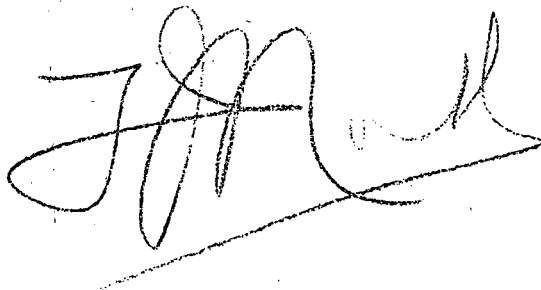
COMMANDER HALIFAX FORTRESS  
OC NO SIX DISTRICT DEPOT  
OC A.23 C & AAA TC  
OC NO SIX DISTRICT COY RC SIGS  
OC EMBARKATION TRANSIT UNIT  
OC A A REINF CAMP  
BARRACK MASTER NEW WELLINGTON BKS  
OC NO SIX V T S  
OC NO 10 ADM UNIT CWAC  
OC NO 17 ADM UNIT CWAC  
OC NO 106 DEPOT COY CWAC  
OC 36 (RES) BDE GP  
OC NO SIX COY ES & W RCE  
OC NO SIX COY RCASC  
OC NO SIX COY RCOC  
OC NO SIX COY RCENE  
OC NO ONE PORT COY RCASC  
OC NO 26 COY CDC)  
OC NO 36 COY CDC) DDO  
OC NO 50 COY CDC)  
DISTRICT MEDICAL OFFICER  
DISTRICT DENTAL OFFICER  
DISTRICT PAYMASTER  
COGSWELL STREET HOSPITAL  
D A P M

I M P O R T A N T

A 9650 REFERENCE MESSAGE A 9125 AND A 9149 MAY 11TH STOP  
AS THE CIVILIAN CURFEW HAS NOW BEEN LIFTED NORMAL  
LEAVE AND PASSES MAY BE GRANTED STOP HOWEVER  
ALL PERSONNEL HAVING ANY CONNECTION WITH THE VE DAY  
DISTURBANCES WILL BE HELD AVAILABLE TO GIVE EVIDENCE  
AT A MOMENTS NOTICE

HALIFAX NS  
16 1015 P MAY 25

COMMANDING SIX



F Sigs 5-0

C O P Y

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

Halifax, N. S.,  
4 May, 1945.

OC, No. 2 Sec. No. 6 District Signals, Halifax, N. S.  
OC, No. 3 Sec. No. 6 District Signals, Sydney, N. S.  
OC, No. 4 Sec. No. 6 District Signals, Goose Bay, Lab.  
OC, No. 5 Sec. No. 6 District Signals, Debert, N. S.

VE Day Operation

Due to the operational functions of this unit, a policy regarding the action to be taken on VE Day is described herewith:

(a) Normal week day traffic is anticipated, therefore ASO staffs should be maintained at normal shift levels. An abnormal traffic peak of several hours duration may occur following the announcement.

(b) ASO W/T equipment and switchboards must be given special attention on this day. Thoughtless boisterousness or vandalism must not be permitted to affect operation, or damage expensive equipment. At least one NCO should be posted at each vital center supplementing the regular operating personnel to ensure that personnel on duty are not interfered with. Particular attention is to be given to CWAC personnel in this regard.

(c) Wireless stations, if necessary, will be guarded. Your attention is directed to the possibility of personnel coming in contact with feeders or conductors carrying high voltage.

(d) M/T vehicle keys should be locked up on VE day except for those on essential duty. Vehicles without locks should be immobilized by having the rotor arm removed.

2. The above points are passed for your guidance, it is requested that you set up a schedule for your procedure on VE Day, with emphasis on the above mentioned precautionary requirements.

Signed:

(H.D. Rice) Lt.-Col.,  
District Signal Officer,  
Military District No. 6.

**EXHIBIT "FFF.1"**

Operation for H.Q. and No. 1 Section - VE DAY

The following procedure will be implemented immediately upon receipt of information as to the exact date of VE Day and for VE Day itself.

OFFICERS

Regardless of location, all officers will report to the Adjutant immediately upon receipt of news specifying VE Day. The Adjutant will advise of any immediate action to be taken and the above mentioned procedure is to be implemented by the Adjutant immediately. All officers are to be available at their posts throughout VE Day except when duty calls them elsewhere in which event their destination and expected time of return are to be marked on a notice board provided at this H.Q.

ASO - HALIFAX

One reliable N.C.O. supplementing the operating staff is to be posted at the ASO entrance to ensure that the operating staff, both teletype and switchboard, are not interfered with. He is to wear his Side Arms but carry no ammunition. This guard will be on duty during the entire day and meal relief will be provided for him by S/H Wight.

CITADEL

One reliable N.C.O. plus three Signalmen guards will be required for patrolling the transmitting station at the Citadel to ensure that people are not permitted in the vicinity of the transmitting station, the aerial poles, guys, or high tension feeders. This guard is to be maintained from 1900 hours until the celebration on Citadel Hill is completed as decided by the Orderly Officer. The guards will carry their arms but no ammunition.

H.Q. AREA

One reliable N.C.O. plus two Signalmen guards will look after discipline generally in H.Q. area. Their duties will include safeguarding vehicles, fire precaution, and personnel who may be returned to this Unit by Provost for causing disturbance. They will carry arms but no ammunition. These guards are to be on duty all day and meal relief will be provided by S/H Wight.

DARTMOUTH RECEIVING STATION

One additional N.C.O. will be posted at the Dartmouth Receiving Station supplementing the operating staff as a guard to prevent possible trespassing on our property and interfering with operating personnel. He will carry Side Arms but no ammunition. He will be on duty all day and meal relief will be arranged by S/Sgt. Small.

VEHICLES

The keys to all vehicles will be kept under lock and key on VE Day in the C.S.M.'s office and will not be released to any personnel except on orders of the Commanding Officer or O.C. No. 1 Section. The following exceptions will apply: One staff car may be used during the day, one Ration Truck for its run and essential D.R. M/T. Those vehicles not in actual use will be kept in the garage where this is possible and in any event the keys will be retained in the C.S.M.'s office under lock and key.

FORUM

One N.C.O. belonging to "Q" will be in charge at the Forum. He is to be provided with three extra Signalmen guards, all to be armed but without ammunition. They will be on duty all day and will prevent possible vandalism either at the Forum or in the Cable Yard adjoining. Meal relief will be provided by S/M Wight.

CONSTRUCTION CREW

The Construction Crew will be available for guard or parade duties if they are in Halifax Area or can be brought back in time.

PARADE

A Signals representation will be provided for the Formal Parade on VE Day. Every available man will be released for this Parade except for one of the above functions - either essential operation or guard duty. The cook house will operate as on a normal day. The Adjutant will provide a list of names of men available for the Parade and same will be turned over to S/M Wight as soon as possible after the announcement of the actual date of VE Day. The dress for VE Day Parade will be notified in Part One Orders and all ranks are cautioned to keep their equipment in exceptional condition for this Parade. Smartness and general bearing of the Signals representation on the VE Day celebration must be of such calibre as to be a credit to the Corps. No men will go on VE Day Parade without first being inspected personally in detail by the Adjutant and S/M Wight.

GENERAL

On VE Day the personnel of the Citadel Hill Transmitting Station will be responsible for the maintenance and operation of public address systems or any mobile equipment which will be our responsibility. O.C. No. 1 Section is to be kept advised of all details of these communications so that his section will be in a position to look after the maintenance and operation of the aforementioned equipment. One electrician should be available at all times at the Headquarters of this Company. His function will be to act as a floating maintenance man if any contingency which might occur require his services. The Adjutant is to provide a safety first kit for this H.Q. same to be placed in the office of the C.S.M. available at all times. A "Cases Tool Filled Instrument Mechanic" kit will also be kept available at the C.S.M.'s office properly locked. This kit to be taken on charge by the C.S.M. and returned to "Q" the following day.

*H. D. Rice*  
 (H.D. Rice) Lt-Col.  
 Commanding  
 No. 6 District Signals

Halifax, N.S.  
 5 May 45

EXTRACT OF DAILY ORDERS PART I  
NO 6 ORDNANCE DEPOT R C O C

TO: .....

.....  
.....  
The following is a certified extract of this Unit  
Daily Order Part II, No. 73 dated 5 May 45

2. DISCIPLINE "VE DAY"

It is expected that with the announcement  
of the cessation of hostilities with Germany, certain  
celebrations - both military and civilian - will take  
place in Halifax.

All personnel are warned that with the  
declaration of "VE Day no relaxation of military discipline  
will be allowed and any infractions of military regulations  
will be prosecuted severely.

Halifax, N.S.

Sgd. .... Major  
for O.C. No6 Ordnance Depot RCOG

EXTRACT OF DAILY ORDERS PART I  
NO 6 ORDNANCE DEPOT R C O C

TO: .....

.....  
.....  
The following is a certified extract of this Unit  
Daily Order Part II No. 75 dated 9 May 45

1. DISCIPLINE

Effective immediately no leave will be granted  
to personnel of No.6 Ordnance Depot RCOG

All personnel are on duty or confined to  
barracks.

Personnel on subsistence allowance must  
proceed by the most direct route to their residence and  
must remain in quarters until time to proceed on duty.

Sgd. .... Major  
for O.C. No6 Ordnance Depot RCOG



**EXHIBIT "HHH"**

**SAME AS EXHIBIT "LL"**

3.(b) Advised or reported to me.

Merchandise not traceable to any person found around R.A. Park and South Barracks and the Citadel (see Appx "A") 9 May 45. This merchandise has been turned over to the Police Dept. and their receipt obtained.

Merchandise as per Appendix "A"(i) found through kit inspection at 1730 hrs. 9 May 45 to be in the possession of A.607247 Gnr. Smorong. This merchandise has been turned over to the police Dept. and their receipt obtained.

Merchandise as per Appendix "B" recovered from C.49603 Gnr. Hutton N.D. and A.111070 Gnr. Toulouse A.J. of the 14th Battery and held at Fortress H.Q. These persons were apprehended by L/Bdr. Gaudio as they tried to leave South Barracks on their way back to the 14th Battery at 0730 hrs. 9 May 45.

Merchandise as Per Appendix "C" recovered from B.22710 B.Q.M.S. Newman R. and C.115024 Gnr. Bordeleau G. of the 19th Battery by the Provost Corps and retained by them. They are apprehended at approximately 1800 hrs 8 May 45.

The following persons were involved in breaches of discipline during the disturbances of 7th and 8th May 45:-

|                             |          |         |
|-----------------------------|----------|---------|
| B 22710 B.G.M.S. Newman R.  | 19th Bty | -S.C.M. |
| C 115024 Gnr. Bordeleau G.  | 19th Bty | -S.C.M. |
| A 607247 Gnr. Smorong E.    | 1st Bty  | -S.C.M. |
| C 49603 Gnr. Hutton M.D.    | 14th Bty | -S.C.M. |
| A 111070 Gnr. Toulouse A.J. | 14th Bty | -S.C.M. |

All are being charged under Sec. 40.  
"Being in improper possession of certain goods ....etc."

The following cases were heard by me and awarded as noted.-

|                            |          |                        |
|----------------------------|----------|------------------------|
| L 104632 Gnr. Stallard J.  | 18th Bty | 14 D.C.B. and 8 D. fop |
| F 600114 Gnr. Stevens G.J. | 1st Bty  | Dismissed.             |

The following were awarded 6 months jail by Civil Court.-

|                                   |          |
|-----------------------------------|----------|
| D 611433 Gnr. Gervais J.L.        | 14 Bty   |
| B 44375 Gnr (A/Bdr) Marshall G.S. | 18th Bty |

INVENTORY OF MERCHANDISE RE-CLAIMED BY THE  
21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A.

- 19 - pkgs of Tobacco
- 5 - pkgs of Snuff
- 1 - Sterling silver Woman's Brush
- 3 - Piece Costume Jewellery, Red Plastic
- 56 - packs Playing cards
- 1 - Pr Fleece lined boots size 9
- 2<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> - Pr maroon cloth bedroom slippers marked with the No. 588 and the sizes
- 1 - Pr brown leather shoes marked WB, Limited Custom Grade with No. WPTB 12415 C/D 100 2552 J11.
- 1 - Blue dress with Hanger
- 1 - Red Dress with Hanger
- 4 - Black leather Purses @ .44 each
- 27 - "Welgroom" and "Nobility" packet combs.
- 3- spools thread
- 1 - "Southwood" Pipe
- Assorted shoe laces
- 1 - Razor Strap Imperial Guedege 120
- 1 - Blue Tie, British Cravat
- 1 - Candleabra (silver color)
- 3 - Wood boxes @ \$1.09 each
- 1 - Grey shirt - "Bonnie Kay"
- 2 - pr Cloth Gloves @ \$1.00
- 1 - Pkg 50 Craven "A" Cigarettes
- 2 - Sets Corporal Stripes
- 2- - Sets Sgt Stripes
- 1 - Pr. Police suspenders
- 1 - Leather Belt
- 1 - Woman's Coat - Red - size 16
- 1 - Woman's sweater - size 20 green
- 1 - Pr. Ladies Black Leather Gloves
- 1 - Woman's Dress - size 13 Yellow
- 6 - ~~XXXXXX~~ Mens Dress Shirts
- 1 - Desk Drawer

EVIDENCE

ARTICLES

VALUE

LABEL

7. At approx. 1730 hrs. May 9th while conducting a Kit Inspection for loot, in the "Redblock" building Citadel Hill, Lt. R.V. Chadwick and Sgt Chisholm J.M. L 2617, found the articles listed in the possession of A 607247 Gnr SMORONG, RCA who stated certain articles were given to him by unknown sailors, and that certain articles belonged to himself (namely badges of rank and Police type suspenders). All these articles were confiscated and Gnr. SMORONG put under close arrest.

|  |         |                           |
|--|---------|---------------------------|
| 1 - Candleabra (silver color)              | Unknown | Nil                       |
| 3 - Wood Boxes @ \$1.09 ea.                | \$3.27  | Zellers                   |
| 1 - Grey Shirt - "Bonnie Kay"              | Unknown | Nil                       |
| 2 - Pr Cloth gloves @ \$1.00               | \$2.00  | Zellers                   |
| 8 - Packs Playing Cards, "Stag" @ .44 each | \$3.52  | Zellers                   |
| 2 - Packs Devon Playing Cards, @ .64 each  | \$1.28  | Zellers                   |
| 1 - Package 50 Craven "A" Cigarettes       | Unknown | Nil                       |
| 2 - Sets Corporal Stripes                  | Unknown | No label                  |
| 2 - Sets Sgt Stripes                       | Unknown | Claimed to be property of |
| 1 - Pr Police Suspenders                   | Unknown | Gnr SMORONG RCA           |
| 1 - Leather belt                           |         | A 607247                  |

Appx "B" to EXHIBIT III

Recovered Loot

2 qts Scotch  
2 Pts Scotch  
2 Pkgs Cigars  
25 Pkgs "Minora" Blades  
1 handkerchief  
2 grain leather tobacco pouches  
2 prs Soles leather  
2 men's suits 3 piece Brown Complete  
2 men's suits 3 piece Blue Complete  
1 men's Bath Robe Blue  
1 Ladies Swim suit 2 piece  
1 Neck Tie  
4 men's shirts  
2 garters  
1 braces men's  
1 pr. ladies shoes.

Appx "C" to EXHIBIT "III"

LIST OF CONFISCATED ARTICLES

(B 22710 CQMS R. Newman, 19th AA Bty., 21st AA Regt.)  
(C 614491 Pte G. Bordeleau, 19th AA Bty., 21 AA Regt)

Following articles taken from haversack in possession of  
CQMS Newman:

- 2 small silver trays (leaf shaped)
- 2 salt & pepper shakers (silver)
- 5 costume jewellery rings
- 5 glasses in leather case
- 2 silver sugar & cream sets
- 2 silver bowls with blue glass insets
- 1 silver butter dish

Following articles taken from person of CQMS Newman and  
Pte. Bordeleau:

- 4 flat 50's of cigarettes
- 16 small pkgs of cigarettes
- 1 leather glasses case
- 1 leather key case
- 1 Men's wrist watch
- 1 tie pin
- 1 leather tobacco pouch
- 1 pr tweezers.

s.19(1)

[REDACTED]

At approximately 1000 hrs May 9/45 the under-noted articles were voluntarily turned over by W 120639 Pte. REDHEAD, E.A. to Lieut M.S. PATTERSON at Citadel Hill. Pte. REDHEAD stated that these articles were given to her by the m/n soldier.

- 1 Piece costume jewellery shaped like a parrot, gold and red which had a tag on it marked \$3.00
- 1 Piece costume jewellery crown shaped, gold with yellow and green glass marked "Brookfield Sterling". Value unknown but estimated to be approximately \$3.00

The goods were confiscated, turned over to the Police Dept. and their receipt obtained. [REDACTED] was charged on May 12/45 with Conduct to the Prejudice of Good Order and Military Discipline in that he at Halifax N.S. on 8 May 45 was in improper possession of certain goods: (A.A. Sec 40). [REDACTED] stated that these articles had been handed to him by an unknown sailor as he was walking on the street. [REDACTED] also stated that because of responsibilities or the seriousness of the situation and the fact that he had been drinking, that he had casually passed them on to Pte. REDHEAD with whom he is slightly acquainted.

[REDACTED] was awarded 14 days C.B. and 8 days F.O.P.

23 May 45

I received two pieces of costume jewellery valued at approximately \$6.00 from Gnr. Stallard on V-E day 8 May 45. When he gave them to me, he said they had been given to him by a sailor. I voluntarily returned them to Lieut M.S. Patterson the following day.

(sgd) E. Redhead

.....  
W120639 Gnr Redhead, E.A.



s.19(1)

[REDACTED]

The m/n of this Regiment was stopped by the Canadian Provost Corps at Dartmouth, N.S. during the V.E. day riots in possession of the under-noted articles:-

- 1 white silk rabbit
- 1 panda bear
- 8 pkgs cigarettes (mixed)
- 6 large oranges
- apples & candy.

2. The goods were confiscated, this Unit notified of the incident, and the man subsequently charged with - "When on Active Service Breaking and Entering in search of plunder in that he at Halifax, N.S. on 8 May 45 Broke into premises and entered in search of Plunder" (sec 6(2)(d)A.A.) The soldier produced the attached letter and invoice to substantiate his claim that the goods were personal property. In view of the evidence the charge was dismissed.

DARTMOUTH FURNISHERS LIMITED  
Dartmouth, N.S.

April 26th, 1945

Mrs. W.M. Turple,  
Burnside, N.S.  
c/o Steven's Canteen

Clerk R.M.H.

| <u>Quan.</u> | <u>Description</u>                       | <u>Amount</u>     |
|--------------|--|-------------------|
| 1            | Chenille spread W.R. Brock               | 17.50             |
| 1            | Crib matting spring filled atlas bedding | 9.50              |
| 1            | Blanket Noal, Neinberg Bros              | 8.50              |
| 1            | Crib spread, Ideal                       | 3.50              |
|              |  | <hr/> 39.00 <hr/> |

(send)

THIS ACCOUNT MUST BE PAID IN FULL BY THE 25TH DAY OF  
JUNE IN ACCORDANCE WITH WARTIME PRICES AND TRADE BOARD  
REGULATIONS

Compared with original and  
found to be a true copy.

(sgd) G.W. Webster Lieut

Signed by  
Mrs. W. Turple

May 12/45  
Burnside, N.S.

TO WHOM IT MAY CONCERN:

I, Mrs. G.W. Roscoe, Burnside,  
Halifax, N.S., gave G.J. Stevens the following items:

- 1 white silk rabbit
- 1 panda bear
- 1 blue chenille bedspread
- 8 pkd cigarettes (mixed)
- 6 large oranges
- apples and candy

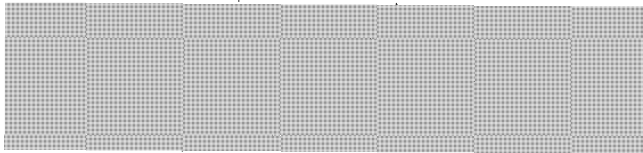
The rabbit and panda bear were prizes on punchboard, I have in store. I won them and gave them to G.J. Stevens for his children. The slip for the bedspread is in Mrs. W.M. Turple's name, she is my daughter and gave me the bedspread for Mother's Day. It wasn't the color I wanted so I gave it to my son G.J. Stevens. I have no slips for the rabbits and panda bear but can prove it came from this store and produce punch board. My store license is No. 158687.

Signed by  
Helen Roscoe

Compared with Original and  
found to be a true copy

(sgd) G.W. Webster Lieut.

s.19(1),



On the 9th Day of May 1945 the m/n soldier of the 21st A.A. Regt RCA was convicted before N.D. Murray, Stipendiary Magistrate in and for the Town of Dartmouth, for that he on the 8th day of May 1945, unlawfully and wilfully damage real property in the form of a plate glass window of the value of over twenty dollars. The m/n soldier elected summary trial without the intervention of a jury and pleaded guilty. He was sentenced to be imprisoned on the common gaol of the County of Halifax, at Halifax, for the term of six months.

C O N V I C T I O N

CANADA )  
PROVINCE OF NOVA SCOTIA )  
COUNTY OF HALIFAX )  
TOWN OF DARTMOUTH )

s.19(1)

BE IT REMEMBERED that on the 9th Day of May

A.D. 1945, [REDACTED] of the Town of  
Dartmouth aforesaid, is convicted before the undersigned,  
N.D. Murray Stipendiary Magistrate in and for the Town  
of Dartmouth, for that he the said

Bdr. Marshall G.S. B44375 did in the Town of Dartmouth  
aforesaid,

on the 9th day of May, A.D. 1945, unlawfully and  
wilfully damage the real property of Marguerite Leslie  
to wit to plate glass windows of the value of over  
twenty dollars and the said BDR. MARSHALL G.S. B44375  
having elected summary trial before me without the  
intervention of a jury and pleaded guilty

M.G. Leslie being the informant;

and I adjudge the said [REDACTED] ~~for his~~  
offence to forfeit and pay the sum of [REDACTED] Dollars  
cents to be paid and applied according  
to law; and also to pay to the said [REDACTED] the sum of  
Dollars, [REDACTED] cents, for his  
costs in this behalf; and if the said sums are not paid forthwith  
I adjudge the said [REDACTED] to be imprisoned in  
the common gaol of the County of Halifax at Halifax in the  
said County of Halifax, for the term of Six months  
unless the said sums and the costs and charges of commitment  
and of the conveying of the said [REDACTED]  
to the said common gaol are sooner paid.

GIVEN under my hand and seal the day and year first above  
mentioned in the Town of Dartmouth, in the County of Halifax,  
aforesaid.

CERTIFIED TRUE COPY:  
(sgd) for GL Kent Lt-Col.  
C.O. 21 AA Regt RCA

Sgd: ..... N.D. Murray .....  
Stipendiary Magistrate  
in and for the Town of Dartmouth.

First Telegram:

From: F.H.Q.

Date-time of ORigin  
07-1620 hrs.

To: All Units

21AA - W.G. 1636

1-9113 the remainder of today May 7 and all day May 8 will be a holdiay stop all normal duty must be carried out and security maintained stop adequate staffs "SUNDAY PATTERN" will be maintained stop essential services will be maintained equipment and property shall be safe guarded stop those empl-oyed these two days will be granted leave later on  
Sgd. Lt. Rose

Second Telegram:

From: F.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
07-1946 hrs.

To: All Units

21A.A. -W.G 1959

1-9114 fire works from GEORGES ISLAND  
from 2100 to 2300 hrs this date

Sgd: Major Trimble.

Third Telegram:

From: F.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
08-1920 hrs.

To: All Units

21 AA - LH 1934

1-9117 any soldier returning to barracks with any loot or stolen articles must be severely treated stop all such articles are to be confiscated for return to owner

Sgd. Capt myers.

Fourth Telegram:

From: F.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
09-0004 hrs.

To: All Units.

21 AA HW 0006

1-9118 No leave to be granted troops stop no troops to be on DUTY or confined to barracks until further notice

Sgd. Capt Butts.

Fifth Telegram:

From: F.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
11-1235 hrs.

To: All Units.

21 AA - LH 1245

A-9129 confinement to barracks of all troops is cancelled stop restrictions on leave and furlough to outside points is now lifted stop normal leave to personnel proceeding outside HALIFAX may be granted stop curfew in HALIFAX and DARTMOUTH extended to 2200 hrs. and will be observed by all troops

Sgd. Capt Butts.

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

A.A.S. 6-2-4

H.Q. 21 AA REGT RCA  
Halifax, N.S..  
4 May 45.

ALL BATTERY COMDS, 21 AA Regt RCA

ALL TROOP COMDS, 21 AA Regt, RCA

INSTRUCTIONS ON PROCLAMATION OF V.E. DAY

1. Enclosed herewith as per distribution list below, copies of Telephone Message I-1408 transmitted to all Battery and Troop Commanders, for the information and guidance of all concerned.

2. The text of the message is as follows:-

"UPON THE OFFICIAL ANNOUNCEMENT OF VICTORY IN EUROPE, ALL TROOPS WILL FALL IN ON PARADE, AT ONCE, AND THE FOLLOWING ANNOUNCEMENTS WILL BE MADE:

- (1) THE PROCLAMATION OF VICTORY, AND THE EFFECTIVE TIME.
- (2) THIS OCCASION MARKS THE END OF ORGANIZED HOSTILITIES IN EUROPE AND THE FINAL DEFEAT OF GERMANY. THIS HAS BEEN ACCOMPLISHED AFTER FIVE YEARS AND EIGHT MONTHS OF CEASELESS EFFORTS AND SACRIFICE BY THE ARMED FORCES OF THE ALLIED NATIONS.

THIS IS A DAY TO BE CELEBRATED BY ALL FREE NATIONS IN THE WORLD, AND A TIME TO FEEL THANKFUL THAT THE JOB HAS BEEN SO WELL DONE.

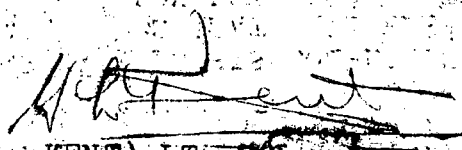
WE, IN THIS REGIMENT, MUST FEEL A GREAT PRIDE IN THE ACHIEVEMENTS OF OUR COMRADES IN ARMS WHO HAVE MET AND BEATEN THE ENEMY IN THE FIELD OF BATTLE.

WE MAY ALSO FEEL THAT WE HAVE A SHARE IN THE FINAL VICTORY AND TAKE PRIDE IN HAVING DONE WELL THE JOB THAT HAS BEEN ALLOTTED TO US IN HIS MAJESTY'S SERVICE.

THIS REGIMENT HAS BEEN ORGANIZED READY TO FIGHT FOR OVER TWO AND ONE HALF YEARS AND HAS MAINTAINED THE HIGH TRADITIONS OF THE ROYAL CANADIAN ARTILLERY. ALTHOUGH NOT NOW OPERATIONAL, THERE WILL BE NO LET DOWN IN GOOD DISCIPLINE AND SOLDIERLY CONDUCT. YOU ARE STILL GUNNERS.

THE REGIMENTAL COMMANDER EXTENDS HIS COMPLIMENTS TO ALL RANKS ON THE HIGH STANDARDS THAT HAVE BEEN MAINTAINED, AND APPRECIATES THE LOYALTY, COOPERATION AND SPIRIT OF GOOD SERVICE OF ALL IN THIS REGIMENT. "

/WFH

  
(G.L. KENT) LT. COL.  
COMMANDING OFFICER, 21 AA REGT RCA

DISTRIBUTION LIST:

|                    |             |
|--------------------|-------------|
| RHQ 21 AA Regt RCA | (3 copies)  |
| No. 1 AA OR RCA    | (3 copies)  |
| 1 AA Bty RCA       | (5 copies)  |
| 4 AA Bty RCA       | (10 copies) |
| 14 AA Bty RCA      | (3 copies)  |
| 18 AA Bty RCA      | (5 copies)  |
| 19 AA Bty RCA      | (5 copies)  |
| 146 AA Bty RCA     | (10 copies) |



First Telegram:

From: R.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
07 n 1105

To: ALL UNITS  
Q1412

No action regarding V.E. Day celebrations is to be taken until officially advised by this H.Q. Ack. Urgent.

Second Telegram:

From: R.H.W.

Date-Time of Origin  
07-1112

To: ALL UNITS (URGENT)  
Q-1413

REFERENCE Q-1411. V-E DAY PARADE WILL BE TODAY. TROOPS REQUESTED IN Q-1411 WILL BE AT SOUTH COMMONS AT 1330 HRS. ACKNOWLEDGE TO R.H.Q.

Third Telegram:

From: R.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
07-1122

To: ALL UNITS  
Q-1414

REFERENCE Q-1413 V-E DAY PARADE CANCELLED UNTIL FURTHER NOTICE. ACKNOWLEDGE TO R.H.Q.

Fourth Telegram:

From: R.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
07-1400

To: M.S.L. FOR RETRANSMISSION TO ALL UNITS BY COMMANDERS  
Q-1415

REFERENCE Q-1411 PARADE FOR V.E. DAY WILL FALL IN AT R.H.Q. AT 7 TIME TO BE GIVEN LATER INSTEAD OF THE COMMONS.

Fifth Telegram:

From: R.H.Q.

Date-Time of origin  
07-1445

To: ALL UNITS AAOR RHQMT  
Q 1416

Vehicles will be grounded, repeat, vehicles will be grounded from 1500 hrs 7 May 45. Permission to use vehicles will be granted on request from R.H.Q. Ack.

First Telegram:

From: R.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
08 0955

To: ALL UNITS (VIA A.A.O.R.)

Q1418 The remainder of today May 8 will be a holiday. All normal duty must be carried out and security maintained. Adequate staff (Sunday pattern) will be maintained. Essential services will be maintained. Equipment and property should be safeguarded. Those employed today will be granted leave later on.

Second Telegram:

From: R.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
08-1032

To: A.A.O.R. FOR RETRANSMISSION TO ALL UNITS

Q1419

PERSONNEL OUTLINED IN Q-1411 FOR V-E DAY PARADE WILL REPORT TO THIS R.H.Q. AT 1315 HRS TODAY 8 MAY 45. URGENT. ACKNOWLEDGE.

Third Telegram:

From: R.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
08 1150

To: All units

Q1420

Reference A.A.S.- 6-2-4 re V.E.Day message outlined will be read at Battery Commanders discretion.

Fourth Telegram:

From: R.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
08-1920

To: 146TH A.A. BTY.

Q-1423

ANY SOLDIER RETURNING TO BARRACKS WITH ANY LOOT OR STOLEN ARTICLES MUST BE SEVERELY TREATED. ALL SUCH ARTICLES ARE TO BE CONFISCATED ~~FROM~~ RETURN TO OWNER.

EXHIBIT "NNN 1-4"

- Exhibit NNN-1 Pictures of Disturbances of evening  
of 7th to 8th May 45.
- Exhibit NNN-2 General pictures of disturbances in  
Halifax on 8th May 45.
- Exhibit NNN-3 (i) Pictures of disturbances at Hollis St.  
Liquor Store on 8th May 45.  
(ii) Pictures of disturbances at Sackville  
St. Liquor Store on 8th May 45.
- Exhibit NNN-4 Pictures of disturbances at Keiths  
Brewery on 8th May 45.

NOTE: These Exhibits of pictures are only  
attached to the original copy of the  
proceedings.

First Telegram:

From: R.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
09-1130

To: A.A.O.R. for transmission to All units.

Q-1424

Kit inspection will be carried out forthwith ☉ all personnel found in possession of looted merchandise or supplies will be placed under arrest ☉ Reports of findings or NIL reports where applicable will be furnished at once ☉ Acknowledge.

Second Telegram:

From: C.C. 21 A.A. (VIA A.A.OER.)

Date-Time of Origin  
09 1500

To: ALL BTY. COMDS.

Q 1426

Until further notice an Officer will be on duty at each B.H.Q. Orderly Room at all times.

Third Telegram:

From: R.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
09-1531

To: ALL BTY. COMMANDERS

Q-1428

REPORT NO. OF PERSONNEL NOT INCLUDING PERSONNEL FOR OLANDS AND COLD STORAGE AVAILABLE FOR AID TO THE CANADIAN PROVOST CORPS BEARING IN MIND THAT SUFFICIENT PERSONNEL MUST BE IN READINESS ON SITE FOR SAFEGUARDING SAME.

Fourth Telegram:

From: R.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
ØØ 11-1210

To: A.A.O.R. FOR<sup>RE</sup> TRANSMISSION to all units

Q-1437

EXCEPTING PERSONNEL REQUIRED FOR SPECIAL GUARD DUTY IN HALIFAX NUMBERS AS OF LAST NIGHT NORMAL PASSES MAY BE GRANTED TO 2130 hrs. TO HALIFAX RESIDENTS TILL 2345 HRS. TO NIGHT.

Fifth Telegram:

From: R.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
11-1300

To: ALL UNITS

Q 1432

CONFINEMENT TO BARRACKS OF ALL TROOPS IS NOW CANCELLED. RESTRICTION ON LEAVE AND FURLOUGH TO OUTSIDE POINTS IS NOW LIFTED. NORMAL LEAVE TO PERSONNEL PROCEEDING OUTSIDE HALIFAX MAY BE GRANTED. CURFEW IN HALIFAX AND DARTMOUTH EXTENDED TO 2200 HRS. AND WILL BE OBSERVED BY ALL TROOPS.

- 2 -P.2 of EXHIBIT "000".

Sixth Telegram:

From: R.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
11-1645

To: ALL BTYS BY A.A.O.RR.

Q-1435

EACH BATTERY WILL SELECT 30 O.R.'s TO BE READY TO CARRY OUT ANY SPECIAL ORDERS FROM 2030 HRS. TO 2200 HRS. IF NO WORD RECEIVED BY 2200 HRS. THEN NORMAL ROUTINE.

Seventh Telegram:

From: R.H.Q.

Date-Time of Origin  
15 1840

To: ALL UNITS

Q 1447

NOT NECESSARY FOR AN OFFICER TO BE PRESENT IN BTY. OFFICES.

EXHIBIT "PPP"

A3L.5-9

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

- ARMY -

H.Q. 146th A.A. Bty., (3L) R.C.A.

Halifax, N. S.,  
14 May 1945.

Commanding Officer,  
21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A.,  
Halifax, N. S.

LOG OF EVENTS

Reference your telephone message Q-1441, d/13 May 45.

- May 7  
1 Officer, 1 Sergeant & 4 Gunners training on 18 Pdr as a saluting Battery.  
1 N.C.O. and 6 Gunners at 12 sites in the Unit.
- May 8  
Saluting Bty standing by waiting for orders to fire salute.  
Fifteen Other Ranks on Drumhead Service on South Common.  
Guards and Fire Picquet at each site.
- May 9  
3 Officers, 12 N.C.O.'s & 72 Gunners, employed as guards and fire picquet at the sites in the Bty. Two officers and sixty other ranks were detailed as a guard at the Cold Storage Plant. Fifty per cent were relieved at 0100 hrs on 10 May 45.
- May 10  
Three Officers, 12 N.C.O.'s and 72 Gunners; Guard & Picquet at sites.  
One Officer and fifty other ranks on guard at Oland's Brewery. Ten gunners remained on Duty until 0600 hrs 11 May 45. Remainder returned to Unit at 0100 hrs, 11 May 45.
- May 11  
Three Officers, 12 N.C.O.'s & 72 Gunners: Guard and Picquet at site.  
One Officer and Fifty other ranks at the head office of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission.
- May 12  
Same as May 11th, 1945.
- May 13  
Three Officers, 12 N.C.O.'s & 72 Gunners: Guard & Picquet at sites.  
One Officer and ten other ranks at Oland's Brewery, with twenty other ranks standing by at the sites.

During the period from 7th May to 13th May there were no breaches of discipline.

A complete kit inspection of this Unit took place on May 9th by the O.C. at Bty. Headquarters and by Troop Commanders at their various sites. The only articles that were turned in were three Ladies Handbags and one box of Handkerchiefs which were found on the O.C.'s desk when he came into his office during the morning. These were handed over to Inspector Baker at the Halifax Police Station, and a receipt obtained for the same. All Personnel of this Unit have been confined to Barracks from 9th May 45 until 12th May when anyone who were not duty was allowed out until 2130 hrs. Only five other ranks were allowed out on pass per troop for this period.

(F.J. IRWIN) Major,  
Officer Commanding,  
146th A.A. Bty., (3L) R.C.A.

WIRES

FROM: R.H.Q. Date-Time-of Origin  
07-1045

TO: A.A.O.R.

Q.1411

REFERENCE V-EDAY PARADE THIS REGIMENT WILL SUPPLY 75 MEN AND 2 OFFICERS FROM BTYS AS MARKED. 1ST A.A. 15 MEN; 4TH A.A. 15 MEN; 18TH AA CAPT MALCOM & 15 MEN; 19 AA LIEUT. WILLIAMS AND 15 MEN. 146TH AA 15 MEN. ALL TROOPS WILL BE SIZED AT 5 FT 10 INCHES PLUS OR MINUS 1 INCH. BATTLE DRESS WITH ANKLETS WEB WAIST BELTS AND FIELD SERVICE CAPS. DATE WILL BE ANNOUNCED TIME WILL BE 1330 HRS PLACE WILL BE SOUTH COMMONS HALIFAX

---

SECOND TELEGRAM

FROM: R.H.Q. 07-1105

TO: TO ALL UNITS

Q 1412

NO ACTIONS REGARDING V-E DAY CELEBRATIONS IS TO BE TAKEN UNTIL OFFICIALLY ADVISED BY THIS HQ. ACKNOWLEDGE TO RHQ URGENT

---

THIRD TELEGRAM

FROM: RHQ 07-1445

TO: A.A.R.O. to all sections

VEHICLES WILL BE GROUNDED REPEAT VEHICLES WILL BE GROUNDED FROM 1500 HRS 7-5-45 PERMISSION TO USE VEHICLES WILL BE GRANTED ON REQUEST FROM R.H.Q. ACKNOWLEDGE TO R.H.Q.

MAJOR WHITAKER

---

FOURTH TELEGRAM

FROM: R.H.Q. 08-0955

TO: A.A.O.R. for retransmission to all Units

Q-1418

THE REMAINDER OF TODAY 8 MAY WILL BE A HOLIDAY. ALL NORMAL DUTIES MUST BE CARRIED OUT AND SECURITY MAINTAINED. ADIQUETLY STAFF (SUNDAY PATTERN) WILL BE MAINTAINED. ESSENTIAL SERVICE WILL BE MAINTAINED EQUIPMENT AND PROPERTY SHOULD BE SAFE GUARDED. THOSE EMPLOYED TODAY WILL BE GRANTED LEAVE LATER

---

FIFTH TELEGRAM

FROM: RHQ 08-1150

TO: FOR RETRANSMISSION TO ALL UNITS

Q-1420

RE A.A.S. 6-2-4 RE V-E DAY MESSAGE OUTLINED WILL BE READ AT ETY COMMANDERS DISCRETION

COPIES OF WIRES

SIXTH TELEGRAM

FROM: R.H.Q. Date-Time of Origin  
08-1920  
TO: 146TH AA BTY  
Q 1423

ANY SOLDIER RETURNING TO BARRACKS WITH ANY LOOT OR STOLEN ARTICLES MUST BE SEVERELY TREATED. ALL SUCH ARTICLES ARE TO BE CONFISCATED FOR RETURN TO OWNER.

SEVENTH TELEGRAM

FROM: R.H.Q. 09-1130  
TO: A.A.O.R. for re-transmission to all units  
Q-1424

KIT INSPECTION WILL BE CARRIED OUT FORTHWITH AND ALL PERSONNEL FOUND IN POSSESSION OF LOOTED MERCHANDISE OR SUPPLIES WILL BE PLACED UNDER ARREST. REPORTS OF FINDINGS OR NIL REPORTS WHERE APPLICABLE WILL BE FURNISHED AT ONCE ACKNOWLEDGE

EIGHTH TELEGRAM

FROM: C.O. 21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A. 09-1500  
TO: ALL BTY COMMANDERS & G.O.R.  
Q-1526

UNTIL FURTHER NOTICE AN OFFICER WILL BE ON DUTY AT EACH BTY HQ ORDERLY ROOM AT ALL TIMES.

LIEUT. COL KENT

FROM: RHQ 09-1531  
TO: ALL BTY COMMANDERS

NINTH TELEGRAM

q 1428

REPORT NO OF PERSONNEL NOT INCLUDING PERSONNEL FOR OLANDS AND COLD STORAGE AVAILABLE FOR AID TO THE CANADIAN PROVOST CORPS BEARING IN MIND THAT SUFFICIENT PERSONNEL MUST BE IN READINESS ON SITE FOR SAFEGUARDING SAME

TENTH TELEGRAM

FROM: R.H.Q. 11-1210  
TO: A.A.O.R. for Retransmission to all Units  
Q-1437

EXCEPTING PERSONNEL REQUIRED FOR SPECIAL GUARD DUTY IN HALIFAX NUMBERS AS OF LAST NIGHT NORMAL PASSES MAY BE GRANTED TO 2130 hrs. TO HALIFAX RESIDENTS TILL 2345 HRS TONIGHT



P4 EXHIBIT "PPP"

COPIES OF WIRES

ELEVENTH TELEGRAM

Date-Time of Origin  
11-1457

FROM: R.H.Q.

TO: A.A.O.R. for transmission to all Units

Q-1432

CONFINEMENT TO BARRACKS OF ALL TROOPS OF THIS REGT CONTINUES UNTIL FURTHER NOTICE. RESTRICTIONS ON LEAVES AND FURLONGHS TO OUTSIDE POINTS IS NOW LIFTED. NORMAL LEAVES OF PERSONNEL PROCEEDING OUT OF HALIFAX MAY BE GRANTED. CURFEW IN HALIFAX & DARTMOUTH EXTENDED UNTIL 2200 HRS

TWELFTH TELEGRAM

FROM: R.H.Q.

11-1645

TO: ALL BTYS BY A.A.O.R.

Q.-1435

EACH BATTERY WILL SELECT 20 O.R.'S TO BE READY TO CARRY OUT ANY SPECIAL ORDERS FROM 2030 HRS TO 2200 HRS. IF NO WORD RECEIVED BY 2200 HRS THEN NORMAL ROUTINE

THIRTEENTH TELEGRAM

FROM: R.H.Q.

11-1645

TO: ALL BTYS BY A.A.O.R.

Q.-1435

EACH BATTERY WILL SELECT 20 O.R.'S TO BE READY TO CARRY OUT ANY

THIRTEENTH TELEGRAM

FROM: R.H.Q.

TO: A.A.O.R. for Re-Transmission to all Units

Q-1436

SAT. 12TH OF MAY WILL BE TREATED AS FOR SUNDAYS DUTIES. GUARDS WILL AGAIN BE REQUIRED IN HALIFAX THIS P.M. DETAILS LATER.

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
A R M Y

18th. H.A.A. BTY., RCA,  
Halifax, N.S., 22 May 45.

V.E. DAY DISTURBANCES  
18th H.A.A. Bty., R.C.A.

1. STRENGTH - 7 May 45.

|                    | <u>OFFICERS</u> | <u>O.R.'S</u> |
|--------------------|-----------------|---------------|
| A.Tp. & Bty., H.Q. | 5               | 113           |
| B. Tp.             | 3               | 79            |
|                    | <u>8</u>        | <u>192</u>    |

2. ESTIMATE - Number of Officers and other ranks out of barracks not on duty in Halifax and Dartmouth at following times:

(a) May 7 1945

|                |                        |     |
|----------------|------------------------|-----|
| (1) Morning    | A Tp. Nil<br>B Tp. Nil | Nil |
| (11) Afternoon | A Tp. Nil<br>B Tp. Nil | Nil |
| (111) Evening  | A Tp. 12<br>B Tp. 8    | 20  |

(b) May 8 1945

|                |  |     |
|----------------|--|-----|
| (1) Morning    | A Tp. Nil<br>B Tp. Nil                     | Nil |
| (11) Afternoon | A Tp. 30<br>B Tp. 13                       | 43  |
| (111) Evening  | A Tp. 30 Same as for afternoon<br>B Tp. 13 | 43  |

Of the above 30 passes issued to A Tp 10 passes were to personnel who attended the Drumhead Service at 1400 hrs. on Citadel Hill.

3. TIME place and nature of all disturbances involving Army personnel:

(a) My personal knowledge

(1) Personnel under my command.....Nil

(11) Personnel not under my command

(a) Three or four intoxicated soldier on Barrington St. and one in Grafton Park between 1700 and 1930 hrs 8 May 45.

(b) One soldier kicking at a door on Barrington St. at about 1730 hrs. 8 May 45.

(c) One soldier in a store on Barrington St. with many other looters at about 1900 hrs 8 May 45.

(d) Two or three soldiers carrying loot on Barrington St. Between 1800 and 1900 hrs. 8 May 45. Two soldiers with loot on Queen St. at about 1930 hrs. 8 May 45.

TIME place and nature of etc. (cont'd)

P.6 E & P.P.P.

(b) Reported to me

(1) Under my command - One soldier reported to have received two brooches and passed them on to two CWAC Personnel. Disciplinary action taken by C.O.

(11) Not under my Command - Nil

4. INSTRUCTIONS or Orders from higher Authority - Nil

5. ORDERS issued etc. prior to midnight 6 - 7 May - Nil

6. ORDERS issued on May 7 relating to V.E. Day - Nil

7. ORDERS issued on 8 May 45 not routine - Nil

All Battery Officers less one from each site (2) reported to R.H.Q. at 1800 hrs. 8 May 45 and did patrol duty.

Forty men were transported to Provost B arracks at approximately 1900 hrs. 8 May 45 for guard detail.

8. ALL PERSONNEL

were confined to barracks on the 9 May 45 and for several days thereafter. 75 men and 3 Officers were detailed for immediate guard duty at 1500 hrs 9 May 45. 40 men and 2 Officers were detailed for guard duty at 1900 hrs. 10 May 45. 50 men and 1 Officer was detailed for guard duty at 1900 hrs 11 May 45. 40 men and 1 Officer was detailed for guard duty at 1900 hrs. 12 May 45. 10 men and 1 Officer was detailed for guard duty at 1900 hrs. 13 May 45.

9. MY PERSONAL

movements with regards to the disturbances on 7 and 8 of May and what I saw:

7 May 45 Nil

8 May 45 I proceeded from battery H.Q. in company with two other bty officers at approximately 1415 hrs. to go to R.A. Park. On arrival there the two officers left me to go to the celebrations at Citadel Hill. I went to R.H.Q. and R.A. Park Mess and then to a friend's home on Birmingham St. near Morris St. with a view to us both going to Citadel Hill. However due to unavoidable circumstances we were unable to proceed until about 1640 hrs.

At about 1515 hrs. sailors began to appear on the street approaching from the south and off Morris St. This went on intermitently for half an hour or more. The street was not watched constantly.

I do not recall seeing any soldiers or civilians carrying any beer at this time.

At about 1640 hrs. we proceeded to Citadel Hill. On Queen St. between Artillery and Sackville St. at one place I saw about six sailors sitting on cases of beer and drinking it. A little farther on about four sailors were carrying cases and bottles of beer and drinking it. We went up Citadel Hill on the road from the South east to the enclosure and then down the slope and stairway by the clock to George St. On the portion of the Eastern slope of this Hill that could be viewed from this route I saw many groups

P. 7 Et CPP

8 May 45

of sailors and their lady friends sitting around from one to four beer cases with many bottles lying around in their immediate vicinity.

There were also groups of civilians (but a lesser number) doing the same things and in some of these groups there would be the single sailor participating or soldier.

We proceeded down George st. to Barrington st along Barrington st. to Spring Garden Road and then

North on Queen St. Along the west side of Barrington there was a large crowd of people, some were standing, and watching, some were moving slowly, and the remainder about 60 % proceeding in both directions as fast as traffic would permit.

On this side many of the store windows had been broken and the stores apparently looted.

On the East side of the street there was no crowd and at a distance apart of two or three stores there would be one two or three sailors going along breaking undamaged windows or broken windows and glass doors. One sailor I watched for some distance and who broke many windows and whose apparent friend was trailing along behind, used a pair of shoes or boots, tied together by the laces, to break the windows.

One soldier was trying to kick in the boards nailed on a door in which the glass had been broken.

There were quite a number of sailors and civilians under the influence of liquor.

There was only a few stores that I saw people come out of carrying loot but there were many civilians, men, women, young girls and children carrying loot of every description. They were crossing the street to and fro and passing from front and rear.

A number of sailors were carrying loot but not in the same proportion as the civilians.

Only about 5 to 10% of the crowd would be soldiers and only two or three had loot.

There was a lesser number of airmen on the street than soldiers.

Along Spring Garden Road I met several sailors under the influence of liquor. In Grafton Park there were many people sitting and standing and beer bottles scattered around.

Personnel of all branches of the armed forces were represented.

At the intersection of Queen st I decided to go to Regimental Headquarters at R.A. Park to see if any action was to be taken by the military forces in connection with these disturbances and to phone my own battery to see what the situation was there and if any instructions had been received at the bty. office.

At R.A. Park I met the adjutant who informed me to attend at a meeting to be held at R.H.Q. in a few minutes. This I did. All available Officers in the Regiment were contacted and reported to R.H.Q. at approximately 1800 hrs. We were all told that the D.O.C. had instructed that we do patrol duty and order all soldiers off the street and back to their quarters.

It was decided that personnel of certain units would go to their Unit quarters and that personnel of the 21 st A.A. Regt. would proceed to south Barracks where transportation would be made available to them.

P.8 E8 PPP

Cont'd

With these instructions we all proceeded to do patrol duty. I went alone and proceeded down Queen st to Spring Garden Road to Barrington st and then north to Sackville st. On the way I spoke to about a dozen soldiers, ordering them off the street and to return to their units, some of them had been spoken to by patrols ahead of me and were then leaving the area, all others indicated their intention of going to their quarters. I then proceeded south on Barrington st to Morris st and then back to Salter st on the east side of Barrington st. I spoke to 8 or 10 soldiers. One soldier had 3 or 4 prs of shoes in his arms, as soon as I spoke to him he dropped the shoes and wen on his way. In the shoe store at the corner of Salter and Barrington st I saw a large crowd of people including one soldier. I didn't go in to speak to him. I saw two civilians, each carrying 10 boxes of shoes, (I counted them) going south on Barrington st apparently from this store.

I then walked up to Grafton Park. Told some sailors to go back to barracks.

The crowds were becoming less in number. Only one soldier left in the park and he was drunk.

I then went down to Barrington st again and patrolled North and South a few times and then returned to R.H.Q.

The soldiers had become very few on the street by this time. The crowd, in general, was becoming less.

Several civilians including young women were seen carrying armfuls of dresses and merchandise through Grafton Park. On Queen st I saw a soldier with an armful of merchandise. trying to get in a house that he perhaps thought was his home. It wasn't the right place. He was intoxicated.

On Blowers st I saw a sailor with about 20 pr of shoes tied together and thrown over his shoulder.

It was about 1945 hrs. when I arrived at R.H.Q.

Approximately all Officers had returned from patrol duty and about a dozen were sent to the C Pro C Barracks.

Forty men of the battery were sent to the C Pro C at about 1900 hrs.

I remained at R.H.Q. for about an hour then went out for supper and reported back to R.H.Q.

All emergencies seemed to have been taken care of and I went back to battery H.Q. about midnight.

(W.J. MC LEAN) Major,  
Officer Commanding,  
18th. H.A.A. Bty., RCA

P.9 68 PPP

3-0  
DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- A R M Y -

18th H.A.A. Bty., RCA,  
Halifax, N. S., 13 May 45

s.19(1)

Commanding Officer,  
21 AA Regt., R.C.A.,  
Halifax, N. S.

SYNOPTIC LOG 7 May - 13 May 45

Guards

Ref. message Q 1441 d/13 May 45

7 May 45 Nil  
8 May 45 All Officers less one from each sites (2)  
reported to R.H.Q. at 1800 hrs and were placed  
at the disposal of the Provost Corps.  
40 men were transported to Provost Barracks at  
approximately 1990 hrs for guard detail.  
9 May 45 75 men and 3 officers detailed for immediate  
duty at 1500 hrs.  
Of these one Officer and 25 men were sent to  
the cold storage Plant.  
2 Officers and 50 men to Oland's Brewery.  
Guards were maintained till 0200 hrs when all  
but 20 men and one officer at Oland's Brewery  
returned to Camp.  
10 May 45 The remaining 20 returned at 0700 hrs 10 May 45.  
20 men and one Officer despatched to the Head  
Office of the Nova Scotia Liquor Commission at  
1900 hrs. 20 men and one officer despatched  
to Olands Brewery at 1900 hrs. All guards  
returned to Camp by 0100 hrs.  
11 May 45 50 men and one officer posted to duty at Cold  
Storage Plant at 1900 hrs.  
12 May 45 40 men and one officer posted to duty at Cold  
Storage Plant at 1900 hrs.  
13 May 45 10 men and one officer posted to duty at Cold  
Storage Plant at 1900 hrs.

BREECHES OF DISCIPLINE

9 May 45 Absent Without Leave:-

0800 hrs to 1500 hrs  
0800 hrs to 1500 hrs  
0800 hrs to 2359 hrs  
0800 hrs to 2000 hrs  
0100 hrs to 1200 hrs.

Conduct to the Prejudice of Good Order:-

G 57260 L/Bdr. Arsenault, B.

K 29217 Gnr. ~~Martin~~ Martin, J.P.

A 53024 L/Bdr. Goguen, L.

IN THAT they at Olands Brewery, on 9 May 45 became  
unfit for duty by reason of indulgence in  
alcoholic stimulants

QUANTITIES OF MERCHANDISES RECOVERED

NIL

POINTS OF SPECIAL INTEREST

NIL

(W.J. McLean) Major, 000819  
Officer Commanding,  
18th H.A.A. Bty., R.C.A

P.10 Ex PPP

N 6-0

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
ARMY

19 A.A. Battery RCA  
Halifax, NS 22 May 45.

Headquarters,  
21 AA Regiment RCA  
Halifax, N.S.

V.E. Day Disturbances

Reference message Q.1466 d/21 May 45,

2. Herewith report as requested in the above  
mentioned message.

(G.H. Johnson) Major  
Commanding,  
19 A.A. Battery RCA

P.10 Ex PPP

19 A.A. Battery, RCA

21 A.A. Regt, RCA

1. Ration Strength - 7 May 45

|             | Princes Lodge | Navy Island |
|-------------|---------------|-------------|
| Officer     | 4             | 3           |
| Other Ranks | 68            | 54          |

- 8 May 45

|             |    |    |
|-------------|----|----|
| Officers    | 4  | 3  |
| Other Ranks | 68 | 55 |

2.(a) Officers and Other ranks in Halifax and Dartmouth on leave

On May 7th 45

Prince's Lodge

Navy Island

(i) Morning

nil

nil

(ii) Afternoon

Approximately 6  
Other Ranks to Halifax  
at 1600 hrs due back  
0730 hrs next morning  
but came back to smoker  
at night

nil

(iii) Evening after  
1800 hrs

1 officer and  
1 Other Rank  
to Halifax

1 officer and  
23 Other Ranks  
for Halifax area  
due back 0730 hrs  
next morning  
11 back before  
midnight

On May 8th 45

(i) Morning

nil

nil

(ii) Afternoon

2 offrs and  
about 12 ORs  
to Halifax to watch  
V.E. Parade.

nil

(iii) Evening after  
1800 hrs

Only the 12 Other  
Ranks who had gone  
in in the Afternoon  
All but 2 of these  
had been accounted  
for by 1900 hrs in  
roundup of personnel

No officers, 17  
ORs in Halifax area  
(Dartmouth) 8 back  
by 2200 hrs but  
balance to to vic  
of Tufts Cove where  
there is no phone  
and few radios.  
They ret between  
0145 hrs and 0750  
hrs. 2 men ret at  
0145 hrs balance  
between 0715 hrs  
and 0750 hrs.



P.12 63 888

3. (a) (i) Nil  
(ii) nil

(b) (i) On Tuesday at 1900 hrs all Other Ranks except two had been accounted for from Prince's Lodge.

On Wednesday morning about 1100 hrs the 2 i/c of Regiment called me and told me that B.22710 BQMS Newman, R and C.115024 Gnr Bordeleau, G. were in custody of Provost Corps after having been picked up with loot. I got them both out. Both are under arrest, On Charge. The matter has been taken out of my hands and is being handled by Regt.

(ii) nil

4. Message Q 1406 d 03/1010 asking for personnel for saulting batter.

On 4th May 45 at 1145 hrs all Battery Commanders were told over command lines that on V.E. Day being officially declared, troops would be called on parade and a proclamation read (this was confirmed by message I 1408 d 04/1200 which gave the text of the proclamation) we were also told that at our discretion the canteens would be opened and free beer given (up to 20 cases per batter to be allotted for this purpose).

Message Q 1411 d 07/1045 calling for men for V.E. parade.

Message Q 1412 d 07/1105 advising that no action was to be taking re V.E. Day celebrations until advised to.

Message Q 1413 d 07/1112 V.E. Parade will be today (this was later cancelled)

Message Q 1416 d 07/1445 Grounding of vehicles

Message Q 1417 d 08/0925 Personnel to stand by for V.E. Parade

Message Q 1418 d 08/0955 Remainder of day to be holiday (Sunday pattern)

Message Q 1419 d 08/1033 Time and place of V.E. Parade

Message Q 1420 d 08/1150 V.E. Day message will be read at Bty Commanders discretion.

Message Q 1423 d 08/1920 Soldiers returning to barracks with loots to be apprehended and relieved of any such articles.

Message I 9118 d 09/0004 from Fortress. All troops C.B.

5. In a weekly situation report one of the troop commanders had urged that a definite policy be laid down for V.E. Day. Accordingly I wrote the attached letter on my own responsibility 14 Apr 45.

On 29 Apr 45 (Sunday) we were advised by Message Q 7989 d 29/0930 that the 21st AA Regt RCA was non-operational. I attended a conference in the afternoon of officers of the Regiment. Following the conference I suggested that all small arms amm be withdrawn from the men. This was vetoed at the time but later ordered in Message Q 1400 d 01/1555.

- 3 -

On Monday the 20 Apr I had the men at both troops paraded in their canteens and spoke to them personally advising them that although the Regt was non-operational, work would still go on and that I wanted them to conduct themselves in the same manner as they had in the past. Discipline was not to relax and I did not want any one of them to bring discredit on the Battery by foolish acts, using the excuse that the Regiment was non-operationa.

This had no bearing on VE Day but is mentioned to inform the Court that the men had been spoken to on 30th April regarding discipline generally.

Reference Message Q 1406

I instructed the BSM to detail the men required.

Reference Message I 1408

I advised "B" Troop commander to hold 10 cases of beer for VE Day. I also instructed the canteen steward and officers at Prince's Lodge that 10 cases would be held for this site to be given out on my order.

Reference Message Q 1411

I instructed the BSM to detail men for parade and personally supervise the drill.

Before VE Day had been anticipated, a smoker had been suggested and planned for Monday night 7 May at Prince's Lodge and Tuesday night 8 May at Navy Island. These plans were finalized on Saturday 5 May.

The smoker held at Prince's Lodge but cancelled at Navy Island due to lack of beer. (Had been ordered and was to have been delivered on Tuesday).

6. At approximately 1000 hrs 7 May the radios in camp began to broadcast the news of German's surrender. Normal work was maintained throughout the morning although a general slackening of the pace was permitted in order to allow the men to listen to the radio. I called HQ 21 AA Regt to ascertain if VE Day plans were to be carried out and was informee that nothing would be done until an official announcement had been made. This was confirmed by message Q1412 at 1105 hours. I called "B" troop Commander and advised him that no action was to be taken until further notice had been received, but that he could permit a little leeway in the work the men were doing in order that they could listen to the radio for news.

During the morning the Protestant Padre visited me and made arrangements for a short religious service to be held at 0900 hrs the next morning.

At noon when the men were coming off the gun-site one of them in a fivilous mood gave the fire siren a crank or two. This was repeated by the next man. I accordingly sent the BSM to check this and at the noon meal I visited the mens mess and told them that as yet no news had been received officially but that when it VE plans would be put into effect.

Until then work would go on as usual. I further advised them that when they went to town on pass they were to be careful and not get into any trouble. I advised them that on VE Day, only the pass party would be permitted out but that there would be enough beer around to keep those happy who had to stay in camp, and that they would be permitted to have the canteens open all day, also that after the free beer had gone they could buy more and sit around telling each other just what they were going to do after they got out of the army.

I had thought of allowing the pass party out right after dinner but as we were expecting a District Representative of the Victory Bond Sales out to talk to the boys at 1530 hrs, I decided to keep the men in until after that. For the afternoon until 1600 hrs the men worked on the gunsite at maintenance. The Bond Salesman didn't make an appearance so the men were allowed to go on pass at 1600 hrs. Approximately six other ranks went on pass and came back for the smoker which was held in the evening. Although no smoker had been planned for "B" troops, the commander distributed the free beer there on Monday night also.

7. At 0900 hours Tuesday I read the proclamation to the troops on parade and followed that with a short description of the plans for the day, telling them that the canteen would be open right after religious service, that free beer would be given and anyone who wished could get pleasantly jubilant on Army time so long as there was no trouble and no furniture was broken or buildings damaged. I asked the men warned for VE Parade to refrain from drinking until after the parade as we were going to save beer for them.

Between 1700 and 1800 hrs a message was received for all officers (Except one per site) to report immediately to R.H.Q. Any officers on leave or pass in the area were to be recalled immediately. I ordered the B.S.M. to have the men ready for any call and to remain near the phone.

At R.H.Q. we were ordered to cruise the streets outside business district and advise any army personnel we saw to return to barracks as quickly as possible. While I was there a call came for as many men as possible to report to the Garrison grounds to take orders from the Provost Corps. I called the B.S.M. and ordered him to load as many men on trucks as he could muster (other than guards on the site) and bring them in town. Before they arrived the orders had been changed and they were to report directly to the Provost Corps on Cogswell street. I caught up with the truck and diverted it to the Provost Corps.

8. On 9th May 45 at 0004 hrs a message was received from Fortress Headquarters (I 9118 d 09/0004) that all troops were C.B'd. I had that message relayed to B troop and instructed the B.S.M. in the morning as to the contents of this message.

From 9 May 45 till 13 May 45 men were required for guard duty during nights. As Halifax was more easily accessible from Prince's Lodge I instructed the B.S.M. to draw the guards from Prince's Lodge. Men at Navy Island were to be divided evenly and half sent to Prince's Lodge to do guard duty there each night. Sunday night a small guard was required in Halifax. This was drawn from Navy Island.

On receipt of message Q 1432 d 11/1457 advising that the 21st AA Regt RCA was still confined although announcement had been made that the C.B. had been lifted I had a talk with the men at Prince's Lodge and requested B troop Commander to do the same at Navy Island. In my talk I advised the men that we were still required for guard duty and would, of course, accept the situation with as much grace as possible.

9. On 7 May 45 I left the battery about 1800 hrs and proceeded to Halifax. In company with my wife, mother, and father I went to Citadel Hill at 2000 hrs to watch the fireworks. We stayed there until about 2330 hrs, then proceeded down the western slope of the hill to my parent's home in the west end of the city. I saw no unusual happenings.

On Tuesday, 8th May 45, I left the batter about 1300 hrs after making sure that arrangements were complete for the V.E. parade, I again proceeded to town. In company with my wife, mother and father I went to the South Commons to see the V.E. parade form. After the parade had formed on the Garrison Grounds we drove down by the corner of South Park Street and Spring Garden Road and later watched the parade come down South Park Street. No disturbances observed.

I arrived back in the batter at approx 1800 hrs to learn that all officers were to report to R.H.Q.

From 1800 hrs until approx 0200 hrs I was on duty in the city of Halifax. No disturbances were observed.

N 5-0

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
ARMY

19 A.A.Battery RCA,  
Halifax, NS, 14 Apr 45.

Officer Commanding,  
"A" Troop,  
19 A.A.Battery RCA.

POLICY V.E. DAY

1. The following policy will be adhered to on V.E.Day UNLESS cancelled by District, Regimental or other Battery Orders.
  - (a) As soon as information is received either by Radio News, Message, or otherwise that Germany has capitulated ALL RANKS will be confined to Barracks pending further orders or instructions.
  - (b) Precautions will be taken to ensure that NO personnel under your command fire any ammunition in celebration.
  - (c) There is no objection to holding of religious services provided the provisions of Para 1(a) and (b) are strictly adhered to.
2. For your information, please.

Sgd. Capt. W.A. PURCELL  
FOR (G.H.Johnson)Major  
Commanding,  
19 A.A.Battery RCA.

N 5-0

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
ARMY

19 A.A. Battery R.C.A.,  
Halifax, NS, 14 Apr 45.

Officer Commanding,  
Navy Island Cove.

POLICY V.E.DAY

1. In view of your comments re VE day the following policy will be adhered to UNLESS cancelled by District, Regimental or other Battery Orders.

- (a) As soon as information is received either by Radio News, Message, or otherwise that Germany has capitulated ALL RANKS will be confined to Barracks pending further orders or instructions.
- (b) Precautions will be taken to ensure that No personnel under your command fire any ammunition in celebration.
- (c) There is no objection to the holding of Religious services provided the provisions of Para 1(a) and (b) are strictly adhered to.

2. For your information, please.

Sgd. CAPTAIN W.A. PURCELL  
FOR (G.H. Johnson) Major,  
Commanding,  
19 A.A. Battery RCA.

N.6-0

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
ARMY

19 A.A. Battery R.C.A.,  
Halifax, NS, 14 May 45.

Headquarters,  
21 A.A. Regiment RCA,  
Halifax, N.S.

Synoptic Log of Events  
19 A.A. Battery R.C.A.  
Commission investigating  
V.E. Day disturbances.

Reference Message Q.1441 dated 13 May 45.

GENERAL REMARKS

(A) From 8 May 45 to 12 May 45 inclusive no personnel of this Unit were permitted to proceed on pass and this order was strictly adhered to.

(b) Throughout the entire week the conduct of all personnel within the Unit was exemplary and all ranks displayed keen enthusiasm for the responsibility of duties to which they were allotted.

(c) No difficulty was experienced in respect to discipline with any member of the Unit as a whole with the exception of two men who were apprehended by the Canadian Provost Corps (see appendix "A") and a list of the loot is on record at Regimental Headquarters.

(d) Personnel of "A" and "B" Troops were interchanged to facilitate the carrying out of guard duties assigned to them in Halifax due to the m/n disturbance.

(e) Normal duties were carried out and a number of personnel were held in reserve each day for any eventuality that might arise.

(f) Attached herewith Appendix "A" and "B" which represents the report of each troop of this Unit.

Sgd. Capt. W.A. PURCELL  
FOR (G.H. JOHNSON) Major,  
Commanding,  
19 A.A. Battery R.C.A.

N 6-0

APPENDIX "A"

19 A.A. Battery, R.C.A.  
Prince's Lodge,  
13 May 45

Synoptic log of events in which  
troops were engaged from 7 May 45  
to 13 May 45.

Monday 7 May 45

Normal duties carried on throughout the day. A Unit  
smoker was held in the evening and a very small  
percentage of personnel proceeded on pass.

Tuesday 8 May 45

Regimental Commander's Proclamation of V.E. Day read  
to men followed by church services. 1 Officer and  
15 O.Rs participated in the V.E. Day parade. The  
usual number of men were allowed to proceed on pass.  
5 Officers and 40 men were detailed for patrol duties  
and of these a number were detailed as guards at the  
Cold storage Plant from 1700 hrs to 0330 hrs 9 May 45.  
Subsequent to 1700 hrs all personnel in Halifax were  
detailed for duty as they reported to H.Q. 21 A.A. Regt  
R.C.A., and those not required were returned to the Unit.  
All men were accounted for by 1900 hrs with the exception  
of the following two:

B.22710 BQMS Newman, R.  
C.115024 Gnr Bordeleau, G.

who were taken into custody by the Canadian Provost  
Corps after having been discovered to have loot on  
their person.

At the Unit the security guard was instructed to take  
possession of all parcels etc., which personnel carried  
as they returned to Unit. No personnel returned with loot.

Wednesday 9 May 45

2 Officers and 30 men were supplied for duty at  
Oland's Brewery from 1500 hrs to 0230 hrs 10 May 45.  
20 men and 1 Officer were detailed for duty at the  
N.S. Liquor Commission from 1730 hrs to 0200 hrs  
10 May 45. A kit inspection by three officers was  
carried out as per Regimental instructions at 1300  
hrs but no loot was recovered. All personnel were  
confined to barracks.

Thursday 10 May 45

1 Officer and 40 men were detailed for duty at  
Oland's Brewery from 1800 hrs to 0100 hrs 11 May 45,  
and 20 men and 1 Officer from 0100 hrs to 0600 hrs  
11 May 45. 10 men and 1 Officer were on duty at the  
N.S. Liquor Control Commission at Buckingham and  
Granville streets from 1730 hrs to 0600 hrs 11 May 45.

Friday 11 May 45

1 Officer and 40 men were on duty at Oland's Brewery  
from 1900 to 0030 hrs 12 May 45. Personnel not on duty  
were still confined to barracks.



Saturday 12 May 45

1 Officer and 40 men were detailed for duty at Oland's Brewery from 1900 hrs to 0030 hrs 13 May 45, and 20 men and 1 Officer from 0030 hrs to 0600 hrs 13 May 45.

Sunday 13 May 45.

A few passes were issued and 20 men held in reserve for duty if required.

(Sgd) E.G. Witherspoon, Lieut  
Troop Commander,  
Prince's Lodge.

APPENDIX "B"

19 A.A. Battery, R.C.A.  
Navy Island Cove.,  
13 May 45

Synoptic Log of Events in which  
troops were engaged from 7 May  
45 to 13 May 45.

Monday 7 May 45

Normal Camp Routine.  
20 Passes issued but only 10 men left camp

Tuesday 8 May 45

Regimental Commander's Proclamation of  
V.E. Day read to the men.  
15 passes issued but only 4 men left camp.  
All these returned to camp by curfew, except  
one who worked for the Provost Corps.

Wednesday 9 May 45

25 men went to Halifax to Citadel Hill to  
clean up. They returned at 1600 hrs.  
30 men on guard duty 10 men at Prince's  
Lodge and the remaining 20 guarded at the  
Main Office of the Liquor Commission. These  
30 men returned from duty at 0230 hrs 10 May 45.  
A kit inspection was carried out on the site  
but no loot was discovered. All personnel were  
confined to barracks.

Thursday 10 May 45

15 men on coal detail at RCASC in Halifax until  
1600 hrs. 20 men at Prince's Lodge doing Guard  
duty from 1800 hrs until 0200 hrs 11 May 45.

Friday 11 May 45

20 men on Guard duty: 10 at Prince's Lodge  
10 at Olands Brewery in Halifax  
All returned at 0330 hrs 12 May 45.

Saturday 12 May 45.

15 men on coal detail to RCASC in Halifax until  
1600 hrs. 20 men on guard duty 10 men at Prince's  
Lodge and 10 at Oland's Brewery. These men returned  
at 0630 hrs 13 May 45.

Sunday 13 May 45

10 men proceeding to guard at Oland's Brewery  
in Halifax.

Among personnel on this Site there was no breach  
of discipline. No personnel from this site were  
in possession of any loot whatsoever.

(Sgd) R. Corbett, Lieut  
(for) D.W. Williams, Lieut  
"A" Troop Commander  
Navy Island Cove

SECRET

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

-ARMY-

4th A.A. Bty., (SL), R.C.A.  
Imperoyal, N.S. 22 May 45



C.O.  
21st A.A. Regt., R.C.A.  
R.A. Park  
Halifax, N.S.

V-E DAY DISTURBANCES

Herewith report as requested in  
your message Q-1466 d/21 May 45 re appendix to  
M.D. No. 6 letter HC/120-2-1 (AQ) d/17 May 45  
(Confidential).

2. For your information, Please.

A handwritten signature in cursive script, appearing to read "J.M. Gardner".


(J.M. Gardner) E.D. Major  
Officer Commanding  
4th A.A. Bty., R.C.A.

JMG/LG  
Encl.

4th A.A. Bty., R.C.A.

- (1) 8 Officers, 179 O.R's, Total 187 All Ranks
- (2) (a)
- |       |                |             |   |
|-------|----------------|-------------|---|
| (i)   | Officers - Nil | O.R's - Nil |   |
| (ii)  | Officers - Nil | O.R's - Nil |   |
| (iii) | Officers - 2   | O.R's - 67  | (56 back by 2359 hrs)<br>(3 in Halifax, 6 on<br>pass overnight) |
- (b)
- |       |                |             |   |
|-------|----------------|-------------|---|
| (i)   | Officers - Nil | O.R's - Nil |   |
| (ii)  | Officers - 3   | O.R's - 80  |   |
| (iii) | Officers - Nil | O.R's - 80  | (70 back by 2359 hrs)<br>(3 in Halifax, 6 on pass<br>overnight) |
- (3) (a)
- |      |     |
|------|-----|
| (i)  | Nil |
| (ii) | Nil |
- (b)
- |      |  |
|------|--|
| (i)  | One Bdr awarded six (6) mos. by civil authorities<br>in Dartmouth for breaking window in store ( on<br>course at A-23 T.C. at time of being called for duty)<br>No loot. |
| (ii) | Nil  |
- (4) See file of R.H.Q. messages and letter A.A.S. 6-2-4  
d/4 May 45.
- (5) No instructions issued other than notification to  
Canteen Officer and steward re free beer on official  
announcement. (which was never received)
- (6) Canteen opened to the Battery Personnel at 1500 hrs  
after getting the "go ahead" from the 2 i/c at R.H.Q.  
Normal routine previous to that time. Standing by  
for parade orders.
- (7) Normal routine until receipt of message re the  
balance of the day.
- (8) All ranks C.B. Acting on orders of R.H.Q.
- (9) Saw no disturbances other than crowds around  
Dartmouth Liquor Store while enroute to R.H.Q. for  
duty on the evening of 8 May 45. Stood by at  
R.H.Q. until approximately 2230 hrs then proceeded  
to Cold Storage to pick up Capt Piers on duty there  
and proceeded back to Unit.

JMG/LG

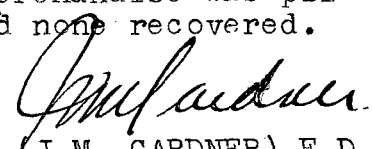
  
(J.M. Gardner) E.D. Major  
Officer Commanding  
4th A.A. Bty., R.C.A.

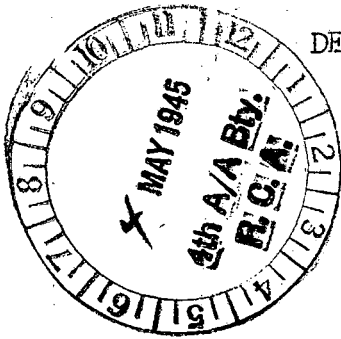
## DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE

- A R M Y -

4th A.A. Bty., (3L) R.C.A.  
Imperoyal, N.S. 13 May 45.Commanding Officer,  
21 A.A. Regt., R.C.A.  
Halifax, N.S.REPORT OF TROOP ACTIVITIES  
V-E Day Riots

1. Herewith report as requested in RHQ message Q-1441 d/13 May 45, as follows.
2. (a) At 1735 on the 8th May 45, all Bty. Officers with the exception of one to remain on duty at B.H.Q. proceeded to RHQ on orders of the C.O., Lieut/Col. G.L. Kent, E.D. to assist in any manner detailed. Two Officers were detailed to proceed to the Cold Storage building for duty with troops on duty there. The remaining officers stood by at RHQ. At approximately 2300 hrs. Unit Officers were instructed to proceed back to quarters. No Troop of this Unit were on this detail.
- (b) On the 9th May 45, two Officers and forty O.R.'s proceeded to the Cold Storage for guard duty, reporting at 1900 Hrs. and being dismissed at 0130 hrs. 10th May 45.
- (c) On the 10th and 11th May 45 one Officer and forty O.R.'s proceeded to the Cold Storage for guard duty, reporting at 1900 hrs. and were dismissed at approximately 0100 hrs.
- (d) On the 12th May 45 one Officer and fifty O.R.'s proceeded to the Cold Storage for guard duty, reporting at 1900 hrs. At approximately 0030 hrs. 13th May 45 the Officer and thirty O.R.'s were dismissed and sent back to the Unit. Twenty O.R.'s were retained until approximately 0700 hrs.
- (e) On the 13th May 45 one Officer and ten O.R.'s proceeded to Olands Brewery for guard duty, reporting at 1900 hrs. At the time of making this report this detail has not returned to the Unit.
3. There was only one breach of discipline. One Bdr. Marshall, G.S. attached to A-23 T.C. on course was awarded six months confinement by the Civil Authorities for property damage (breaking window).
4. As far as is known, no merchandise was pilfered by members of this Unit and none recovered.

  
(J.M. GARDNER) E.D. Major,  
Officer Commanding,  
4th A.A. Bty., (3L) R.C.A.



DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

A.A.S. 6-2-4

H.Q. 21 AA REGT RCA  
Halifax, N.S.  
4 May 45.

ALL BATTERY COMDS, 21 AA Regt RCA

ALL TROOP COMDS, 21 AA Regt, RCA

INSTRUCTIONS ON PROCLAMATION OF V.E. DAY

1. Enclosed herewith as per distribution list below, copies of Telephone Message I-1408 transmitted to all Battery and Troop Commanders, for the information and guidance of all concerned.

2. The text of the message is as follows:-

"UPON THE OFFICIAL ANNOUNCEMENT OF VICTORY IN EUROPE, ALL TROOPS WILL FALL IN ON PARADE, AT ONCE, AND THE FOLLOWING ANNOUNCEMENTS WILL BE MADE:

- (1) THE PROCLAMATION OF VICTORY, AND THE EFFECTIVE TIME.
- (2) THIS OCCASION MARKS THE END OF ORGANIZED HOSTILITIES IN EUROPE AND THE FINAL DEFEAT OF GERMANY. THIS HAS BEEN ACCOMPLISHED AFTER FIVE YEARS AND EIGHT MONTHS OF CEASELESS EFFORTS AND SACRIFICE BY THE ARMED FORCES OF THE ALLIED NATIONS.

THIS IS A DAY TO BE CELEBRATED BY ALL FREE NATIONS IN THE WORLD, AND A TIME TO FEEL THANKFUL THAT THE JOB HAS BEEN SO WELL DONE.

WE, IN THIS REGIMENT, MUST FEEL A GREAT PRIDE IN THE ACHIEVEMENTS OF OUR COMRADES IN ARMS WHO HAVE MET AND BEATEN THE ENEMY IN THE FIELD OF BATTLE.

WE MAY ALSO FEEL THAT WE HAVE A SHARE IN THE FINAL VICTORY AND TAKE PRIDE IN HAVING DONE WELL THE JOB THAT HAS BEEN ALLOTTED TO US IN HIS MAJESTY'S SERVICE.

THIS REGIMENT HAS BEEN ORGANIZED READY TO FIGHT FOR OVER TWO AND ONE HALF YEARS AND HAS MAINTAINED THE HIGH TRADITIONS OF THE ROYAL CANADIAN ARTILLERY. ALTHOUGH NOT NOW OPERATIONAL, THERE WILL BE NO LET DOWN IN GOOD DISCIPLINE AND SOLDIERLY CONDUCT. YOU ARE STILL GUNNERS.

THE REGIMENTAL COMMANDER EXTENDS HIS COMPLIMENTS TO ALL RANKS ON THE HIGH STANDARDS THAT HAVE BEEN MAINTAINED, AND APPRECIATES THE LOYALTY, COOPERATION AND SPIRIT OF GOOD SERVICE OF ALL IN THIS REGIMENT. "

(G.L. KENT) LT.-COL.

COMMANDING OFFICER,

21 AA REGT RCA

/WFH

DISTRIBUTION LIST:

|                    |             |
|--------------------|-------------|
| RHQ 21 AA Regt RCA | (3 copies)  |
| No. 1 AA OR RCA    | (3 copies)  |
| 1 AA Bty RCA       | (5 copies)  |
| 4 AA Bty RCA       | (10 copies) |
| 14 AA Bty RCA      | (3 copies)  |
| 18 AA Bty RCA      | (5 copies)  |
| 19 AA Bty RCA      | (5 copies)  |
| 146 AA Bty RCA     | (10 copies) |

REPORT ON V.E. DAY ACTIVITIES Etc.  
1st. A.A. Bty., R.C.A.

- (1) Strength of 1st A.A. Bty., R.C.A. as of 7 May 45 was: 8 Officers, 205 Other Ranks. Of this number, the total "on parade" strength totaled 8 Officers, 168 Other ranks.
- (2) Number of Officers and O.R's out of barracks in Halifax and Dartmouth on 7 and 8 May 45 are as follows:-
- (a) 7 May 45 Morning-----Nil  
Afternoon-----Nil  
Evening after 1800 hrs. 1 Officer, 11 O.R's.  
These were married personnel with their wives residing in Halifax or Dartmouth.
- (b) 8 May 45 Morning-----Nil  
Afternoon-----2 Officers, 45 O.R's.  
Evening-----2 Officers, 45 O.R's.
- (3) (a) Personnel under my command were rounded up fairly quickly in Halifax on the night of 8 May 45 by my Sgt. Major and three other N.C.O's, who when they heard the report that service men were to return to barracks, proceeded to the Dartmouth Ferry in Halifax, and ordered all personnel of the Unit that they could find to report to Citadel Hill immediately. These men were later sent to the Unit barracks by transport via Bedford as the Ferry was not running.
- A master parade and kit inspection was held at both sites on 9 May 45. Two men were reported A.W.L.-- no loot was discovered. Both absentees were accounted for shortly after parade. One of the absentees had been held by the Provost. He was charged under A.A. 6 (2)(d) and remanded to the C.O. who dismissed this case when the man furnished proof that the article he had been carrying when picked up, was definitely not loot.
- (b) Nothing further was reported to me about personnel under my command or personnel not under my command.
- (4) At a Battery Commander Meeting toward the latter part of April the matter of V.E. Day Celebrations was discussed somewhat and it was suggested then that most of the personnel be kept on site, the canteens opened, and generally give the men a good time on site and thus keep them off the street. It was expected that a certain amount of beer be put aside for this purpose.
- line  
time at 1145 hrs. Saturday 5 May 45 and Col. Kent advised that some beer per Battery had been made available and laid on that men would be paraded and advised of victory when the Office Announcement came. Opening of Canteens would be at Battery Commander's directions.
- Message received from R.H.Q. approximately 1130 hrs. 7 May 45 that no official celebrations would be held until further advised by that H.Q.
- 1500 hrs. 7 May 45, message received from R.H.Q. to ground all vehicles, unless permission was obtained from R.H.Q. to move a vehicle.



- (5) Verbal Orders give to Troop Commanders that Victory would be announced on Parade, that canteens would be opened in late afternoon, and men would be C.B'd.

Upon discussion with the 2nd in Command of the Regiment at 1430 hrs. 7 May 45, it was decided to celebrate victory on that date.

- (6) Troop Commanders notified of this. Men paraded and Canteen opened vicinity of 1630 hrs.

All vehicles were grounded and permission from R.H.Q. to move them had to go through me.


- (7) Message received that 8 May 45 would follow Sunday routine. No special orders issued.

- (8) All personnel were confined to Barracks on order from R.H.Q. Guards were supplied each night by all Units in the Regiment.

- (9) 7 May 45--Remained at Unit until 2130 hrs. to see how things went in the men's canteen. Left for Halifax 2200 hrs. Dartmouth Ferry. Crowds moving both ways, crowds on streets, crowds on Citadel Hill, some people intoxicated no disturbances.

8 May 45--Returned to Unit 0830, saw some broken windows along Barrington Street,--only about six on West side of street from Capitol to George Street. Left Unit early in afternoon, home about 1515 hrs. Crowds seen but was ahead of disturbances. Spent afternoon at home--first indications of trouble phone call 1815 hrs. from the Unit to report to R.H.Q.

On way saw many more intoxicated, many with beer or other liquor, very few with loot. Remained at or near R.H.Q. most of the evening keeping troops at R.L. & M.L. in readiness to rush in Dartmouth if necessary. Getting personnel on pass back to Unit, etc. No actual disturbances seen.

  
(R.G. Hattie) Major,  
Commanding,  
1st. A.A. Bty., R.C.A.

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
ARMY

1st. A.A. Bty., R.C.A.

Headquarters,  
Dartmouth, N.S.  
13 May 45.

Commanding Officer,  
21 A.A. Regt., R.C.A.  
Halifax, N.S.

LOG OF EVENTS FROM 7 MAY 1945.  
VE DAY Disturbances

1. Reference Message Q 1441 of 13  
1210 P Hrs.
2. Submit herewith in triplicate,  
synoptic log of events in which Troops of this Unit  
were engaged from 7 May 45 until the present date.

Before listing log of events it might be as well to explain that two gun detachments, a predictor detachment, a H. & R.F. detachment and a radar detachment plus a few employed personnel totalling in all 2 Officers and 43 O.R.'s. were attached to A23 Training Centre as a "Firing Unit" from "A" Troop of this Battery. They were attached to A23 for rations and quarters on 5 May 45 for firing practice, but have since been used by A23 Training Centre as part of their personnel in any patrol or picquet detail that they had to carry out, and will be referred to in this report as "personnel attached to A23 T.C."

Monday 7 May 45

All personnel of this Unit and all personnel attached to A23 T.C. were confined to Barracks to celebrate Victory of the Allied Nations over Germany.

Tuesday 8 May 45.

A quiet day on the gun sites. A few personnel allowed on pass from each site - mostly married personnel with wives and families in Halifax or Dartmouth.

1800 Hrs.

All Officers except one per site, summoned to R.H.Q. for duty in attempts to quiet VE Day Riots.

Men of this Unit held in readiness at Morris Lake and Russell Lake for duty in Dartmouth should such prove necessary.

All Officers on duty until 0330 Hours.

Wednesday 9 May 45.

0900 Hours

Kit Inspections held - no loot found at either site. 2 Men A.W.L.

1500 Hours

2 Officers and 60 Men called out for picquet and guard duty at Cold Storage Plant, Halifax, N.S. This party was on duty until 0300 hrs. next morning.

Wednesday 9 May 45 Cont'd.1530 Hrs.

1 Officer and 20 men called out for picquet duty at H.Q. N.S. Liquor Commission. This party was on duty until 0700 hrs. the following morning.

2 Officers and 37 men - "Attached to A23 T.C." on picquet duty and patrol duty in Dartmouth.

Thursday 10 May 45.0900 Hrs. One absentee returned from A.W.L.

One absentee returned by Provost. - had been picked up - carrying loot (presumed loot) - charged under A.A. Sec. 6 (2) (d) and remanded.

1800 Hrs.

1 Officer and 40 O.R's. reported for duty to Cold Storage Plant, Halifax, N.S. 50% relieved at midnight - remainder at 0600 Hrs. following day.

15 O.R's. attached to A23 T.C. on guard and picquet duty in Town of Dartmouth until 2359 hours. 40 O.R's. held standing by as a reserve, ready for use if needed.

Friday 11 May 45.1900 Hrs.

1 Officer and 40 O.R's. reported to Cold Storage Plant, Halifax, N.S. for duty. 50% relieved at midnight - remainder relieved at 0600 Hrs. following day.

12 O.R's. attached to A23 T.C. reported duty in Town of Dartmouth.

40 Other Ranks held standing by as a reserve, ready if necessary.

Saturday 12 May 45.1900 Hrs.

1 Officer and 50 O.R's. reported for guard duty at Oland's Brewery. Relieved at 2359 hrs. Other personnel not on this detail allowed passed until 2130 hrs. so that remainder of Bty. personnel would be available as a reserve if necessary.

Sunday 13 May 45.1900 Hrs.

1 Officer and 10 O.R's reported to H.Q. N.S. Liquor Commission, Halifax, N.S. for all night duty. 20 men dept at Bty. H.Q. as a reserve.

3. No events of special interest can be reported. As this Unit is located in Dartmouth and was not called into Dartmouth on Tuesday night no first hand information is available about any events of special interest.

4. For your information, please.

(R.G. Hattie) Major,  
Commanding,  
1st. A.A. Bty., R.C.A.

H.150-1-2 (A1)

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

HALIFAX? N.S.  
10 Apr 45.

Commander Halifax Fortress.  
O.C. 1st (H) Cst. Regiment.  
O.C. 12st A.A. Regiment.  
O.C. Regt. det St. Hyacinthe.  
O.C. No. 6 District Depot  
O.C. A23 C. & A.A.A. T.C.  
O.C. Embarkation Transit Unit.  
O.C. No. 6 District Signals.  
O.C. Arty. Reinforcement Camp.  
O.C. No. 6 District Coy. RCASE.  
D.S. & T.O.  
Barrack Master - New Wellington Bks.  
D.A.P.M.  
C.W.A.C. Staff Officer.

"V" Day  
Messes and Canteens

Addressees or their accredited representatives will meet in the Conference Room Headquarters M.D. No. 6 at 1000 hours, Friday, 13th April 45 to discuss the operation of Messes and Canteens within their Units on such day as an announcement may be made of the cessation of hostilities in any of the theatres of operations.

Sgd. P. P. Fielding, Lt. Col.

for (A.E. DUCANSON) Colonel,  
Colonel i/c Administration,  
Military District No. 6.

PSF/lp

First Telegram:

Date-Time of Origin  
07/1116P

From: O.C. 1st Halifax Coast Regt., R.C.A.

To: All Batteries.

Q-2236 Official V.E. Day has been declared on the surrender of all Germany. The day will be treated as Xmas or holiday. But the same state of manning as before must be carried out. Celebration will be by Battery arrangement and under Battery supervision.

Second Telegram:

Date-Time of Origin  
07/1702P

From: Headquarters Halifax Fortress

To: All units.

I-9113 Remainder of to-day May 7th and all day May 8th will be a holiday. All normal duty will be carried out and security maintained. Adequate staff Sunday pattern will be maintained, equipment and property shall be safe guarded. Those employed these 2 days will be granted later on.

Sender GH Receiver REH

Third Telegram:

Date-Time of Origin  
07/2046P

From: F.E.P.

To: All Batteries & F. or P's.

I-2238 With the exception of operational duties to-morrow May the 8th is a holiday.

Fourth Telegram:

Date-Time of Origin  
090004P

From: Headquarters Halifax Fortress

To: All UNITS

I-9118 No leave to be granted troops. All troops to be on duty or confined to barracks until further notice.

G.B.  
M.D.

Fifth Telegram:

Date-Time of Origin  
090014P

From: Regimental Headquarters

To: ALL BATTERIES

Q-596 No leave to be granted troops. All troops to be on duty or confined to barracks until further notice.

Sixth Telegram:

Date-Time of Origin  
09/1010 hrs.

From: Regimental Headquarters.

To: All BATTERIES

Q-529 Muster Roll Call to be held at 1200 hrs today for your battery. All personnel A.W.L., on leave or pass and living in Nova Scotia will be reported to this H.Q. with home addresses. Names to be submitted before 1500 hrs. today.

Sender ADC Reader 51 52 53 Y/K  
J.J.S. P.J.R. J.M.Y. McK

Signed E.L.M.

- 2 -

F.H.Q. 5-4

To all Units:-

Forwarded.

(R.J. BUTTS) Capt.  
Staff Captain,  
Halifax Fortress.

RJB/QM  
10 May 45.

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
(ARMY)

H 150-1-2 (AQ)

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N.S. 9 May 45.

All Officer Commanding,  
Units, Formations and Detachments,  
Halifax Area.  
Commanders:-  
Halifax Fortress, Halifax.  
Sydney Fortress, Sydney  
A-23 C. & A.A.A. R.C., Halifax.  
A-14 C.I.T.C., Aldershot, NS.

BREACHES OF DISCIPLINE

In connection with the recent regrettable events in which soldiers participated with civilians and other Services, particularly in regard to rioting and plundering in Halifax, Sydney and Kentville, all who are suspected of breaches of discipline must be charged therewith and remanded until such time as directions are received as to how such cases are to be dealt with.

2. In this connection, your attention is directed to Army Act, 6, 2(d).

3. All liquor confiscated from Service personnel which is not required as evidence, will, in the case of Halifax and vicinity, be returned to the Head Office of the Liquor Commission.

4. With regard to Sydney and Kentville, should there be any, similar arrangements will be made in conjunction with the local Liquor Commission.

5. Personnel in the civinity of Halifax, who are Confined to Barracks under orders issued under cover of AS 150-1-2 (AQ) dated 8 May 45, should be usefully employed around their quarters so as no unrest through inactivity develops.

FJN:ABN

Sgd. F. J. North.

(F.J. NORTH) LT.-Col.,  
A.A. & Q.M.G., M.D. 6.

First Telegram:

From: Headquarters Halifax Fortress

Date-Time of Origin  
11/1235P

To: All Units.

A-9129 Confinement to barracks of all troops is cancelled. Restriction on leave & Furlough to outside points is lifted. Normal Leave to personnel proceeding outside Halifax maybe granted. Curfew in Halifax and Dartmouth extended to 2200 hrs. and will be observed by all troops.

Sgd.

51st E.J.B.

53rd Bty. C. G.O.M.

Sender AMI

52nd D.C.

Yk. M&K

Receiver MEH

PR. G.S.L.

Second Telegram:

From: Fortress Headquarters

Date-Time of Origin  
13/1105P

To: All Units.

A-9142 Commission to investigate V.E. day disturbances and activities arriving Halifax 14 May 45. Submit in triplicate synoptic log of events in which troops were engaged from 7th May to date. This to include guards provided, breaches of discipline, quantities of merchandise recovered in detail and disposal of same events of special interest. Full detail of points of special interest and reports of sub units will be attached as appendices.

Third Telegram:

From: BLANK

Date-Time of Origin  
BLANK

To: BLANK

Number Reports will be forwarded by D.R. to reach this H.Q.  
BLANK by 1000 hrs. 14 May 45.

Sgd. REH  
AMI

Fourth Telegram:

From Headquarters 1st H.C. Regt.

Date-Time of Origin  
13-1215P

To: O.C. 52nd Coast Battery and O.C. 53rd Battery

Q-533 Commission to investigate V.E. Day disturbances and activities arriving Halifax 14 May 45. Submit in quadruplicate synoptic log of events in which troops were engaged from 7th May to day. This to include breaches of discipline, quantities of merchandise recovered in detail and disposal of same, events of special interest. Reports will be forwarded by D.R. to reach this H.Q. by 1700 hrs to-day.

Sgd. Major Sinclair

R.E.H.  
W.B.  
C.S.



F.H.Q. 5-4

To All Units:-

Forwarded.

(R.J. BUTTS) Capt.,  
Staff Captian,  
Halifax Fortress.

RJB/CM  
14 May 45.

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
(ARMY)

HC 120-2-1 (AQ)

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S., 11 May 45.

All Officers Commanding,  
Units, Formations and Detachments,  
Halifax Area.

Commanders:-

Halifax Fortress, Halifax,

Sydney Fortress, Sydney,

A-23, C. & A.A.A. T.C., Halifax.

A-14 C.I.T.C., Aldershot

BREACHES OF DISCIPLINE

Further to this Headquarters' letter H.150-1-2 (AQ)  
dated 9 May 45.

2. Action will be taken in all cases under Sec. 40  
of Army Act "Being in improper possession of goods" and if  
circumstances justify, those responsible will be remanded  
for Court-Martial.

(F.J. NORTH) LT.-COL.,  
A.A. & Q.M.G., M.D. No. 6.

P8 ~~PTP~~ 999  
F.H.Q 5-4

-2-

To All Units:-

For reply to reach this H.Q. not later  
than 15 May 45

(R.J. BUTTS) Capt.,  
Staff Captain,  
Halifax Fortress.

RJB/CM  
14 May 45

P.9 68. 999

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
(ARMY)

H 150-1-2 (AQ)  
HC 120-2-1 (AQ)

Headquarters, M.D. No. 6,  
Halifax, N. S., 13 May 45.

All Officers Commanding,  
Units, Formations, and Detachments,  
Halifax Area.

Commanders:-  
Halifax Fortress, Halifax,  
Sydney Fortress, Sydney,  
A-23, C. & A.A.A. T.C., Halifax,  
A-14, C.I.T.C., Aldershot.

Breaches of Discipline

With further reference to this HQ's letters  
H 150-1-2 (AQ) dated 9 May 45 and HC/120-2-1 (AQ) dated  
11 May 45.

2. Information will be forwarded to this HQ  
giving particulars about any military personnel who were  
involved in any breach of discipline during the disturbances  
May 7 and 8 and action taken in each.

3. The above information to reach this HQ's not  
later than 1000 hrs Wed 16 May 45.

(F.J. NORTH) Lt.-Col.,  
A.A. & Q.M.G., M.D. No. 6.

C  
O  
P  
Y

C.R. 5-4-0

DEPARTMENT OF  
NATIONAL DEFENCE  
ARMY

York Redoubt,  
15 May 1945.

Commander,  
Halifax Fortress,  
R.A. Park.

Breaches of Discipline

Reference your minute F.H.Q. 5-4 dated 14 May 45  
on H.150-1-2 (AQ) HC/120-2-1 (AQ) dated 13 May 45.

2. There were two soldiers of this Regiment involved  
in breaches of discipline during the disturbances on 7th  
and 8th May 45.

3. Both were treated as absentees when they did  
not return from pass and were later found to have been taken  
into civil custody. One charged with illegal possession of  
liquor was awarded a sentence of thirty days in gaol, the  
other, charged with theft of jewelry, was sentenced to four  
years penal servitude.

4. It might be mentioned that both these men were very  
recent reinforcements to this Unit.

Sgd. A.B. Ferguson, Capt.,  
for (A.C. Sinclair) Major,  
O.C., 1st Halifax Coast Regt., R.C.A.

ABF/eg

C  
O  
P  
Y

P 11 68 999  
F.H.Q. 5-4

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

Headquarters,  
Halifax Fortress,  
16 May 45.

To All Units:-

The following is a copy of a message received from M.D. No. 6:-

"A 9650

I M P O R T A N T

REFERENCE MESSAGE A 9125 AND A 9149 MAY 11TH STOP

AS THE CIVILIAN CURFEW HAS NOW BEEN LIFTED NORMALXX

LEAVE AND PASSES MAY BE GRANTED STOP HOWEVER ALL PERSONNEL

HAVING ANY CONNECTION WITH THE VE DAY DISTURBANCES WILL BE

HELD AVAILABLE TO GIVE EVIDENCE AT A MOMENTS NOTICE"

Sgd R.J. Butts

(R.J. Butts) Capt.,  
Staff Captain,  
Halifax Fortress.

RJB/CM

-2-

C.R. 6-0-2

Officers Commanding,  
52nd Coast Battery,  
53rd Coast Battery,

Passed.

Sgd A.C. Sinclair, Major,

(A.C. Sinclair) Major,  
O.C., 1st Halifax Coast Regt., RCA.

ACS/eg  
17 May 45

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

G.R. 5-4-0

York Redoubt,  
14 May 1945.Headquarters,  
Halifax Fortress,  
R.A. Park.V.E. Day Activities

Re your A.9142 d/13 May 45 on m/n.

2. Cessation of hostilities in Europe was officially announced at approximately 1100 hrs Monday 7 May 45. On receiving this word, a holiday, similar to Xmas, was proclaimed for the Regiment.
3. The M/N holiday meant normal namming would be carried out but otherwise, as much as possible would be carried over to later date.
4. On receipt of word of V.E. day all ranks were summoned to the parade ground and informed of the matter and also of holiday. A great number, attended a short voluntary Service, in the recreation hall, which was conducted by the Padre.
5. After the above the canteen was opened until approximately 1330P hrs. It was then closed until 1700P hrs when it opened until 1930P hrs. It then closed as a movie was starting in the recreation hall.
6. Tuesday morning was mostly spent in sport - baseball - horseshoes - volley ball, etc. Tuesday afternoon was mostly spent by groups lying around in the sun.
7. The Regimental Band was sent to Halifax at 0800P hrs. 8 May 45 to assist in the V.E. celebration. They were returned to York at approximately 2200P hrs.
8. At approximately 1800P hrs 8 May 45 a request was received to send to Halifax and try and find the few men we had on pass and have them return to their barracks. One officer and six W.O's and Sgt's were immediately detailed for this duty.
9. Shortly after they had left an order was received from F.H.Q. to send all available officers & O.R's to Halifax and have them report at Provost H.Q. Eight officers and fifty three O.R's embussed for Halifax.
10. This detachment was divided into three groups and sent to guard or patrol C.W.A.C. bks. (Wellington), Olands Brewery, and Pier 27. The last patrol was relieved at about 0430 hrs. 9 May 45.

- 2 -

11. Since then a nightly guard of one Officer and twenty five O.R's(armed) has been supplied for Melville Island.

12. All personnel, with exception of two A.W.L's, who were on pass, were returned to their posts on night of 8 May 45 and searched, at the gura house. No loot or plunder was found.

13. Starting 9 May 45 all personnel of the Regiment were C.B. until afternoon of 11 May 45.

14. No trouble, disturbance or any sign of lawlessness was evident either in or out of the forts by members of the Regiment.

Sgd. : A.C. Sinclair .

(A.C. Sinclair) Major.  
O.C. 1st Halifax Coast Regt., R.C.A.

ACS/md.



DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

Fort Chebucto ,  
13 May 1945.

Officer Commanding,  
1st Halifax Coast Regt., R.C.A.,  
York Redoubt.

V.E. Day

Personnel as shown below were on pass  
on dates shown:

May 7th            Officers - Major A.A. MacDonald (Returned  
when V.E. announced.)

O.R.'s        5

May 8th            Officers - Liet . Blair

O.R.'s        - 5

2.            To my knowledge none of the above mentioned  
were involved in disturbances, and no disciplinary action  
for any unlawfulness.

3.            In addition to this the Regimental Band,  
stationed at Fort Chebucto, played in Halifax on May 8th,  
for the Victory Parade.

4.            When news of Victory in Europe was announced  
a half holiday was declared at Fort Chebucto. I was at that  
time in Dartmouth but returned to the fort immediately via  
York.

5.            At 1600 hrs the Wet canteen was opened for  
the men and free beer given out. The canteen was closed at  
1700 hrs. for supper. At 1830 hrs a motion picture was shown,  
and this was over at approximately 2030 hrs. After this a  
smoker for all personnel, except those on duty, was held.  
The smoker was over at 2330 hrs. This smoker was attended  
by all personnel and Officers that were off duty.

6.            On May 8th a holiday was proclaimed. The wet  
canteen opened from 1115 hrs. until 1145 hrs. It was then  
closed for the remainder of the day. The officers Bar and  
Sgts . Mess closed as well. At 1400 hrs. a motion picture was  
held, which was over at approximately 1630 hrs.

7.            With the kind permission of Capt. Hatherly,  
a part time Chaplain, the parish hall at Ketch Harbor was  
procured for a dance for the off duty personnel, on the  
evening of May 8th. This hall is situated slightly over a  
mile from the fort. The girls from the surrounding villages  
were invited and a very successful dance was held. I attended  
the dance personally.

(A.A. MacDonald) Major  
O.C. 53rd Coast Battery, Fort Chebucto.

AAM/md

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
- ARMY -

53rd Coast Battery RCA  
Fort McNab, Halifax, N.S.

13 May 1945.

Officer Commanding,  
1st (H) Coast Regt., R.C.A.,  
Yonk Redoubt, Halifax, N.S.

Reference Q 533 d/13 1215 P the following  
is submitted.

- May 7th - Usual training and fatigues carried on.
- May 8th - V-E Day holiday except for operational duties and necessary fatigues. Celebration very quiet. small quantity of beer available, No breaches of discipline.
- May 9th - Training, fatigues and operational duties- No passes- muster parade held at 1200 hrs- Report submitted by phone.
- May 10th - Training, fatigues and operational duties, No passes.
- May 11th - Training, fatigues and operational duties. Confinement to barracks concealed.
- May 12th - Training, fatigues and operational duties as well as T.O.E.T.
- May 13th - Normal Sunday routine.  
No breaches of discipline.  
No events of special interest.  
No merchandise recovered.

As far as can be discovered at time of writing  
nomenber of 52nd. Coast Battery were involved  
in the disturbances in Halifax.

Sgd. C.H. MacDonald.

(C.H.J. MacDonald) Major.  
Officer Commanding 52nd. Coast Battery, RCA.

CJM/pjr

P 6 EXHIBIT "QQQ-1"

F.H.Q. 5-4

DEPARTMENT OF NATIONAL DEFENCE  
ARMY

Headquarters  
Halifax Fortress  
22 May 45

To all Units:-

V-E Day Disturbances

In connection with the m/n subject, it has come to the attention of this Headquarters that there may have been cases of injustice in the handling of soldiers charged before Civil authorities on charges arising out of these disturbances.

2. Should any of your personnel have been so charged, tried and convicted without an officer of your Unit being in attendance to render such aid as is called for by K.R. (Can.), you will detail an officer to interview such soldier or soldiers and ascertain as far as possible it would appear there were any irregularities or injustices in the handling of his case.

3. As appeals from decision made by the Magistrate in the Police Court has, of necessity, to be filed within a limited period of the sentence, immediate action is necessary and a full report, together with sworn statement where necessary, is to be forwarded to this Headquarters.

(R.J. Butts) Capp.,  
Staff Captain  
Halifax Fortress

# LIQUOR CONFISCATED AND RETURNED BY

NO. 6 ORDNANCE DEPOT, RCOC.

## BEER

|            |         |
|------------|---------|
| Red Ball   | 5 qts.  |
| Dow Crown  | 47 qts. |
| Old Vienna | 58 qts. |
| Old Scotia | 1 qt.   |
| Old Scotia | 15 pts. |

Purchased by  
New Wellington Barr.  
Officers' Mess

## SPIRITS

|                         |            |           |
|-------------------------|------------|-----------|
| Gilbey Dry Gin          | 4 qts.     | 4 qts.    |
| Fine Demerara Rum       | 11 pts.    |           |
| Barbados Rum            | 5 pts.     | 5 pts.    |
| Fine Demerara Rum       | 10 qts.    | 10 qts.   |
| Chateau - Bai Cherry    | 13 qts.    |           |
| Chateau - Bai Port      | 2 qts.     |           |
| Barnes Old Cherry       | 1 qt.      |           |
| Corbey's Scotch Duncans | 3 qts.     | 1 qt.     |
| Corbey's Royal Reserve  | 10 pts.    |           |
| Corbey's Scotch         | 4 pts.     |           |
| Seagram's King's Plate  | 2 pts.     |           |
| " "                     | .6 qts.    | 1 qt.     |
| V.O. Rye                | 6 qts.     | 6 qts.    |
| Old Homestead Rye       | 9 qts.     |           |
| Seagram's 83            | 1 qt.      | 1 qt.     |
| " 3                     | 2 qts.     | 2 qts.    |
| Canadian Club           | 9 qts.     | 8 qts.    |
| Geneva Gin              | 19 pts.    |           |
| Emu Brandy              | 1 qt.      |           |
| Burnett's White's Gin   | 6 qts.     | 6 qts.    |
| Gilbey's Gin            | 2 pts.     |           |
| Bright's Port           | 3 qts.     |           |
|                         | <u>255</u> | <u>43</u> |

Received May 11, 1945.  
Nova Scotia Liquor Commission  
E.J. McCormack

CANADIAN ARMY ROUTINE ORDER NO. 3252

DISCIPLINE - POWERS OF PROVOST SERVICES (NAVY, ARMY  
AND RCAF)

Canadian Army Routine Order No. 1869 of 1942 is hereby cancelled.

2. The provisions of General Order 195 of 1943 are published hereunder for information.

His Excellency the Governor General in Council by Order in Council P.C. 3056 dated the 15th April, 1943, has been pleased to revoke Order in Council P.C. 609 dated the 26th January, 1942 (promulgated in General Order 114 of 1942) and to make the following regulations:

REGULATIONS

Staff Officers for Naval Shore Patrols, Army and Air Force Provost Marshals - Powers in relation to Personnel of the three Services.

(a) Staff Officers for Naval Shore Patrols are hereby authorized to exercise the powers of Army Provost Marshals in relation to persons subject to Air Force Law.

(b) Army Provost Marshals are hereby authorized to exercise the powers of Staff Officers for Naval Shore Patrols in relation to persons subject to the Naval Discipline Act and of Army Provost Marshals in relation to persons subject to Military Law.

(c) Air Force Provost Marshals are hereby authorized to exercise the powers of Staff Officers for Naval Shore Patrols in relation to persons subject to the Naval Discipline Act and of Army Provost Marshals in relation to persons subject to Military Law.

(d) The powers conferred by or under these Regulations on any Staff Officer for Naval Shore Patrols or Provost Marshal are exercisable also by his assistants and by any Officer or seaman, soldier or airman as the case may be, legally exercising authority under him or on his behalf except that no officer can be arrested or detained otherwise than on the order of another officer.

(e) The above powers may be exercised in the area comprising the Dominion of Canada and Newfoundland.

General Order 114 of 1942 is hereby cancelled.

3. Canadian Army Routine Order 2443 of 1942 is amended by deleting "1869" in the last line of para. 2(a) and substituting therefor "3252".

(H.Q. 54-27-97-1 FD 1)

EXHIBIT TTT

CANADIAN NATIONAL TELEGRAPHS

Halifax, N.S. 7 May 45.

To. O.C. 36th (Res) Bde Gp Recce Sqdn. Windsor, N.S.  
O.C. 2nd (Res) Bn, West N.S. Regt, Middleton, N.S.  
O.C. 2nd (Res) Bn, North N.S. Highrs, Amherst, N.S.  
O.C. 20th (Res) Field Coy, R.C.E., Lunenburg, N.S.

EG 11 AUTHORITY IS GRANTED FOR MEMBERS OF YOUR UNIT TO WEAR  
UNIFORM IN V DAY PARADES IN WHICH THEY PARTICIPATE.

Comdg 36.  
'Phoned to, CN Tel 1700 hrs 7 May 45  
CW/S/Sgt.

000859

P.2 68 177

MESSAGE FORM

FROM COMMANDING SIX

041135P

H.110-1-40 FD 1  
(01/cA)

TO COMMANDING 36 RESERVE BDE GP HALIFAX NS  
COMMANDING 42 RESERVE BDE GP NEW GLASGOW

A 8523 AUTHORITY IS GRANTED FOR MEMBERS OF THE RESERVE  
ARMY TO WEAR UNIFORM IN V DAY PARADES IN WHICH THEY  
PARTICIPATE

EXHIBIT UUU

D.M.O. M.D. No.6

Work of Halifax Military Hospital on 7th, 8th, and 9th  
May 45.

Ambulances

7th May - one stationed at Garrison Grounds  
one stationed on hill opposite St. Pauls Church  
One stationed at YMCA

Garrison Grounds ambulance withdrawn at 1700 hrs  
No crowds about

Ambulances manned by - Capt. S.B. Bird  
Capt. W.A. Costantini  
Capt. R.O. Bethune  
Capt. B.O. Black  
two ambulances on call at Halifax Military Hosp.

Medical officers on duty - night of 7th May

Major C.R. Dobson  
Capt. H.A.L. Murphy  
Capt. J.F.L. Woodbury  
Lt.-Col. McKay (until mid-  
night)

8th May - ambulances stationed from 1400 hrs. as of 7th May.  
Garrison Grounds ambulance withdrawn at 1700 hrs.  
following dispersal of crowd and cruised until  
2300 hrs.

Other ambulances withdrawn at 2000 hrs (Curfew)

Three ambulances on call at Halifax Mil. Hosp.  
until 2400 hrs. One on all night.

Three ambulances cruising from 2000 hrs to 2300  
hrs.

Cruising Ambulances picked up civilians and Navy  
and delivered direct to General and Navy Hospitals

On ambulance duty - Capt. T.C.C. Sodero  
Capt. J.C. Locke  
Capt. M. Schapira  
Capt. S.B. Bird  
Capt. R.O. Bethune  
Capt. B.O. Black

M.O.'s on duty at Halifax Mil. Hospital -

Major D. Kasler  
Major C.R. Dobson  
Capt. J.F.L. Woodbury  
Capt. Constantini  
Lt.-Col. McKay (until midnight  
Capt. H.C.C. Sodero (from  
2000 to 2400

On duty all night - Major C.R. Dobson  
Capt. H.A.L. Murphy  
Capt. S.B. Bird  
Capt. W.A. Costantini

9th May - Daily routine ambulance duty.

Sgd. J.L. Sutherland, Col.  
DMO 6



Patients treated 7th, 8th and 9th May 45 as a result of disturbances, and exclusive of the ordinary admissions.

1. F.31446 Pte. Gallant, A.B. 6 DD lacerations of scrotum
2. B.137264 Pte. Nelson RCOC lacerations rt. wrist
3. F.79306 Cdm. Blaker, G. RCEME lacerations rt brow
4. D.139685 Pte. Richard, G. Regt. de  
st. Hyacinthe lacerations rt. hand
5. A.604076 Pte. Wilker, W. No.1 Port Coy. fractured 5th rt met-  
acarpal
6. F.58007 Pte. Wright, J.V. A.14 CITC lacertaions nose
7. F.607326 L/Bdr. MacGillivray, A.J. 19th Bty. RCA lacerations rt foot
8. F.54637 Pte. Richard, M. 36 Bde(R)  
Halifax Rifles lacerations left arm
9. H.6692 Pte. Rhyno, L.S. #6 DD fracture 5-6-7 dorsal  
vertebrae
10. B.159942 L/Cpl. Enright, F.S. #37 Coy. C.Pro.C. Traumatic amp. 5th  
rt. finger
11. H.23475 Pte. Vennechenko, W. RCAMC - ETU Acute alchoholic  
excitement

In addition many were seen by us for Provost Corps picked up intoxicated and brought here for examination prior to being taken to Guard Room. No record of these kept. (Number probably in vicinity of 8 to 10).

Seen during disturbed period in acute alchoholic coma, and in possession of no Identification Discs - pay books - etc. (No means of idencification)

2 R.C.N. Rating (Intoxication only)

1 P.O. R.C.N. - lacerations hands & feet

3 passed on to shore patrol following first aid.

1 soldier (ex) passed to D.V.A.

1 civilian (minor lacerations - drunk) First Aid given.

3 soldiers (simple intoxication) passed to No.6 DD

AMBULANCES AT St. Pauls and YMCA rendered First Aid for minor lacerations to all classes.  
(No record kept of these as to numbers)  
Probably total not over 15 or 17)

Sgd. J.L. Sutherland, Col.  
D.M.O. 6

EXHIBIT VVV 1

Patients treated 7th, 8th and 9th May 45 as a result of disturbances and exclusime of the ordinary Sick Parade at M.I. Rooms in the Halifax Area.

1. M.I.R. Cathedral Barracks.

7th May 45 - W.60614 Pte. FRASER, J.I. - Abrasion of rt ankle.  
8th & 9th - Nil.

2. M.I.R. A.23 T.C.

7th & 8th Nil.  
9th May - D.143609 Spr. PATRY, D. - Injured on the 8th May and treated at #6 D.D. and wound redressed on the 9th May at the M.I.R. at A.23. Injury - laceration of lt. ear.

3. M.I.R. New Wellington Barracks.

7th May - nil. 8th May - F.10830 Pte. HUMPHREY, J. - fracture of fibia. Fell over barrack box. Admitted Halifax M.H. next day.  
B.137364 Pte. NELSON, E.R. - Lacerated wrist from whiskey bottle.  
F.23397 Pte. MURPHY, J.V. ROOC - two black eyes, laceration on head. Beat up by civilians.  
H.501481 Pte. PROTZ, J. Cut head. Hit by bottle.  
9th May - F.52050 Sgt. MURRAY, J. ROOC Sprained rt knee.  
F.91015 Cfm. RAFUSE, RCEME Black Eye. Hit by sailor.

4. M.I.R. Chebucto Fort.

7th May - nil.  
F.56514 Spr. RUTLEDGE, E.S. - Lacerated hand occurred 8th May and treated 9th May.

5. M.I. Romm # 6 District Depot

7th May - nil  
8th May - D.143609 Pte. PATRY, R. cut left ear. See 9th May para. 2.  
M.F.B. 371 initiated.  
9th May - F.38939 Pte. CONNORS, W.A. skinned knuckles of rt hand.  
F.79540 Cpl. LOHNES, H. Black eye left. 371s initiated.  
F.30108 Pte. HOWIE, G.W. cut middle finger rt hand.  
371s initiated.  
10th May - C.48787 Spr. GURIN, M. cut rt hand, lip and nose.  
371s initiated.  
F.29557 CSM RESPETTO Black eye  
F.5611 Spr. CAMPBELL, H. Bruised foot.

6. MIR #1 Port Coy.

7th May - nil  
8th May - A.604076 Pte. WILKER, W.W. Fr. of V Metacarpal of rt hand.  
F.607823 Cpl. COOLEN, L.H. Severe cut across palm.  
9th May - nil.

7. M.I.R. # 6 Voc. Trg. School.

7th May - nil.  
8th May - B.8749 Pte. ADDIS, E.H. cut rt cheek and black eye.  
F.30197 Pte. MacFee B.S. cut lower lip  
9th May - F.30616 Cpl. French, P.R. bruised lt side of face.

The following M.I. Rooms did not treat anyone for injuries as a result of the V-E Day disturbances on 7th, 8th and 9th May 45

Hazelhurst M.I.R.  
New Wellington CWAC MIR  
MIR South Barracks  
MIR Citadel Hill  
MIR McNab's Island  
MIR at Bedfor N.S.

Sgd. J.L. Sutherland, Col.,  
D.M.O., M.D. No. 6.000863

EXHIBIT WWW

ADMINISTRATIVE INSTRUCTION NO. 2

Issued by

Brigadier W.G. COLQUHOUN, M.C.

Commanding

No. 1 Training Brigade Group

Debert CAMP, N.S.

V.E. DAY - CELEBRATIONS

1. In order to properly recognize V.E. Day when officially declared as such, it has been decided that all units within Debert Camp including those units under direction of the Camp Administrative Offr and No.37 Pro Coy, will carry out the following instrs:
  - (a) All tps will be confined to camp. NOTE: If the news breaks during the afternoon or early evening, tps will be confined to camp on that day as well.
  - (b) Unit Comds will take such action as they see fit regarding the recall of any personnel who will be out of Camp when the announcement first comes over the radio. They will control their own personnel in Camp. Piquets as on pay-days.
  - (c) Units will detail such personnel and transport as may be required for duty under comd 37 Pro Coy.
  - (d) Families and friends of Army personnel stationed in Debert will be permitted to enter the camp and attend the programme. 06 37 Pro Coy is to divert busses and other civilian vehicular traffic from entering Debert Camp Area by any barrier after 1800 hrs. All civilians will be expected to leave the camp by 1800 hrs. 06 37 Pro Coy will be responsible for Traffic Control.
  - (e) Camp Administrative Officer will close the barriers at 1800 hrs except to vehs carrying special passes which will be issued for V.E. Day.
  - (f) Arrangements for the maintenance of order in Camp will be the responsibility of unit comds.
  - (g) The closing of canteens, bars in Officers' and Sgts' Messes and the granting of permission to personnel to leave camp is left to the discretion of unit comds.
  - (h) All instructions as detailed above concerning confinement to camp, closing of barriers and diverting of traffic will apply from 1800 hrs V.E. Day until 0200 hrs. V.E. Day Plus 1.

2. V.E. Day celebrations will be divided into three parts:
  - (1) Morning - Parade and March Past.
  - (2) Afternoon - Sports under unit arrangements followed by special dinners.
  - (3) Evening - Smokers under unit arrangement. Auxiliary Services will have special entertainments, movies and free merchandise.

PARADE - SERVICE OF COMMEMORATION

3. Parade. All units in camp will march to 3 Bn Parade Ground independently and be formed up on markers in Mass. Coys in depth with 2 pl frontage. Unit interval - 5 paces, Coy interval 3 paces (See appx "A" attached.).

- 2 -

**Markers.** Markers from each unit or gp. will report to Pde Sgt-Major on parade square by 0830 hrs. R.S.M. (W.O.I.) 28 R. Riley, W.A.I., 3 Inf. Trg Bn CIC is detailed as parade Sgt-Major. Units to be formed on markers by 0925 hrs.

**Guides:** Units will provide a guide to direct to unit markers.

**Padres.** H/Capt. G.H.L. West will be responsible for the order of service.

(b) **NOTE:** Printed copies order of service will be distributed to all personnel prior to moving to Parade Ground under unit arrangement.

(i) **Salute.** Following the benediction, a salute of 8-gun salvos will be fired by 1. Fd. Trg Regt RCA followed by the National Anthem and a short address by Bde Comd.

**Dress.** Dress will be belts, side arms, steel helmets with nets.

**PLA. System.** No. 5 Sec. 6 Dist Coy Sigs will provide P.A. System.

# **MARCH PAST**

4. (a) Following the church service, units will move off in column of route S on gravel rd leading to Truro Barrier through R.C. E. compound and N. on main camp rd.

(b) **Intervals** will be strictly maintained as follows:  
Unit intervals: 100 paces, Coy interval: 25 paces,  
Platoon intervals: 10 paces.

(c) **Saluting Base** in front of 3. Inf. Trg Bn CIC.

(d) **Band** opposite saluting base.

(e) **Dispersal Point** rd junc at Camp Engineers.

(f) **Hospital up-patients** will be moved to a point adjacent to saluting base prior to the march past.

(g) **Civilian friends and relatives** will remain behind the

lines during the Service and March Past.

(h) **DAA&QMG HQ Trg Bde Gp** is responsible for all administrative

details.

**TIME OF ORIGIN** 1800 P hrs 3 May 45.

by D.R.L.S.

## **DISTRIBUTION:**

OsCall units and formations Debert Camp.

APPX "A"

PLAN OF 3 BN  
PARADE GROUND

NURSING  
SISTERS

CAMP ADMIN

No. 2 TRANSIT CAMP

CIVILIANS

Flag Pole



Choir



Stand



BAND

BRIGADIER



& Staff Offr

3 BN

2 BN

1 Bn

RCASE

Hospital Patients

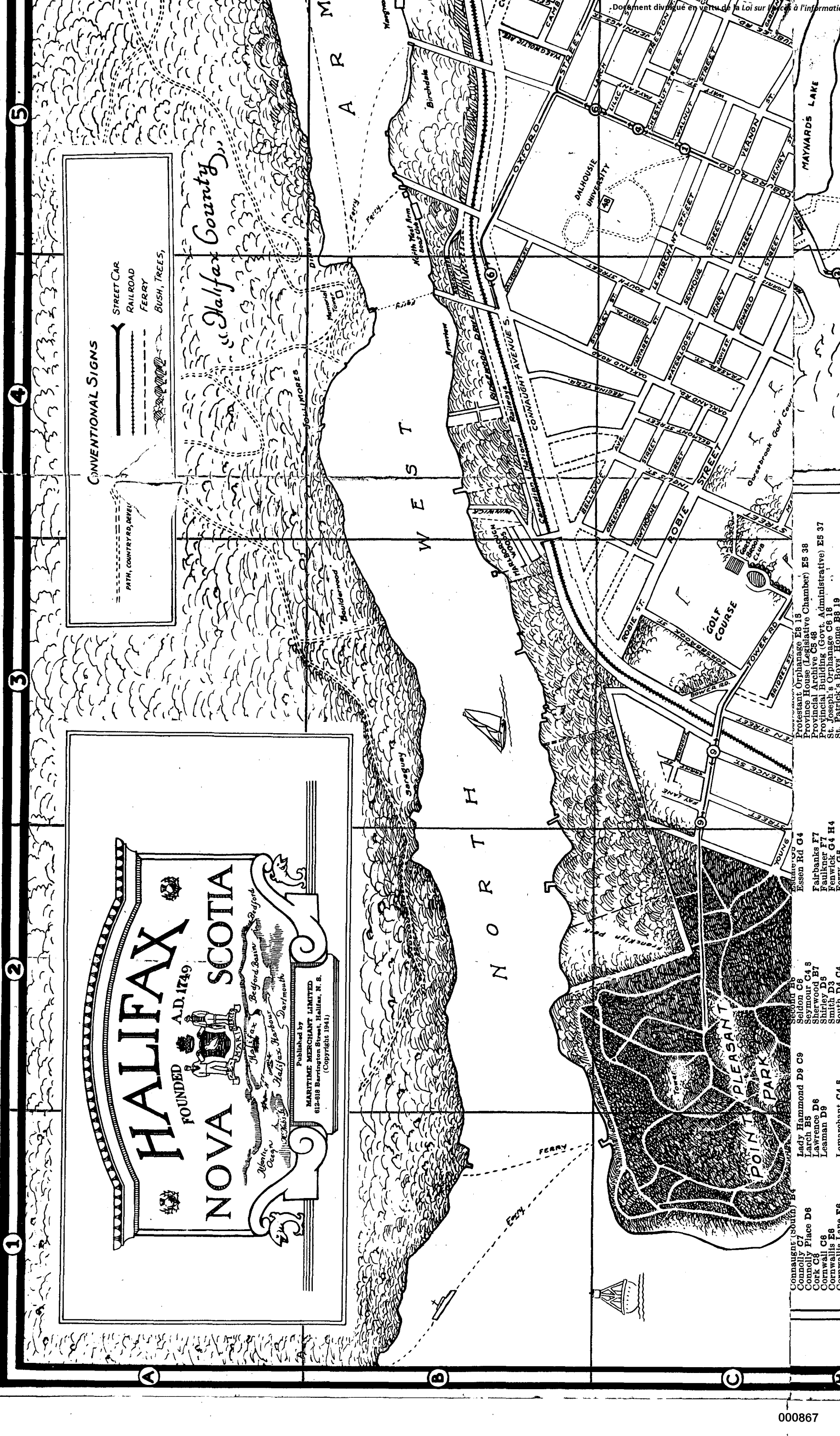
HQ, 1 Trg Bde Gp & Dem Unit

RCA

RCE

RCCS

GRID NORTH



**HALIFAX**  
FOUNDED A.D. 1749  
**NOVA SCOTIA**  
Published by  
MARITIME MERCHANT LIMITED  
612-618 Barrington Street, Halifax, N. S.  
(Copyright 1941)

**CONVENTIONAL SIGNS**  
STREET CAR  
RAILROAD  
FERRY  
BUSH, TREES,  
PATH, COUNTRY RD, DEVELOP

- Protestant Orphanage E8 15
- Province House (Legislative Chamber) E5 38
- Provincial Archive C5 48
- Provincial Building (Govt. Administrative) E5 37
- St. Joseph's Orphanage C6 18
- St. Patrick's Boys' Home E8 19
- School for the Blind D4 20
- Essen Rd G4
- Fairbanks F7
- Faulkner F7
- Feawick G4 H4
- Ferry G5
- Ferry H5
- Connally C7
- Connolly Place D6
- Cork C6
- Cornwallis E8
- Cornwallis Lane E6
- Lady Hammond D9 C9
- Larch B5
- Lawrence D6
- Leaman D9
- Lemarchant C4 5
- Seldon C6
- Seymour C4 5
- Sherwood B7
- Shirley D5
- Smith D3
- South Blvd D3
- Young G2





**STREET INDEX**

- HALIFAX**
- Aberdeen D8
  - Acadia E9
  - Agicola D6, 7, 8
  - Albert E8
  - Alder B8
  - Alexandra Place E6
  - Allen D6
  - Almon C7 D7 E7
  - Almon Place D7
  - Andrews B9
  - Annandale D5
  - Argyle E4 5
  - Arm Bridge A7
  - Armstrong C4 8
  - Armory D8
  - Armview B6
  - Artillery D4
  - Artz E6
  - Atlantic C3

- Deacon C7
- Deal B9
- Devonshire E8
- Dickens B8
- Dickens D4
- Dresden D4
- Dublin C7
- Dufus C9
- Duffus Extension D9
- Duffus Place D8
- Duke E5
- Duncan D6
- Dundonald D4
- Dutch Village Rd. A8
- Edgewood C8
- Edinburgh C7
- Edward C4 8
- Elevator Court E6
- Elliot B9
- Elm C8
- Falkland D6
- Fawson F4

- London C7
- Lorne Terrace E7
- Lower Water E4
- Lucan D3
- Lundy C4
- Lynch E8
- Macara D7
- Macra D9
- Maitland (North) E7
- Maitland C4
- Marlborough C4
- Marlborough Woods B4
- Market E5
- May D7
- Mayfield B9
- Maynard D8
- McDonnell D7
- McDonald B7
- McLean D3
- Merkel D8
- Merkel Place D8
- Melrose C8
- Miller C2
- Miller D3
- Stanley Place D8
- Start E8
- Studley B4
- Sullivan D8
- Summer D4 D5
- Summit C7 D7
- Swaine C7

- Haig (Maynard's Lake) H8
- Haig (off Wood) F8
- Harbour G8
- Park Ave G8
- Park Lane G8
- Parker G8





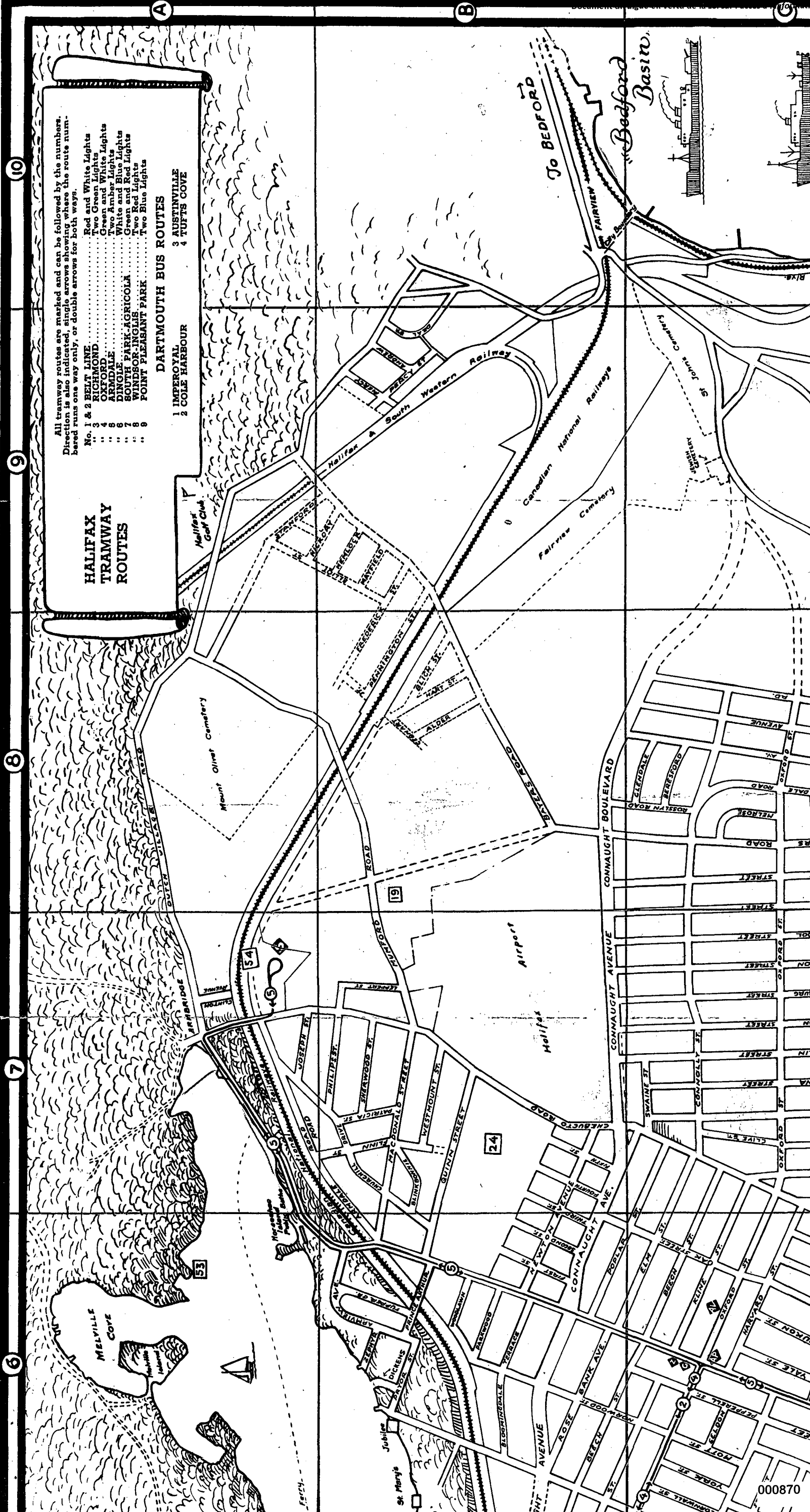
# HALIFAX TRAMWAY ROUTES

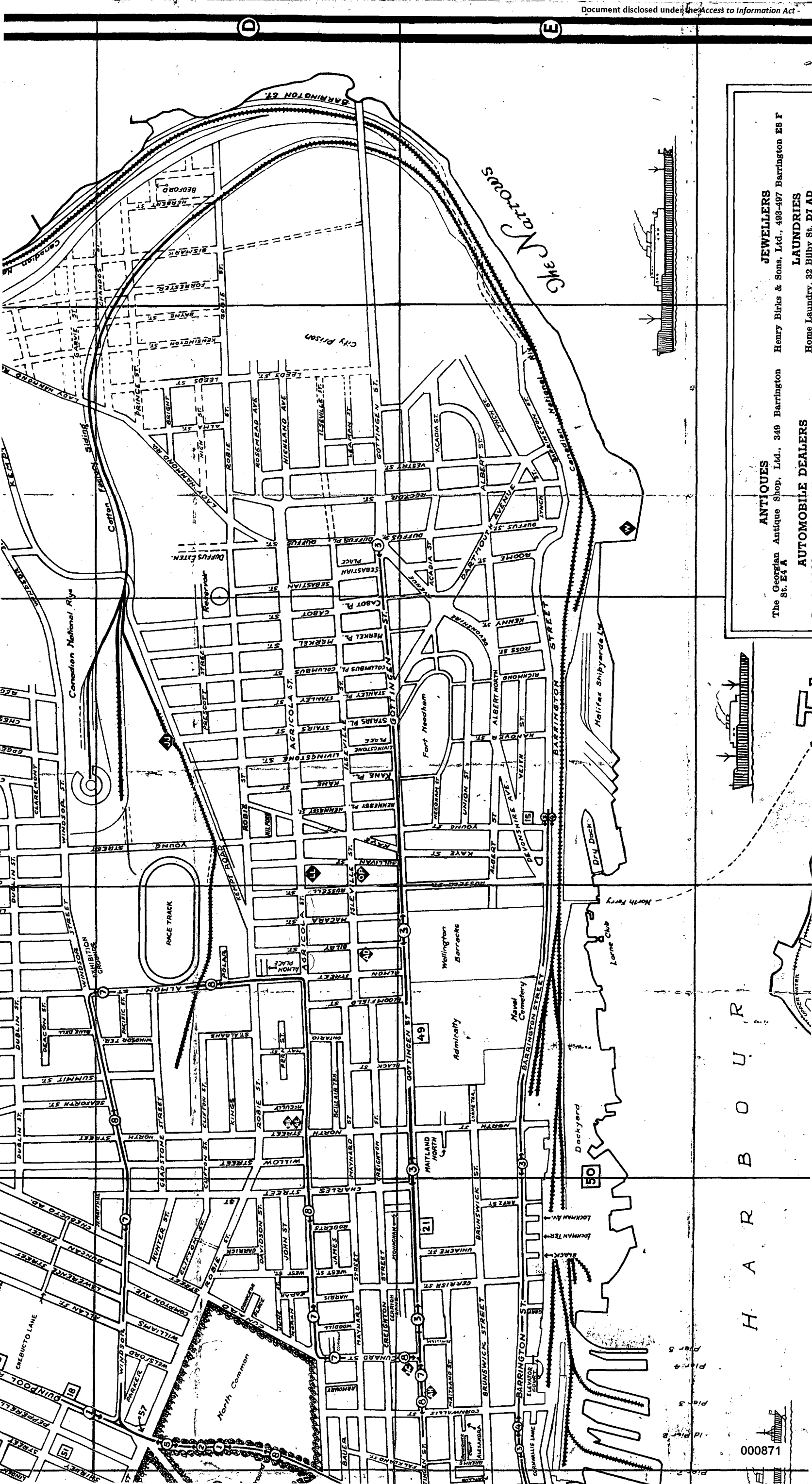
All tramway routes are marked and can be followed by the numbers.  
Direction is also indicated, single arrows showing where the route num-  
bered runs one way only, or double arrows for both ways.

|                         |                        |
|-------------------------|------------------------|
| No. 1 & 2 BELT LINE     | Red and White Lights   |
| " 3 RICHMOND            | Two Green Lights       |
| " 4 OXFORD              | Green and White Lights |
| " 5 ARMADALE            | Two Amber Lights       |
| " 6 DINGLE              | White and Blue Lights  |
| " 7 SOUTH PARK-AGRICOLA | Green and Red Lights   |
| " 8 WINDSOR-INGLIS      | Two Red Lights         |
| " 9 POINT PLEASANT PARK | Two Blue Lights        |

## DARTMOUTH BUS ROUTES

- 1 IMPEROYAL
- 2 COLE HARBOUR
- 3 AUSTINVILLE
- 4 TUFTS COVE





HARRINGTON

**ANTIQUE DEALERS**  
The Georgian Antique Shop, Ltd., 349 Barrington St. E4 A  
**JEWELLERS** Henry Birks & Sons, Ltd., 493-497 Barrington St. E5 F  
**LAUNDRIES** Home Laundry, 32 Bulby St. D7 AD  
**AUTOMOBILE DEALERS**

